THE

Palace of Pleasure

ELIZABETHAN VERSIONS OF ITALIAN AND FRENCH NOVELS
FROM BOCCACCIO, BANDELLO, CINTHIO, STRAPAROLA,
QUEEN MARGARET OF NAVARRE,
AND OTHERS

DONE INTO ENGLISH

BY WILLIAM PAINTER

NOW AGAIN EDITED FOR THE FOURTH TIME

BY JOSEPH JACOBS

VOL. III.

LONDON: PUBLISHED BY DAVID NUTT IN THE STRAND

A. MDCCXCIX

F5

J5
# Table of Contents

## Volume III.

### Tome II.—Continued.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title Page (Edition 1580)</th>
<th>1</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Novel</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIII. Duchess of MalFY</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIV. Countess of Celant</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXV. Romeo and Juliet</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVI. Ladies of Venice</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVII. Lord of Virle</td>
<td>157</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXVIII. Lady of Bohemia</td>
<td>195</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXIX. Diego and Ginevra</td>
<td>222</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXX. Salimbene and Angelica</td>
<td>288</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXI. Helena of Florence</td>
<td>329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXII. Camiola and Roland</td>
<td>354</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXIII. Lords of Nocera</td>
<td>363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXIV. Sultan Solyman</td>
<td>395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XXXV. King of Morocco</td>
<td>416</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conclusion</td>
<td>431</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The second Tome
of the Palace of Pleasure,
contayning more of goodly histories,
Tragical matters, and other Mo-
rall argumentes, very re-
quiste for delight
and proffyte.

Chosen and selected out of
divers good and commen-
dable Authors:
and now once agayn corrected and
encreased

By William Painter, Clerke of the
Ordinance and Armarie.

Imprinted at London, in
Fleet strete, by Thomas
Marlhe.
The Palace of Pleasure.

THE TWENTY-THIRD NOUELL.

The infortuniate mariage of a Gentleman, called Antonio Bologna, wyth the Ducheffe of Malfi, and the pitifull death of them both.

The great Honor and authority men haue in thys World, and the greater their estimation is, the more sensible and notorious are the faultes by theim committed, and the greater is their flaunder. In lyke manner more difficult it is for that man to tolerate and sustayne Fortune, which al the dayes of his life hath lyued at his ease, if by chaunce he fall into any great necessity than for hym whych neuer felt but woe, mishap, and aduerfity. Dyonifius the Tyraunt of Scicilia, felt greaterayne when hee was expelled his Kyngdome, than Milo did, beinge banifhed from Rome: for so meuch as the one was a Soueraygne Lorde, the fonne of a Kynge, a Ifticiary on Earth, and the other but a simple Citizen of a Citty, wherein the People had Lawes, and the Lawes of Magistrates were had in reuerence. So lykewyse the fall of a high and lofty Tree, maketh greater noyfe, than that whych is low and little. Hygh Towers, and flately Palaces of Prynces bee seene further of, than the poore Cabans, and homely Sheepeheardes Sheepecotes: the Walles of lofty Cittyes more a loofe doe Salute the Viewers of the fame, than the simpe Caues, which the Poore doe digge belowe the Mountayne Rockes. Wherefore it behooueth the Noble, and futch as haue charge of Common wealth, to lyue an honest Lyfe, and beare their port vpright, that none haue cause to discourse vpon their wicked deedes and naughty life. And aboue all modesty ought to be kept by Women,
whom as their race, Noble birth, autthority and name, maketh them more famous, evne to their vertue, honesty, chastity, and continencie more prayfe worthy. And behoeful it is, that like as they wishe to be honoured above all other, so their life do make them worthy of that honour, without disgracing their name by deed or worde, or blemishing that brightnesse which may commend the same. I greatly feare that all the Princely factes, the exploytes and conquests done by the Babylonian Queene Semyramis, never was recommended wyth fuch prayfe, as hir vice had shame in records by thoſe which left remembrance of auncient actes. Thus I say, because a woman being as it were the Image of sweetnesse, curteſie and shamefulnesse, so soone as she steppeth out of the right tract, and abandoneth the sweete smel of hir duety and modesty, besides the denigration of hir honour, thrufteth her selfe into infinite Troubles, cauſeth ruine of fuch whych shoulde bee honoured and prayfed, if Womens Allurementes solicited them not to folly. I wyll not heere Indeavour my selfe to seeke for examples of Samſon, Salomon or other, which suffred themſelves fondly to be abused by Women: and who by meane of them be tumbled into great faults, and hane incurred greater perils: contentinge my selfe to recyte a ryght pitifull Hiftory done almost in our tyme, when the French vnder leadinge of that notable Capitayne Gafton de Foix, vanquifhed the force of Spayne and Naples at the Tourney of Rauenna in the time of the French Kynge called Lewes the twelfth, who married the Lady Mary, Daughter to Kynge Henry the fouventh, and Sifter to the Victorious Prynce of worthy memory kynde Henry the eyght, Wyfe (after the death of the sayd Lewes) to the puiffaunt Gentleman Charles, late Duke of Suffolke. In the very tyme then lyved a Gentleman of Naples called Antonio Bologna, who hauing bin maſter of Houſehold to Fredericke of Aragon, fomtime king of Naples, after the French had expelled thoſe of Aragon out of that Citty, the sayde Bologna retaryd into Fraunce, and thereby recovered the goods, which hee posſeffed in his country. The Gentleman bedefte that he was valiant of his person, a good man. of Warre, and wel esteemed amongs the beſt, had a paffing numbre of good graces, which made him to be loued and cherishd of every
wight: and for riding and managing of great horse, he had not his fellow in Italy: he could also play exceedingly well and trim upon the Lute, whose faying voice so well agreed thereunto, that the most melancholike persons would forget their heauinesse, upon hearing of his heauenly noyse: and besides these qualities, he was of personage comely, and of good proportion. To be short: nature having trauayled and dispoyle hir Treasure Houfe for in-riching of him, he had by Arte gotten that, which made him most happy and worthy of prayse, which was, the knowledge of good letters, wherein he was so well trayned, as by talke and dispute thereof, he made those to blufh that were of that state and profession. Antonio Bologna having left Fredericke of Aragon in Fraunce, who expulfd out of Naples was retired to king Lewes, went home to his house to lyue at reft and to auoyd trouble, forgetting the delicats of Courtes and houses of great men, to bee the only husband of his owne reuenue. But what? it is impossible to efchue that which the heauens haue determined vpon vs: or to shunne the vnhaappe which feemeth to follow vs, as it were naturally proceeding from our mother's Wombe: in such wyfe as many times, he which feemeth the wisest man, guided by misfortune, hafteth himfelf with ftouping head to fall headlonge into hys death and ruine. Euen fo it chaunced to this Neapolitane Gentleman: for in the very fame place where he attained his aduancement, he receuied alfo his diminution and decay, and by that house which preferred hym to what he had, he was depryued, both of his estate and life: the difcourfe whereof you shall understande. I haue tolde you already, that this Gentleman was Mayfter of the kinge of Naples household, and beyng a gentle person, a good Courtier, wel trained vp, and wyfe for government of himselfe in the Courte and in the servise of Princes, the Duchefe of Malfi thought to intreate him that he would serue hir, in that office which he serued the King. This Duchefe was of the house of Aragon, and fitter to the Cardinall of Aragon, which then was a rych and puiffant personage. Being resolue, and perfuaded, that Bologna was deuoutly affected to the house of Aragon, as one brought vp there from a Chylde: thee fent for him home to his Houfe, and vpon hys reparing vsed vnto him these,
or like Woordes: "Mayster Bologna, sith your ill fortune, nay rather the vnhap of our whole Houfe is futch, as your good Lord and Mayster hath forgon his state and dignity, and that you therewithall haue loft a good Mayfter, without other recompenfe but the praye which every man giueth you for your good service, I haue thought good to intreat you to doe me the honor, as to take charge of the gouernment of my Houfe, and to vie the fame, as you did that of the King your maiifter. I know well that the office is to vnworthy for your calling; notwithstanding you be not ignorant what I am, and how neare to him in bloud, to whom you haue bene a Seruaunte fo faithfull and Louing; and albeit that I am no Queene, endued with greatest revenue, yet with that little portyon I haue, I beare a Pryncely heart: and futch as you by experience do knowe what I haue done, and dayly do to thofe which depart my service, recompenfing them according to their paine and travaile: magnificence is obferued as well in the Courts of poore Princes, as in the fately Palaces of great Kings and monarchoes. I do remembre that I haue read of a certain noble gentleman, a Perfian borne, called Ariobarzanes, who vfed great examples of curtefie and fhouette towards King Artaxerxes, wherewith the king wondred at his magnificence, and confessed himfelf to be vanquifhed: you shall take aduife of this request, and in the meane time do think you will not refufe the fame, aswell for that my demaund is iust, as also being affured, that our Houfe and race is fo well imprinted in your heart, as it is impossible that the memory thereof can be defaced." The gentle-man hearynge that curteous demaund of the Ducheffe, knowing himfelfe how deeply bound he was to the name of Aragon, and led by fome vnknowen prouocation to his great il luck, anfwered hir in this wife: "I would to God, Madame, that with fo good reafon and equity I were able to make denyall of your commandement, as iuftly you maye require the fame: wherfore for the bounden duety which I owe to the name and memorie of the houfe of Aragon, I make promife that I fhall not only fustaine the travaell, but alfo the daunger of my Lyfe, dayly to be offred for your service: but I feele in mynde I know not what, which commandeth me to withdraw my felfe to lyue alone at home within
my lyttele house, and to be content with that I haue, forgoing the sumptuous charge of Prynces houses, which Lyfe would be wel liked of my self, were it not for the feare that you Madame should be discontented with my refual, and that you should conceive, that I disdained your offerd charge, or contemne your Court for respect of the great Office I bare in the Courte of the Kyng, my Lord and Mayster: for I cannot receive more honour, than to serue hir, which is the paragon of that stock and royal race. Therfore at all adventures I am resoluued to obey your will, and humbly to satify the duety of the charge wherein it pleafeth you to employ me, more to pleafure you for avoiding of displeafure, then for defire I haue to lyue an honorable lyfe in the greatest Princes house of the world, fith I am discharged from him in whose name refeth my comfort and only stay, thinking to haue liued a solitarie life, and to paffe my yeres in rest, except it were in the pore abilitye of my seruice to that house, wherunto I am bound continually to be a faithfull seruauent. Thus Madame, you feee me to he the readieft man of the world, to fulfil the request, and accomplifhe futch other seruice wherein it shal pleafe you to imploy me.” The Duchesse thanked him very heartily, and gane him charge of all hir houesholde traine, commaunding ech person to do him futch reverence as to hir self, and to obey him as the chief of al hir family. This Lady was a widow, but a passinge faire Gentlewoman, fine and very yong, haung a yong sonne vnder hir guard and keping, left by the deceasf Duke hir husband, together with the Duchy, the inheritance of hir child. Now confider hir perfonage being futch, her easy life and delycate bringing vp, and hir daily view of the youthly trade and manner of Courtiers lyfe, whether she felt hir self preycet wyth any desire, which burned hir heart the more incessantly, as the flames were hidden and couert: from the outward shew whereof shee stayed hir self fo well as shee coulde. But shee followinge beste advice, rather esteemed the proffe of Maryage, than to burne wyth so lyttele fire, or to incurre the exchange of louers, as many vnflameffe trumpets do, which be rather giuen ouer, than satified with pleafure of loue. And to fay the truthe, they be not guided by wife- dom’s lore, which suffer a maiden ripe for mariage to be long
vnwedded, or yong wife long to liue in widowe's state, what assuredly so euer they make of their chaste and stayed lyfe. For bookes be to full of such enterpryse, and houes store with examples of such stolne and secrete practises, as there neede no further proove for assurance of our cause, the daily experience maketh plain and manifest. And a great folly it is to build the fantasies of chastitie amid the follies of worldly pleasures. I will not goe about to make those matters impossible, ne yet will judge at large, but that there be som maydens and Wyues, which wiselye can contenye themselues amongs the troupe of amorous futurs. But what? the experience is very hard, and the prooves no leffe daungerous, and perchaunce in a moment the mind of some peruered, which all their lyuyinge dayes have closed theyr Eares from the Sute of those that haue made offer of louyng seruice. And hereof we neede not run to forrayne Hyftories, ne yet to seeke records that be auncient, fith we may see the daily effects of the lyke; practised in Noble houes, and Courtes of Kyngs and Prynces. That this is true, example of this fayre Duchesse, who was moued wyth that defyre which pricketh others that be of Fleshe and Bone. Thys Lady waxed very weary of lying alone, and gryeued hir Hearte to be wythoute a match, specially in the Nyght, when the secrete silence and darke-nesse of the same presented befor theye eyes of hir mind, the Image of the pleasure which she felt in the lyfe tyme of her deceased Lord and Husband, whereof now feeling hir selue despoyled, she felt a contynuall Combat, and durst not attempte that which she defyerd most, but efchued the thyng wherof hir Mind lyked best. "Alas (sayd she) is it poosyble after the taste of the Value of honeste obedience whych the Wyfe oweth vnto hir Husband, that I should defyre to suffer the Heat whych burneth and altereth the martyred mynds of those that subdue themselues to loue? Can such attempt pierce the heart of me to become amorous by for-getting and straying from the limmetts of honeste life? But what defire is this? I haue a certayne vnacquaynted lust, and yet very well know not what it is that moueth me, and to whom I shall vow the spoyle thereof. I am truely more fond and foolyshe than euer Narcissus was, for there is neyther shadow nor voyee, vpon which I can well stay my figh, nor yet simple Imagination of any worldly
man, whereupon I can arrest the conceyt of my vnflayed heart, and the desires which prouoke my mynde. Pygmalion loued once a Marble Piller, and I haue but one desire, the colour whereof is more pale than death. There is nothyng which can geue the same so much as one spot of vermilion rud. If I doe discover these appetites to any wight, perhaps they will mock me for my labor, and for all the beauty and Noble byrth that is in me, they will make no confience to deeme me for their esteeming stock, and to folace themselves with reherfall of my fond conceits. But sith there is no enemy in the field, and that but simple supicion doth assayle me, why breake I not the same, and deface the enter remembrance of the lightneffe of my brayne? It appertayneth vnto mee to shewe my felfe, as iffued from the Noble house of Aragon: to me it doeth belonge to take heede how I erre or degenerate from the royall bloud whereof I came.” In this fort that Fayre Wydow and young Princeffe fantasied in the night vppon the discourse of hir appetites. But when the day was come, feeing the great multitude of the Neapolitan Lords and Gentlemen that marched vp and downe the Citty, eyinge and beholdinge their best beloved, or vring talke of loue with them whose seruaunts they were, all that which the thought vpon in the night, vanished so sone as the flame of burned Straw, or the Powder of Cannon shot, and purposed for any respect to liue no longer in that fort, but promised the conquest of some frend that was lusty and discreete. But the difficulty rest in that she knew not vpon whom to fixe hir loue, fearing to bee slaundered, and also that the light disposition and maner of most part of youth were to be suspected, in such wife as giuing ouer al them which vauted vpon their Gennets, Turkey Palfreis, and other Courfers alonie the Citty of Naples, thee purposed to take repaft of other Venifon, than of that fond and wanton troupe. So hir mishap began already to spin the threedee which choked the Ayre and Breath of hir vnhappy life. Yee haue heard before that Mayster Bologna was one of the wisest and most perfect Gentlemen that the land of Naples that tyme brought forth, and for his Beauty, Proportion, Galantneffe, Valiaince, and good grace, without comparison. His favour was so sweete and pleafant, as they which kept him company, had somewhat to do to abflayne their affection.
Who then could blame thys sayre Princeffe, if (pressef with desire of match, to remoue the tickliſh instagations of her wanton flesh, and hauing in hir prefence a man fo wife) shee did fet hir minde on hym, or fantazy to mary him? Would not that party for calming of his thirſt and hunger, being fet at a table before sundry sorts of delicate viands, eafe his hunger? Me thinke the person doth greatly forget himſelfe, which hauing handfaſt vpon occasion, ſuffreth the fame to vanifh and fly away, fith it is wel known that she being bald behinde, hath no place to eafe vpon when deſire moueth vs to lay hold vpon hir. Which was the caufe that the Ducheffe became extremely in loue with the mayſter of hir houfe. In fuch wyſe as, before al men, she ſpared not to prayſe the great perfection of him whom she deſired to be altogether hirs. And fo ſhe was inamored, that it was as poſſible to fee the night to be voide of darkneſſe, as the Ducheffe without the prefence of hir Bologna, or els by talke of words to fet forth his prayſe, the continuall remembrance of who (for that ſhee loued him as hirſelfe) was hir onely minde's reflaft. The Gentleman that was full wyſe, and had at other times felt the great force of the passion which proceedeth from extreme loue, immediatly did mark the countenaunce of the Ducheffe, and perceyued the fame fo neere, as vnſaynedly ſhee knew that very ardentely the Lady was in loue with him: and albeit he ſawe the inequality and difference betweene them both, the being forted out of the royall bloud, and himselfe of meane calling, yet knowing loue to have no reſpect to ſtate or digniſty, determined to folow his fortune, and to ferue hir which fo louingly ſhewed hir ſelfe to him. Then fodayneſely repreouing his fond conceiſt, he ſayd vnto himself: "What folly is that I enterpringe, to the preiudice and peril of mine honor and life? Ought the wifedome of a Gentleman to ſtray and wandre through the affualts of an appetite rifting of fenſuality, and that reaſon gieue place to that which doeth participate with brute beaſts depried of all reaſon by ſubduinge the minde to the affections of the body? . No, no, a vertuous man ought to let ſhine in him ſelfe the force of the generofity of hir minde. This is not to liue according to the ſpirite, when pleaſure ſhall make vs forget our duty and fauegard of our Conſcience. The reputation of a wife Gentleman refeth not only to be valiant,
and skilfull in feates of armes, or in service of the Noble: but needfull it is for him by discretion to make himselfe prayse worthy, and by vanquishinge of himselfe to open the gate to fame, whereby he may euerlastingly make himselfe glorious to all posterity. Loue pricketh and prouoketh the spirite to do well, I do confesse, but that affection ought to be addressed to some vertuous end, tending to mariage, for otherwise that vnspotted Image shall be soyled wyth the villany of Beastly pleasure. Alas," sayd he, "how easie it is to dispute, when the thyng is absent, which can both force and violently affayle the Bulwarke of moft constante hearts. I full well doe fee the troth, and doe feele the thing that is good, and knowe what behoueth mee to follow: but when I view the pereles beauty of my Lady, hir graces, wisedome, behauiour and curtesie, when I fee hir to cast fo louinge an eye vpon me, that the vfeth fo great familiaritie, that the forgettesth the greatnesse of hir houfe to abase hirselfe for my respect: how is it possible that I should be so foolish to dispise a duty so rare and precious, and to set light by that which the Noblest would pursue wyth all reverence and deuoyre? Shall I be so voyde of wisdome to suffer the yonge Princeffe to see hirselfe contempned of mee, thereby to convert hir loue to teares, by setting hir mynde upon an other, that shall feck mine ouerthrow? Who knoweth not the fury of a woman: specially the Noble dame, by seeing hirselfe defpised? No, no, she loueth me, and I will be hir seruant, and vfe the fortune proffred. Shal I be the first simple Gentleman that hath married or loued a Princeffe? Is it not more honourable for mee to settle my mind vpon a place so high, than vpon some simple wench by whom I shall neyther attayne profit, or advancement? Baldouine of Flaunders, did not he a Noble enterpryse when he carried away Iudith the daughter of the French kyng, as she was passing vpon the Seas into England, to be married to the kyng of that Countrie? I am neither Pirat nor Adventurer, for the Lady loueth me. What wrong doe I theu to any perfon by rendringe loue agayne? Is not she at liberty? To whom ought she to make ancount of hir deedes and doings, but to God alone and to hir owne Conscience? I wyll loue hir, and eare lyke affecction for the loue which I know and see that she beareth vnto me, beinge
affured that the fame is directed to good ende, and that a Woman so wyse as she is, will not hazard the bleamish of hir honor." Thus Bologna framed the plot for intertaynment of the Duchesse (albeit hir loue already was fully bent vpon him) and fortified hym selte agaynft all perillus myfhap and chaunce that might succeede, as ordinarily you see that Louers conceyue all things for their aduauntage, and fantasie dreams agreeable to their most defire, remembliinge the Mad and Bedlem persons which haue before their eyes, the figured Fansfes whych cause the conceipt of their fury, and flay themselues vpon the viſion of that which most troubleth their offended Brayne. On the other side, the Duchesse was in no leffe care of hir Louer, the will of whom was hid and secret, whych more did vxe and torment hir, than the fire of loue that burned hir ferently. She could not tell what way to hold, to do him vnderstand hir heart and affection. She feared to discouer the fame vnto hym, doubtinge eyther that some fond and rigorous aunfwere, or the reueylinge of hir mynde to hym, whose prefence pleased hir more than all of the men of the World. "Alas," sayd she, "am I happed into fo ftraunge misery, that with mine owne mouth I must make requete to him, which with all humility ought to offer mee hys service? Shall a Lady of futch bloud as I am, be con ✓

"
of my mynde, the little experience in thy schole causeth this amaze in me, to be sollicitated with desire that counterfayeth the duty, honor, and reputation of my state: the party whom I love, is a Gentleman, vertuous, valiant, sage, and of good grace. In this there is no cause to blame Love of blindnesse, for all the inequality of our houses, apparant vpon the first sight and shew of the same. But from whence Issue Monarchs, Princes and great Lords, but from the naturall and common Maffe of Earth, whereof other men do come? what maketh these differences betwene those that love eche other, if not the sottifh opinion which we conceive of greatnesse, and preheminence: as though naturall affections bee like to that ordayned by the fantafie of men in their lawes extreme. And what greater right haue Princes to ioyne wyth a simple Gentlewoman, than the Princeffe to mary a Gentleman, and futch as Anthonio Bologna is, in whom Heauen and Nature haue forgotten nothinge to make him equall with them which march amongst the greatest. I thinke we be the dayly flaues of the fond and cruell fantastie of those Tyraunts, which fay they haue puissance ouer vs: and that straininge our will to their tirannye, we be still bound to the chaine like the Galley flaue. No, no, Bologna shall be my Husband, for of a freend I purpose to make my loyall and lawful Husband, meaning therby not to offend God and men together, and pretend to liue without offence of conscience, wherby my foule shal not be hindred for any thyng I do, by marryng him whom I so straungeth loue. I am sure not to be deceyued in loue. He loueth me so mutch or more as I do him, but he dareth not disclofe the same, fearing to be refued and cast of with flame. Thus 2 united wils, and 2 hearts tied together, with equal knot cannot chose but bryng forth fruites worthy of futch society. Let men say what they list, I will doe none otherwyse than my heade and mynd haue already framed. Semblably I neede not make accompt to any perfone for my fact, my body, and reputation beynge in full liberty and freedome. The bond of mariage made, shall couer the faulte whych men woulde fynde, and leauyng myne estate, I shall do no wrong but to the greatnesse of my house, which maketh me amongs men right honorable. But these honors be nothyng worth, where the Mynd is boyd of conten-
tation, and wher the hearte pryekte forwarde by defire leaueth the Bodye and Mynde refleffe wythout quiet." Thus the Duchesse founded hir enterpryse, determining to mary hir houfhold Mayster, seeking for occaion and time, meete for disclosing of the fame, and albeit that a certaine naturall shamefaftneffe, which of custome accompanieth Ladies, did clofe hir mouth, and made hir to deferre (for a certain time) the effect of hir resolved minde: yet in the ende vanquished with loue and impatience, she was forced to breake of silence, and to assure hir self in him, reiecting feare conceived of shame, to make hir waye to pleasure, which she lufted more than mariage, the fame feruyng hir, but for a Maske and couerture to hide hir follies and shamelesse lufts, for which she did the penaunce that hir folly defuered. For no colorable dede or deceitful trompery can serue the excuse of any notable wickednesse. She then throughly persuaed in her intent, dreamyng and thinking of nought els, but vpon the imbracement of hir Bologna, ended and determined hir conceits and pretended follies: and vpon a time fen for him vp into hir chamber, as commonly she did for the affaires and matters of hir houfe, and taking him a side vnto a window, hauing prosperct into a garden, she knew not how to begin hir talk: (for the heart being seased, the mind troubled, and the witts out of courfe, the tongue fayled to do his office,) in such wife, as of long time she was vnable to speake one onely woord. He furprised with like affection, was more affstoned by seeing the alteration of his Ladie. So the two Louers flood like Images beholding one another, without any moving at all, vntill the Lady the hardieft of them bothe, as feelinge the moft vehement and greatest gryef, tooke Bologna by the hand, and diffembling what she thought, vsed this or such language: "If any other besides your selue (Gentleman) shoule understand the secret which now I purpose to dyfclose, I doubt what speach were neceffary to colour, what I shal speake: but being affured of your discretion and wifdom, and with what perfection nature hath indue you, and Arte, hauing accomplishe that in you, which nature did begin to worke, as one bred and brought vp in the royal court of the seconde Alphonfe, of Ferdinando, and Frederick of Aragon my cousins, I wil make no doubt at all to manifeft to
you the hidden secretes of my heart, being well persuaded that when you shal both heare and favor my reason, and taft the light which I bring forth for me, easily you may judge that mine advice cannot be other than iust and reasonable. But if your conceits shall straye from that whych I determine, I shal be forced to thinke and faye that they which esteeme you wife and fage, and to be a man of good and ready wytte, be maruellously deceived. Notwithstanding my heart foretellleth that it is impossible for my master Bologna, to wandre fo farre from equitie, but that by and by he wil enter the lyftes and dyfcerne the White from Blacke, and the Wrongs fro that whych is iust and Ryghte: for fo much as hitherto I newer saw thinge done by you, which Preposterated or peruered the good judgement that all the world esteemeth to shine in you, the same well manifested and declared by your tongue, the right iudge of the Mynde, you knowe and see how I am a Wydow through the Death of that Noble Gentleman of good remembrance, the Duke my Lord and hufbande: you be not ignoraunt also, that I haue lyued and governed my self in fuch wise in my Widow fstate, as there is no man fo hard and feuere of judgement, that can blafon reproch of mee in that whych appertayneth to the honesty and reputation of fuch a Lady as I am, bearyng my port fo righte, as my conscience yeldeth no remorfe, suppoinge that no Man hathe wherewith to byte and accufe me. Touching the order of the goods of the Duke my Sonne, I have vfed them with diligence and discretion, as besides the Dettes, whych I haue dyfchargd fithens the death of my Lord: I haue purchased a goodly Manor in Calabria, and haue annexed the same to the Dukedome of his heire: and at this day doe not owe one peny to any creditor that lent money to the Duke, which he toke vp to furniish the charges in the warres, which he fustayned in the seruice of the Kinges our foureraine Lords in the late warres for the Kyngdome of Naples. I haue as I suppose by this means stopped the flaunderous mouth and given caufe vnto my fonne, during his life to accompt himself bound vnto his mother: now hauing till thys time liued for other, and made my selfe subie£t more than nature could beare, I am entended to chaunge both my lyfe and condition. I haue tyll thys time run, trauayled, and remoued to the
Caftels and Lordehips of the Dukedome, to Naples and other places, being in mind to tary as I am a widow. But what new affayres and new counsell hath possest my mynd? I haue traauyled and payned my self inouge: I haue to long abidden a widowe's lyfe: I am determined therefore to prouyde a Hufbande, who by louing me, shal honor and cherysh me according to the loue which I shal beare hym, and my defert. For to loue a man without mariag, God defend my hearte should euer think, and shal rather dye a hundred thousand deathes, than a defire so wicked should foyle my conscience, knowyng well that a woman which setteeth her honor to sale, is leffe than nothing, and deserueth not the common ayre shoulde breathe vpon hir, for all the reuerence that men do beare vnto them. I accuse no perfon, albeit that many noble women haue their forheds marked, with the blame of dishonest lyfe, and being honored of some, bee neuerthelesse the common Fable of the Worlde. To the intente then that such myhappe happen not to me, and perceuyng my felse vnable fyll thus to lyue, beyng younge as I am, and (God bee thanked) neyther deformed nor yet paynted, I had rather bee the lonyng Wyfe of a symple feere, than the Concubyne of a kynge or greate Prynce. And what? is the myghty Monarche able to wafthe away the faulte of hys Wyfe whych hath abandoned him contrary to the duty and honestly whych the vndefyled bed requyreth? no leffe then Prynces that whyll trespasshed with those whych were of bafer fluffe than themselues. Meflalina with hir imperiall robe could not so wel couer hir faults, but that the Historians, do defame hir with the name and title of a common woman. Faustina the Wyfe of the fage Monarch Marcus Aurelius, gayned lyke reporte by rendringe hir felse to others pleasure, byfides hir lawfull Spoufe. To mary my felse to one that is myne equall, it is impossible, for so mutch as there is no Lorde in all this Countrie mette for my degree, but is to olde of age, the rest being dead in these later Warres. To mary a husband that yet is but a childe, is folly extreeme, for the inconueniences which daily chaunce thereby, and the eui intreayt that Ladies do recuyue when they come to age, when their nature waxeth cold, by reacon whereof, imbracements be not so fauourable, and their husbandes glutted
with ordinary meate, vfe to run in exchange: wherefore I am resolueld without respite or delay, to choose some well qualified and renowned Gentleman, that hath more vertue than richeffe, that is of better Fame and brute, then of wealth and revenue, to the entent I may make him my Lord, Espoufe, and Husbande. For I cannot impoy my loue vpon trefaure, which may bee taken away from him, in whom richeffe of the minde doth fayle, and fhall bee better content to fee an honest Gentleman with little living, to be prayfed and commended of eoch Degree for his good Deedes, than a rich Carle curfiffed and deftefted of all the World. Thus mutch I fay, and it is the fumme of all my fecretes, wherein I pray your counfel and aduice. I know that fome wil be offended with my choife, and the Lords my Brothers, specially the Cardinall will thincke it ftraunge, and receyue the fame with ill Digesture, that mutch a do fhall I haue to bee agreed with them and to remoue the griefe they fhall conceyue againft mee for this myne attempt: wherefore I would the fame fhould secretly be kept, until without peril and daunger euyther of my felf or him, whom I pretend to marry, I may publifh and manyfett, not my loue but the mariadge which I hope in God fhall foone bee confummate and accomplifhed wyth one, whom I doe loue better than my felf, and who as I ful well do know, doeth loue me better than his owne propre lyfe.” Mayfter Bologna, which tyll then hearkned to the oration of the Ducheffe without mouing, feeling himfelfe touched fo neare, and hearinge that his Lady had made hir approche for mariadge, ftole ftilf aftennd, hys tongue not able to frame one word, onely fanfaded a thofand chimeraes in the Ayre, and formed like number of imaginations in his minde, not able to conieegurte what hee was, to whom the ducheffe had vowed hir loue, and the posfeffion of hir beauty. He could not thinke that this joy was prepared for hymfelfe, for that his Lady fpake no word of him, and he leffe durft open his mouth, and yet was wel affured that he loued him beyond meafure. Notwithstanding knowing the ficklenesfe and vufable heart of women, he fayd vnto himfelfe that she would change hir mynde, for feeing him to be fo great a Coward, as not to offer his fervice to a Lady by whom hee faw himfelfe fo many times both wantonly looked vpon, and intertayned wyth some fecrefie more
than familiar. The Duchesse which was a fine and subtile dame, 
seeinge hir friend rapt with the passion, and standing still vn-
mooueable through feare, pale and amazed, as if hee had bene ac-
cufed and condemned to dy, knew by that Countenaunce and 
aftronishment of Bologna, that she was perfectly beloved of him:
and so meaning not to suffer him any longer to contynue in that 
amaze, ne yet to further feare hym, wyth dissembled and fayned 
mariage of any other but wyth hym, she tooke hym by the hand,
and beholdinge him with a wanton and luring eye, (in futch fort 
as the curious Philosophers themselfes would awake, if futch a 
Lampe and Torche did burne wythin theyr studies,) she fayde thus 
vynto hym: “Seignor Anthonio, I pray you be of good cheere, 
and torment not your selle for any thing that I haue fayd: I know 
well, and of long time haue perceyued what good and faythful 
lone you beare mee, and with what affection you haue ferued me, 
therefore you firt came into my company. Thinke me not to bee 
sow ignorant, but that I know ful wel by outward signes, what fec-
tre thoughts be hid in the inner heart: and that coniecutures many 
times doe gene me true and certayne knowledge of concealed things: 
and am not so foolish to thynke you to be so vndiscrete but that 
you haue marked my Countenaunce and maner, and thereby haue 
knownen that I haue bene more affectioned to you, than to any 
other: for that caufe (fayde shee, strayninge hym by the hand 
very louingly, and wyth cheerefull colour in hir face) I fware vynto 
you, and doe promife that if you thinke mee, it shalbe none 
other but your self whom I wil haue, and defire to take to hufband 
and lawful fpooue, beynge assured so much of you, as the loue 
which fo longe time hath ben hidden and couered in our hartes, 
shall appeare by fo euident proffe, as onely death shal end and 
vndo the fame.” The Gentleman hearing futch fodain talke, and 
the assurance of that which he moft wished for, albeit he saw the 
daunger extreme wherunto he launched himself by espousing this 
great Ladie, and the ennemies he should get by enterung futch ali-
aunce: notrethstandyng building vpon vaine hope, and think-
ing at length that the choler of the Aragon brother would passe 
away if they vnderstoode the maryage, determined to pursus the 
purpose, and not to refuse that greate preferment, being so pro-
digally offer'd: for which cause he answer'd his Lady in this manner: "If it were in my power madame, to bryng to passe that, which I desire for your service by acknowledging the benefits and favors which you depart unto me, as my mind presenteth thanks for the same, I would think myself the happyest Gentleman that lyueth, and you the beste serued Pryncesse of the world. For one beter beloued (I dare presume to say, and so long as I liue wil affirme) is not to be found. If tyll thys time I delayed to open that which now I discouer vnto you, I befeeche you madame to impute it to the greatnesse of your estate, and to the duty of my calling and office in your house, being not seemelye for a seruante to talk of fuchar secrets with his Lady and Miftreffe. And truely the payne which I haue indured to hold my peace, and to hyde my grief, hath ben more noyfom to me than one hundred thousand like forrowes together, although it had bene lawfull to haue reveale them to some trusty friend: I doe not denye madame, but of long time you did perceive my follie and presumption, by addressing my minde so high, as to the Aragon bloud, and to fuchar a princesse as you be. And who can beguile the Eye of a lover, spesially of hir, whose Paragon for good minde, wisedome and gentlenesse is not? And I confesse to you besides, that I haue moft evidentelye perceived how a certaine love hath lodged in your gracious heart, wherwith you bare me greater affection, than you dyd to anye other within the compasse of your family. But what? great Ladys heartes be fraught with secretes and conceites of other effects than the Minds of Symple Women, which caus'd me to hope for none other guerdon of my loyal and faithful affection, than Deathe, and the same very short, and sith that little hope accompanied with great, nay, rather extreme passion, is not able to give sufficient force, both to suffer and to stablisshe my heart with con- stancye. Nowe for so mutch as of your motion, grace, curtesie and liberalitie the same is offer'd, and that it pleaseth you to accept me for yours, I humblye befeche you to dispose of me not as husband, but of one whych is, and shalbe your Seruant for ever, and fuchar as is more ready to obey, than you to commaund. It resteth now Madame, to confyder how, and in what wise our affayres are to be direcced, that thynges being in assurance, you may so liue
without perill and bruite of flaunderous tongues, as your good fame and honest report may continue without spot or blemish." Beholde the first Acte of this Tragedy, and the prouision of the fare which afterwardes sent them bothe to their grave, who immediately gave their mutual faith: and the houre was assigned the next day, that the faire Princeffe should be in hir chamber alone, attended vpon with one onely Gentlewoman which had ben brought vp with her from the cradle, and was made priuy to the heauy mariage of those two lovers which was confummate in hir presence. And for the present time they passed the fame in words: for ratification whereof they went to bed together: but the pain in the end was greater than the pleasure, and had ben better for them bothe, yea and alsò for the third, that they had shewed themselves so wyfe in the deede, as discreete in keeping silence of that which was don: for albeit theyr mariage was secreete, and therby politikely gouerned themselues in their flethes and robberyes of Loue, and that Bologna more ofte helde the state of the Stewarde of the Houfe by Daye, than of Lorde of the fame, and by Nyghte supplyed that Place, yet in the ende, the thynge was percyued whych they defyrde to bee clofely kepte. And as it is impossible to tyll and culture a fertyle Grounde, but that the fame muste yelde some Fruydle, even so the Ducheffe after many pleasures (being ripe and plentiful) became with childe, which at the firffe astonned the maried couple: nevertheless the fame so well was provided for, as the first Childbed was kept secrete, and none did know thereof: the Childe was nourcèd in the Towne, and the father desired to have him named Frederick, for remembraunce of the parents of wys Wyfe. Nowe fortune whych lieth in dayly wayte and ambushment, and lyketh not that men should longe Loyter in Pleasure, and Pafletime, being enuius of such prosperitie, cramped fo the Legges of our two Louers, as they must needs chaungue their Game, and learne some other practis: for fo mutch as the Ducheffe beinge great with Childe agayne, and deliuered of a Girle, the businesse of the fame was not so secretly done, but that it was diſcouered. And it sufficed not that the brute was noyfed through Naples, but that the sound flew further of: As eche man doth know that Rumor hath many mouthes, who
wyth the multitude of hys Tongues, and Trumps, Proclaymeth in diuers and sundry places, the things which chaunce in al the Regions of the Earth: euen so that bablinge foole, caried the newes of that second Childbed to the eares of the Cardinall of Aragon the Duchesse brother, being then at Rome. Think what Ioy, and Pleasure the Aragon brothers had, by hearinge the report of their Sifter’s fact: I dare presume to say, that albeit they were extremely wroth wyth this happened Slander, and wyth that dishonest fame which the Duchesse had gotten throughout Italy, yet farre greater was their sorrow and griefe for that they did not know what hee was, that so curteously was allied to their house, and in their loue had increased their Ligneage: and therefore swelling wyth despit, and rapt with fury to fee themselues so defamed by one of their Bloude, they purposed by all meanes whatsoever it cost them, to know the lucky Louer that had so wel tilled the Duchesse their Sifter’s field. Thus defirous to remove that blame from before their eyes, and to bee revenged of a wrong so notable, they sent Efpials round about, and scouts to Naples, to view and spy the behauiour and talke of the Duchesse, to settle some certayne Judgement of him, which stealingly was become their Brother in lawe. The Duchesse Courte beinge in thys trouble, the dyd continually perceiue in hir house, hir brothers men to marke hir countenance, and to note thofe that came thither to visite hir, and to whom she vsed greatest familiaritie, because it is impossible but that the fire, although it be raked under the ashes, must glue some heat: and albeit the two Louers vsed eche others company, without shewing any Sygne of their affection, yet they purposed to chaung thayr cffate for a tyme, by yelding truce to their pleasures: yea, and although Bologna was a wife and pro- vident perfonage, fearing to be surprisde vpon the facte, or that the Gentlewoman of the chamber corrupted with money, or forced by feare, should pronounce any matter to his hinderance or dis- aduantage, determined to absent himself from Naples, yet not so sodainly but that he made the Duchesse his faithfull Lady and companion privy of his intent: and as they were secretly in their chamber together, he vsed these or sutch like words: "Madame, albeit the right good intent and vnstained conscience, is free from
faulte, yet the judgement of men hath further relation to the exterior appearance, than to vertue's force and innocency it self, as ignoraunt of the secrets of the thought: and so in things that be well done, wee must of necessity fall into the sentence of thofe, whom beastly affectiow raifieth more, than ruled reaion. You see the solempne watch and guarde whych the Seruants of the Lordes your Brothers do within your house, and the sulpition which they have conceiued by reaion of your second Childbed, and by what meanes they labor truely to know how your affayres procede, and things do passe. I feare not death where your seruice may be aduaunced, but yf herein the Maiden of your Chamber be not secrete, if the bee corrupted, and if the keepe not close that which thee ought to doe, it is not ignoraunt to you that it is the losse of my lyfe, and shall dye suspeected to bee a Whoremonger and varlot, euen I, (I fay) shal incurre that Peryll, whych am your true and Lawfull Hufband. Thys separation chaunceth not by iuflyce or deffert, fith the caufe is to ryghteous for vs: but rather your brethren will procure my death, when I shall thinke the fame in greatest affurance. If I had to do but wyth one or two, I would not chaunge the place, ne march one step from Naples, but be affured, that a great band, and the fame well armed will fet vppon me: I pray you, madame, suffer me to retire for a time, for I am affured that when I am abfent, they will neuer foile their hands or imbrue their swardes in your Bloud. If I doubted any thing at all of Peryll touchyng your owne perfon, I had rather a hundred hundred tymes die in your Company, than lyue to fee you no more: but out of doubt I am, that if our affaires were discovered, and they knew you to be begotten with Chyld by me, your safety would be provied for wher I shoulde sustaine the penance of the fact, committed without fault or finne: and therefore I am determined to goe from Naples, to order mine affaires, and to cause my Reuennue to be brought to the place of mine abode, and from thence to Ancona, vntyyl it pleafeth God to mitigate the rage of your brethren, and recouer their good wills for consent to our mariag. But I meane not to do or conclude any thing without your aduife, and if thys intente doe not like you, gyue me Councell Madame, what. I were befte to doe, that
both in Lyfe and Death you may knowe your saythfull seruant
and louing Husband is ready to obey and please you."  This good
Lady hearing hir husband's discoure, vncertayne what to do,
wept bitterly, as well for grief to lofe his presence, as for that she
felt her self with child the third time: the sighes and teares, the
fobbes and heavy lookes, which the thewe forth vppon hir sorrow-
ful husband, gaue sufficient wittnesse of hir payne and Gryef: and
if none had hard hir, I thynke her playntes would haue well ex-
pressed hir inwarde finarte of mynde.  But like a wife Ladye feing
the alleged reaons of hir husband, licenfed him although agaynte
hir minde, not wythout utterance of these fewe Words, before hee
went out of hir Chamber: "Deare husbande, if I were so well
assure of the affectyon of my Brethren, as I am of my mayde's
fidelity, I would entreat you not to leuare me alone: specially in
the cafe I am, beyng wyth Chylde: but knowyng that to be iust
and true whych you haue sayde, I am content to force my wyl
for a certayne tyme, that hereafter we may lyue at rest together,
ioyning our felues in the compayne of our Chylde and Famlye,
voide of those troubles, whych greate Courts ordinarily beare
within the compasse of their Palaces.  Of one thing I muft in-
treat you, that fo often as you can by truflie messenger, you fend
me word and intelligence of your health and state, bicause the
fame shal bring vnto me greater pleasure and contention, than
the welfare of mine owne: and bicause also, vpon fuch occur-
rentes as shal chauncce, I may prouyde for myne owne affaires,
the surety of my self, and of our Children."  In sying fo, she
embraced him very amorously, and he kisst hir with fo greate
forrow and grief of heart, as the soule was ready out of his Body
to take hir flight, fowrouful beyond meaure fo to leuare hir whom
he loued, for the great curtefies and honor which hee had receiued
at hir hands.  In the end, fearing that the Aragon espials woulde
come and difcreie them in those pruieties, Bologna takeke his leane,
and bad his Lady and spouse Farewell.  And this was the second
Acte of this Tragicall Historie, to see a fugitiff husband, secretly
to mary, epecially hir, vpon whom hee ought not fo mutch as
to loke but with feare and reverence.  Behold here (O ye folish
louers) a Glaffe of your lightneffe, and yee Women, the courfe of
your fond behauyor. It behoueth not the wise sodainly to execute
their first motions and defyres of their heart for so mutch as they
may be affured that pleaure is pursued so neare with a repen-
taunce so sharp to be suffred, and hard to be digested, as their
voluptuousnesse shall utterly discontent them. True it is, that
mariages be don in heauen and performed in earth, but that say-
ing may not be applied to fooles, which gouerne them selues by
carnall desires, whose scope is but pleaure, and the reward many
times equal to their follie. Shall I be of opinion that a household
feruaunt oughte to follicite, nay rather suborne the Daughter of
his Lorde without punyfhemt, or that a vyle and abieght perfon
dare to mount vp on a Prynces Bed? No, no, pollicye requyreth
order in all, and eche wight ought to bee matched according to
theyr qualyte, wythout makyng a Patyme of it to couer theyr
Follyes, and knowe not of what Force Loue and Defteny be, except
the fame be refyfsted. A goodly thynge it is to Loue, but where
reafon looseth Place, Loue is wythoute his effege, and the sequele
rage and Madnesse: leaue we to dicsourse of those which beleeve
that they be constrayned to folowe the Force of theyr Mynde,
and may easilye subdue themselues to the Lawes of Vertue and Honefly,
lyke one that thrufteth hys Heade into a Sack, and thynkes he can
not get out: futch people do pleafe themselues in theyr losse, and
thynke all well that is noyfome to their Health, daily folowyng
theyr owne deleyghtes. Come wee againe then to sir Bologna, who
after he had left hys Wyfe in hir Castell, went to Naples, and hauing
fedled a rent vp on hir lands, and leuyed a good summe of Money,
he repayred to Ancona a city of the patrimonye of the Romane
church, whither hee caredy the two Chyldren, which he had of
the Duchesse, caufyng them to be brought vp with suche Dyligence
and care, as it is to be thought a Father well affectsyoned to hys
Wyfe would doe, and who deleyghted to see a Branch of the Tree,
that to hym was the best beloued Fruyet of the World. There he
hyred a house for hys trayne, and for thofe that wayted vp on hys
Wyfe, who in the meane tyme was in great care, and could not
tell of what Woode to make hir arrowes, percyuing that hir Belly
began to swell, and grow to the tyme of hir deliuerie, seeing that
from Day to Day, hir Brothers feruaunts were at hir back, voide
of Counfel and aduife, if one euencyng she had not spoken to the Gentlewoman of her chamber, touchyng the doubts and peryl, wherein she was, not knowing how she might be deliuered from the same. That maiden was gentle and of a good mind and stomake, and loued hir mistrefse very derely, and seeing hir so amazed and tormenting hir self to death, mindyng to fray hir no further, ne to reproue hir of hir fault which could not be amended, but rather to prouyde for the daunger wherunto she had hedlong cast hir selfe, gaue hir this aduyfe: "How now, Madame" (fayd shee,) "is that wyfdom whych from your Chylhode hath ben so famyliar in you, dislodged from your brefte in time when it ought chiefly to refte for incountryng of thofe mithaps that are comming vpon vs? think you to avoid the dangers, by thus tormentyng your self, except you fet your hands to the work therby to gyue the repulfe to aduerfe fortune? I haue heard you many tymes speake of the Constancye and Force of Mynde, whych ought to shine in the deedes of Princefhes, more clerely than amongs thofe dames of bafer houfe, and whych ought to make them appeare like the sunne and the little starres: and yet I see you nowe afitioned, as though you had never forfeene, that aduerfity chaunceth fo wel to catch the great within his clouches, as the base and simple fort. It is but now that you haue called to remembranuce that which might infue your marige with sir Bologna? Did hys owely prefence affure you against the waits of fortune, and was it the thought of paines, feares and frights, which now turmoileth your dolorous mind? Ought you thus to vexe your selfe, when nede it is to thinke how to faue both your honor, and the fruieté wythin your intrailles? If your forrow be fo great ouer sir Bologna, and if you feare your childbed wil be defeered, why seek ye not meanes to attempt some voyage, for couering of the fact, to beguile the eyes of them whych so diligently do watch you? Doth your hearte faile you in that matter? whereof do you dreame? why sweat and fret ye before you make me anfwer?" "Ah sweete hearte," (anfwered the Ducheffe,) "if thou feltst the payne which I do suffer, thy tongue would not be so mutch at wyll, as thou sheweft it now to bee for reproue of my small Constancie. I do forrow specially for the causes which thou alleageft, and
above all, for that I know well, that if my Brethren had neuer fo little intelligence of my beyng with Chyld, I were vndone and my Lyfe at an end, and peraduenture poore Wench, thou shouldest beare the penaunce for my sinne. But what way can I take, that all these Candels may not giue light, and I voided of the Trayne whych ought to wayghte vpon my Brethren? I thinke if I shoult descend into Hell, they would know, whither any shadowe there were in loue with me. Now gesse if I shoult trauayle the Realme, or retire to any other place, whither they would let me live in peace? Nothing lesse, for suspeect they would, that the cause of my departure proceeded of desyre to liue at libertie, to dallye wyth hym, whom they Judge to be other than my lawfull hufbande: and it may so be, that as they bee Wicked and suspiciouss, so will they doubte of my beyng wyth Chylde and thereby shall I bee farre more infortunate by trauayling, than here in miserie amidde myne anguishe: and you the refte that be keepers of my Councell, fall into greater Daunger, vpon whome no doubte they will bee reuenged: and fleethe themselues for your vnhappy waiting and attendance vpon vs.” “Madame,” sayd the bolde Maidene, “be not afraide, and followe mine aduise, for I hope that it shal be the meanes both to see your spoufe, and to rid those troublesome verlets out of your house, and in like maner safely to deliver you into good assurance.” “Say your mind,” quod the Ladye, “for it may bee, that I wyll gouerne my self according to the fame.” “Mine aduise is then,” sayd the Gentlewoman, “to let your houeshold vnderstand, that you made a Vowe to visithe the Holy Temple of our Lady of Loretto, (a Famous Pilgrimage in Italy) and that you commaund your Trayn to make themselues ready to wayt vpon you for accomplishiment of your devotion, and from thence you shall take your Journey to soijourne at Ancona, whither before you goe hence, you shall send your Moneables and Plate, wyth fitch Moneye as you thinke necessarie for furnysching of your Charges; and afterwards God will performe the reft, and through his holy mercy will guyde and direct al your affaires.” The Duchesse hearing the mayden speake her good aduise and amased of her fodayne inuention, could not forbear to imbrace and kyffe hir, bleffing the houre wherein she was borne, and that euer she
chaunced into hir Companye, to whome afterwards shee sayd: "My Wenche, I had well determined to gyue ouer myne estate and Noble porte, joyfully to lyue a fimple Gentlewoman with my deare and welbeloued Hufband, but I could not deuyse how I should conuenently departhe thys countrie without fuspition of some folly: and fith that thou haft so well inftructed mee for brying that fame to paffé, I promyfe thee that so diligentlye by counfel shal be performed, as I see the fame to be right good and neccessary: for rather had I fee my husband, beyne alone without title of Duchoffe or Great Lady, than to liue without him beautified with the graces and Names of Honor and preheminence." This deuised plot was no foner grounded, but the same order for execution of the fame, and brought it to paffé with futh dexterity as the Ladye in leffe than viii. Dayes had conueyed and fente the moft part of hir Moueables, and specially the chyefeft and beffe to Ancona, taking in the meane time hir way towards Loretto after she had bruted hir solempne vow made for that Pilgrimage. It was not fufficient for this folyf Woman to take a Husband more to glut hir libidinous appetite, than for other occasion, except shee added to hir finne another excreable impietie, making holy places and dueties of deuotion, to be as it were the shadowes of hir folly. But let vs consider the force of Louers rage, which fo foon as it hath feased vpon the minds of men, we fee how maruellous be the effects thereof, and with what ftrait and piffauence that madneffe subdueth the wife and strongeft worldlings: who would thinke that a great Lady besides the abandoning hir estate, hir goodes and Chyld, would haue mispryfed hir honor and reputation, to follow like a vagabond, a pore and fimple Gentleman, and him besides that was the houfehold seruant of hir Courte? and yet you fee this great and mighty Duchoffe trot and run after the Male,like a female Wolfe or Lionefle (when they goe to fault,) and forget the Noble bloud of Aragon whereof she was descended, to couple hir self almost with the fimpleft perfon of all the trimmef Gentlemen of Naples. But turne we not the example of follies to be a matter of conquence: for if one or two become bankrupt of theyr honor, it followeth not, good Ladyes, that theyr fact should ferue for a matche to your
deferts, and mutch leffe a patron for you to folow. These Histories be not wryten to trayne and trap you to pursue the thousand thousand flippery sleights of Loue’s gallantife, but rather care-
fully to warne you to behold the semblable faultes, and to serue for a drugg to discharge the Poyson which gnaweth and fretteth the integrytie and foundneffe of the foule. The wyfe and skilfull Apothecary or compofitor of drugges, dreffeth Vipers fleshe to purge the patyent from hote corrupted bloud which conceuyeth and engendreth Leprofie within hys Body. In lyke manner, the fonde loue and wyked rybauldry of Semiramis, Pasiphae, Meffalina, Fauflina, and Romilda is shewed in wryt, that every of you maye feare to be numbred and recorded amongs futch common and dishonourable women. You Princes and great Lords read the follies of Paris, the adulteries of Hercules, the dainty and effeminate life of Sardanapalus, the tiranny of Phalaris, Bufsris, or Dyonifius of Sicile, and see the history of Tiberius, Nero, Caligula, Domitian, and Heliogabalus, and spare not to recompte them amongs our wanton youthes which foile themselves villaines more filthily than the swine do in the durt: al this intendeth it an instruction for your youth to follow the infection and whoresome of those Monfters? Better it were all thofe bokes were drenched in bottom-
leffe depth of feas, than Christian life by their meanes should be corrupted: but the example of the wicked is induced for to efchue and avoid them, as the life of the good and honest is remembred to frame and addrefse our behavior in this world to be praffe worthy and commended: otherwyfe the holineffe of sacred writ should serue for an argument to the vnthrifty and luxurious to confirm and approue their beastly and licentious wickedneffe.
Come we againe then to our purpole: the good Pilgrime of Loretto went forth hir voyage to atchieue hir deuotions, by visiting the Saint for whose Reliques she was departed the country of the Duke hir Sonne: when she had done hir suffragyes at Loretto, hir people thought hir voyage to be at an end, and that she would have returned again into hir Countrey: but she faid vnto them, that forfomuch as she was fo neare Ancona, being but xv. myles of, she would not retyre but she had seen that auncient and goodlye city, which diuers Hystories do greatly recommend, as wel for the
antiquitie, as for the pleafant feat therof. Al were of hir aduife, and went forward to fee the antiquities of Ancona, and the to renew the pleafures whych she had before began with hir Bologna, who was aduertifed of all hir determination, reflyng now like a God, poslefled with the Jewels and rychefle of the Ducheffe, and had taken a fayre palace in the great Strete of the City, by the gate wherof the traine of hys Lady must passe. The Harbinger of the Ducheffe posted before to take vp lodging for the train, but Bologna of rede vnfo the hys Palace for the Ladye. So Bologna whych was already welbeloned in Ancona, and newly entred Amytye and greate Aquayntaunce wyth the Gentlemen of the Cytye, wyth a goodlye troupe of them, wente forthe to meete hys Wyfe, to whom he prefented his houfe, and befought hir that she and hir trayne would vouchsafe to lodge there. She receiued the fame very thankfully, and withdrew hir selfe vnto his houfe, who conducted hir thither, not as a hufband, but like him that was hir humble and affectionate feruaunte. But what needeth greate dyfcourse of Woordes? The ducheffe knowing that it was impossible but eche man must be privy to hir facte, and know what secretes hath passhed betweene hir and hir Hufband, to the ende that no other opynyon of hir Childebed shold be conceyued, but that whych was good and Honeft, and done fynce the accompliyshment of the Maryage, the morrow after hir arryual to Ancona, assembled all her Trayne in the Hall, of purpofe no longer to kepe cloafe that fir Bologna was hir Hufbande, and that alreadye shee had had two Chyldren by him, and agayne was great with childe, with a third. And when they were come togither after dynner, in that preffence of hir hufbande, shee vfed vnfo them thes woordes: “Gentlemen, and al ye my trufly and louyng feruaunts, hyghe tyme it is to manysfe to euery of you, the thing which hath ben done before the Face, and in the preffence of hym who knoweth the moft obscure and hydden secrets of our thoughts. And needefull it is not to kepe sliente that which is neyther eyyll done ne hurtfull to any perfon: If things myght be kept secrete and styl remaine vnknown, except they were declared by the doers of them, yet would not I commit the wrong in conceayling that, which to dyscouer vnfo you doth greatly delite me, and deliuereth my mind
from exceeding grief, in sutech wife as if the flames of my desire could break out with sutech violence, as the fire hath taken heate within my mind, ye should see the smoke mount vp with greater smouthern than that which the mount Gibel doth vomit forth at certayne seasons of the yeare. And to the intent I may not keepe you long in this suspec, this secrect fire wythin my Heart, and that which I shal cause to flame in open ayre, is a certain opinion which I conceive for a mariage by me made certain yeares past, at what time I chose and wedded a husband to my fantasie and liking, desirous no longer to liue in Widow state, being vnwilling to do the thing that should prejudice and hurt my conscience. The same is done, and yet in one thing I haue offended, which is by long keepyng secrete the performed mariage: for the wycked brute dispeareed through the realme by reafon of my childbed, one yeare pase, hath dißpleased some: howbeit my conscience receiuethe conforte, for that the same is free from fault or blot. Now shall ye know therefore what he is, whom I acknowledg for my Lord and spoufe, and who it is that lawfully hath me espoused in the presence of this Gentlewoman here present, which is the witnesse of our Nuptials and accorde of mariage. This gentleman also Antonio Bologna, is he to whom I haue sworn and giuen my faith, and hee againe to mee hath ingaged his. He it is whom I accompt for my spoufe and husband, (and with whome henceforth) I meane to rest and contynue. In consideration whereof, if there be any heere amongs you all, that shal mislike of my choyfe, and is willing to wayt vppon my sonne the Duke, I meane not to let them of their intent; prayinge them faithfully to ferue him, and to be careful of his perfon, and to be vnto him so honest and loyall, as they haue bene to me so longe as I was their mistrefse. But if any of you desire fili to make your abode wyth me, to be partakers of my Wealth and woe, I will so entetayne them as they shal haue good cause to be contended, if not let them departe hence to Malfi, and the steward shal prouide for them according to their degre: for touching my self I do mind no more to be termed an infamous Duchesse: rather would I be honored wyth the Tytle of a fymple Gentlewoman, or wyth that estate whych thee can haue that hath an honest husband, and wyth whom she holdeth
faithfull and loyall company, than reverenced with the glory of a Prynceffe, subiect to the despite of flaunderous tongues. Ye know" (said the to Bologna) "what hath pass'd betwene vs, and God is the witnesse of the integrity of my Consciencye, wherefore I pray you bryng forth our Chyldren, that eche Man may beholde the Fryuycete rayfed of our allyance." Hauynge spoked those Wordes, and the Children broughte forth into the Hall, all the companye stoode stille so astonned wyth that newe successe and tale, as though hornes sodainly had started forth their heads, and rested vnmoveable and amazed, like the great marble piller of Rome called Paſquile, for so mutch as they neuer thought, ne coniecerted that Bologna was the succesfor of the duke of Malfi in his mariage bed. This was the preparatye of the cataſtrophe and bloody end of this tragedie. For of all the Duchefe servaunts, there was not one that was willing to continue wyth theyr auncient misfreffe, who with the faithfull maiden of hir chamber remained at Ancona, enjoying the joyfull embracements of hir Hufbande, in all futch Pleasure and Delights as they doe, whych hauynge lyued in feare, be fet at liberty, and out of al fufpition, plunged in a sea of ioy, and flieing in the quiet calme of al paffetyme, where Bologna had none other care, but how to pleafe his best beloued, and she studied nothing elſe but how to loue and obey him, as the wyfe ought to doe hir husband. But thys fayre Weather lafted not long, for as the ioyes of men do not long endure but waft in lyttele time, so bee the delights of lowers leffe firme and firdefalt and paffe away almoſt in one moment of an houre. Now the servaunts of the Duchefe which wer retired, and durft tary no longer with hir, fearing the fury of the cardinal of Aragon brother to the Lady, the verye Day they departed from Ancona, deuised amongs themselfes that one of them shou'd ride in poſt to Rome, to aduertifie the cardinal of the ladye's maryage, to the intente that the Aragon brethren myght conceiue no cause to feke revenge of their disloyalty. That determination speedily was accomplisht, one pofting towards Rome, and the rest galloping to the countrey Castles of the duke. These newes reported to the Cardinal and his brother, it may be coniectured how gryeuously they toke the fame, and that they were not able to digest them wyth modesty, the yongest
of the brethren, yelped forth a Thousand Curstes and defpytes, agaynste the ympe fexe of womankind. "Ha," said the Prince (transported with choler, and driuen into deadly furie)"what law is able to punifh or reftrayne the folyfh indifcretion of a Woman, that yeldeth hir felf to hir own defires? What shame is able to brydle and withdrawe a Woman from hir mind and madneffe? Or with what fear is it poffible to fnaffle them from execution of theyr filthineffe? Ther is no beast be he neuer fo wilde, but man sometime may tame, and bring to his lure and order. The force and diligence of Man is able to Make mylde the stronge and Proude, and to ouertake the fwyfteft Beaffe and Foule, or otherwyfe to attayne the hygheft and deepest things of the world: but this incarnate diuelife beaffe the Woman, no force can subdue hir, no fwyfteft can approch hir mobylity, no good mind is able to preuent hir sleightes and deceites, they seem to be procreated and borne againfte all order of Nature, and to liue withoute Lawe, whych gouerneth al other things indued with some reafon and vnderftanding. But howe great abhomanion is this, that a Gentlewoman of futch a houfe as ours is, hath forgotten hir eflate, and the greatneffe of hir deceased husband, with the hope of the toward youthe of the Duke hir fonne and our Nephew. Ah, falfc and vile bytch, I sweare by the Almighty God and by his blessed wounds, that if I can catch thee, and that wicked knaue thy chofen mate, I wil pype ye both futch a wofull galiard, as in your imbracements ye neuer felt like ioy and mirthe. I wil make ye dannce futch a bloody bargenet, as your whorish heate for euer shall be cooled. What abufe haue they committed vnder title of mariage, whych was fo secretly don, as their children do witneffe their lecherous loue, but theyr promife of faith was made in open aire, and ferueth for a cloke and vifarde of their mofte filthy whoredom. And what if mariage was concluded, be we of fo little reffeft, as the carion beast could not vouchsafe to aduertife vs of hir entent? Or is Bologna a man worthy to be allied or mingled with the roial blood of Aragon and Caftille? No, no, be he neuer fo good a gentleman, his race agreeth not with kingly flate. But I make to God a vow, that neuer wyll I take one found and reffull flepe, vntill I haue difpatched that infamous fact from our bloud, and
that the caitif whoremonger be vfed according to his desert." The cardinal also was out of quiet, grinding his teeth together, chatter-
ing forth of his Spanish moefl Jack an Apes Pater-nofer, promis-
ing no better vlage to their Bologna than hys yonger brother did. And the better to inrap them both (without further fhure for that time) they sent to the Lord Gif mondo Gonfago the Cardinal of Mantua, than Legate for pope Iulius the second at Ancona, at whole hands they enjoyed futch frindhip, as Bologna and all his family were commaunded fpedily to avoid the city. But for al
that the Legat was able to do, of long time he could not prevail, Bologna had fo greate intelligence wythin Ancona. Neuerthelefte
whiles he differed his departure, he caused the moft part of his
trayne, his Children and goods to be conueyed to Siena, an auncient
Citty of Thofcane, which for the state and liberties, had long time
bin at warres with the Florentines, in futch wyfe as the very fame
day that newes came to Bologna that hee fhould depart the Citty
within xv. daies, hee was ready, and mounted on horfeback to
take hys flight to Siena, whych brake for forrow the hearts of the
Aragon brethren, seeinge that they were deceiued, and frustrate of
their intent, bicaufe they purpofed by the way to apprehend
Bologna, and to cut him in peeces. But what? The tyme of his
hard lucke was not yet expired, and fo the marche from Ancona,
ferued not for the Theatre of those two infortunate louers over-
throw, who certaine moneths liued in peace in Thofcane. The
Cardinall night nor day did sleepe, and his brother still did wayt
to performe hys othe of reuenge. And seeinge their ennemy out
of feare, they difpatched a poft to Alfonfo Caiiruccio, the cardinall
of Siena, to entreat the lord Borgliefe, cheyfe of the Seigniory
there, that their Syster, and Bologna shoule be banished the
Couontrey, and limits of that Citty, which wyth small suite was
brought to pafe. These two infortunate, Hufband and Wyfe,
were chafid from all places, and fo vn lucky as whilom Achaftus
was when he was accursed, or Oedipus, after his father's death, and
inceftious mariage wyth his mother, vncertayne to what Saint to
vw themselues, and to what place to take their flight. In the
ende they determined to goe to Venice, but first to Ramagna,
there to imbarke themselues for to retyre in faulfty to the citty
environned wyth the Sea Adriaticum, the richest in Europa. But the poore soules made their reconinge there wythout their hoaste, faylinge halfe the price of their banket. For being vppon the territory of Forly, one of the trayne a farre of, did see a troupe of horfemen galloping towards their company, which by their countenaunce shewed no signe of peace or amity at all, which made them consider that it was some ambush of theirs Enemyes. The Neapolitan gentleman seeing the onset bendinge vppon them, began to feare death, not for that hee cared at al for his mishap, and ruine, but his heart began to cleaue for heaineffe to see his Wyfe and little Children ready to be murdered, and seare for the paffetime of the Aragon Brethren’s eyes, for whose fakes he knew himselfe already predestinate to dy, and that for despite of him, and to accelerate his death by the overthrow of his Wyfe and Children, he was assurred that they would dispatch them all before his face and presence. But what is there to be done, where counsell and meanes to escape do fayle? Full of teares therefore, astonishment and feare, he expected death so cruel as man could devise, and was already determined to suffer the fame with good courage, for any thing that the Duchesse could say vnto him. He might well have faued himselfe and his eldeft fonne by flight, being both wel mounted vpon two good Turkey hores, whiche ran fo fast, as the quarrel out of a Crofbow. But he loued to match his wife and children, and woulde kepe them company both in lyfe and death. In th’ende the good Lady sayd vnto him: “Sir, for all the ioyes and pleasures which you can do me, for God’s fake faue your felfe and the little infant next you, who can well iudre the galloping of the horfe. For sure I am, that you being out of our company, we shall not neede to feare any hurt: but if you do tary, you will be the cause of the ruine and over-throw of vs all, and we shal receive thereby no profit or aduantage: take this purse therefore, and faue yourfelf, attending better fortune in time to come.” The poore Gentleman Bologna knowing that his wife had pronounced reason, and fearing that it was impossible from that time forth that she or hir Traine could escape their hands, taking levee of hir, and kifing his chyldren not forgetting the money which she offered vnto him, willed his fer-
uants to faue themselves by futch meanes as they thought beft. So gieuing spurs vnto his horfe, he began to fly amayne, and his eldest fonne seeing his father gone, began to followe in like forte: and so for that time they two were faued by breaking of the intended ill luck lyke to light vpon them. And where he thought to rescue himselfe at Venice, he turned another way, and by great journeis arriued at Millan. In the meane time the horfemen were approched neere the Duchesse, who seeing that Bologna had faued himselfe, very courteously began to speake vnto the lady, were it that the Aragon brethren had geuen them that charge, or feared that the Lady would trouble them with hir impurtant Cries, and Lamentations. One therefore amongs the Troupe sayde thus vnto hir: “Madam, we be commaunded by the Lordes your brethren, to conduete you home vnto your house, that you may receiue agayne the Gouernment of the Duchy, and the order of the Duke your fonne, and do maruell very mutch at your folly, for gieuing your selfe thus to wander the Countrey after a man of so final reputa-
tion as Bologna is, who when he had gluttet his lufting lecher-
rous minde with the comelines of your noble Personage, wil despoyle you of your goods and honour, and then take his Legs into som straung countrey.” The simple Lady, albeit greeuous it was vnto hir to heare futch speech of hir husband, yet helde hir peace and diisembled what she thought, glad and wel contented with the courtefy done vnto hir, fearinge before that they came to kyll hir and thought hirselfe already discharged, hopinge vpon their courteous Dealinges, that shee, and hir Chyldren from that tyme forth should lyue in good assuraunce. But she was greatly de-
cyued, and knew within shorte space after, the good will that hir Brethren bare hir: for so soone as these Gallants had condueted hir into the kyngdome of Naples, to one of the Caftels of hir fonne, she was committed to pryson wyth hir children, and she also that was the secretary of hir infortune marriage. Til this time Fortune was contented to procede with indifferent quiet against thofe Louers, but henceforth yee shall heare the Ifflue of theyr little prosperour loue, and how pleasure haung blindered them, neuer forfooke them vntil it had giuen them the overthow. It booteth not heere to recite any Fables or Hyftories, contenting my
felf that Ladies do reade wythout to many weeping teares, the pitifull end of that myferable princeffe, who seeing hir felfe a Prifoner in the company of hir little children and welbeloued Mayden, paciently liued in hope to fee hir Brethren appayfed, comforting hir felfe for the ecape of hir husband out of the hands of his mortal foes. But hir assurance was changed into an horrible feare and hir hope to no expectation of surety, when certayne dayes after hir imprisonement, hir gaoler came in, and fayde vnto hir: “Madame, I do aduife you henceforth to consider and examine your Conscience, for so much as I suppose that euen thys very day your Lyfe shall be taken from you.” I leaue for you to thinke what horrour, and traunce affayled the feeble heart of this poore Lady, and wyth what eares she receyued that cruel message, but hir cryes, and moanes together with hir fighes and lamentations declared with what chere she receyued the aduertisement. “Alas” (fayd she) “is it poiffible that my brethren shoulde so far forget themselues, as for a faete nothing preiuicial vnto them, cruelly to put to death their innocent Sifter, and to imbrue the memory of their faete, in the bloud of one which neuer did offend them? Muft I against al right and equity be put to death before the Judge or Maiestrate haue made triall of my lyfe, and knowne the righteounesse of my caufe? Ah God, moft rightfull and bountifull father, beholde the mallice of my Brethren, and the Tyrannous crueltie of those which wrongfully doe seeke my bloud. Is it a finne to marry? Is it a faute to fly, and anoide the finne of Whoredome? What Lawes be thefe, where marriage bed, and ioyned matrimony is purfued wyth lyke feuerity, that Murder, Theft, and Aduostry are? And what Chriftianity in a Cardinall, to shed the bloud which hee ought to defend? What profesion is thys, to affayle the innocent by the hygh way side, and to reue them of lyfe in place to puniue Theues and Murderers? O Lord God thou art iuift, and doeft al things in equity, I see wel that I haue trespassed against thy maiesty in some more notoryous crime than in marriage: I moft humbly therefore befeech thee to haue compassion on mee, and to pardon myne offences, accepting the confeffion, and repentance of mee thine humble seruant for satifaction of my finnes, which it pleased thee to wafhe away in
the precious blood of thy sonne our Saviour, that being so purified, I may appeare at the holy banket in thy glorious kimgdome.”

When she had thus finished hir prayer, two or three of the ministers which had taken hir besides Forly, came in, and said vnto hir:

“Now Madame make ready your selfe to goe to God, for beholde your houre is come.” “Prayed be that God” (fayd she) “for the wealth and woe that it pleaseth hym to send vs. But I befeech you my friendes to haue pitty vpon these lyttle Babes and innocent creatures: let them not feele the smarte whych I am affuired my Brethren beare agaynst their Poore vnhappy Father.” “Well well, madame,” sayd they, “we wil conuey them to futch place as they shal not want.” “I alio recommend vnto you” (quod she) “this pore imprifoned mayden, and entreate hir well, in consideration of hir good service done to the inforneate Duchesse of Malfi.”

As she had ended those words, the two Ruffians did put a coarse about her neck, and strangled hir. The mayden seeing the pitious Tragedy commensfed vpon hir maystresse, cried out a maine, cursing the cruell malice of those tormenters, and besought God to be witnesse of the fame, and crying out vpon his divine Majesty, she humbly praised unto him to bend hys judgement agaynst them which caufelefe (being no Magistrates,) had killed fo innocent creatures. “Reason it is” (fayd one of the Tyrants) “thatt thou be partaker of thy maystresse innocency, sith thou haft bene fo faithfull a Minifter, and messenger of hir fleshly follies.” And sodaynly caught hir by the hayre of the head, and in fleade of a Carcanet placed a roape about her necke. “How nowe?” (quoth she,) “is this the promised fayth you made vnto my lady?” But those words flew into the Ayre wyth hir Soule, in company of the myferable Duchesse. And now hearken the most forowfull scene of all the Tragedy. The little Chyldren which had seene all this furious game executed vpon their mother and hir mayde, as nature prouoked them, or as some preface of their myshap might leade them thereunto, kneeled vpon their knees before those Tyrants, and embracinge their Legges, wayled in futch wyse, as I thinke that any other, except a pitilefe heart spoyled of all humanity, would haue had commpassion. And impossible it was for them, to vnfolde the embracementes of those innocent creatures,
which seemed to forejudge their death by Sausage lookes and Countenance of those Roysters: whereby I think that needes it must be confesfed, that nature hath in her selfe, and in vs imprinted some signe of divination, and specially at the Houre and tyme of death, fo as the very beasts doe feele some forewarninges, although they see nyther Sword, nor Staffe, and in due use to auoyde the cruel Passage of a thynge fo Fearesfull, as the separation of two thynges fo neerely vnityed, euen the Body, and Soule, which for the motion that chaunceath at the very instant, sheweth how nature is confraigned in that monstrous diuision, and more than horrible ouerthrow. But who can appease a heart determined to worke mischief, and hath sworne the death of another forced thereunto by some special commandement? The Aragon brethren ment hereby nothing else, but to roote out the whole name and race of Bologna. And therefore the two ministers of iniquity did like murder and slaughter vnpon those two tender babes, as they had done before vnpon their mother not without some motion of horror, for an act so detestable. Behold here how far the cruelty of man extendeth, when it coueteth nothing else but vengeance, and marke what exceffyue choler the mind of them produceth, which suffer themselves to be forced and ouerwhelmed with fury. Leave we apart the cruelty of Euchrates, the Sonne of the Kinge of Bactria, and of Phraates the Sonne of the Perffian Prynce, of Timon of Athenes, and of an infinit number of those which were rulers and governours of the Empyre of Rome: and let vs match with these Aragon brethren, one Vitoldus Duke of Litania, the cruelty of whom, confraigned his own subiects to hang themselves for feare least they should fall into his furious and bloody hands. We may confesse also these brutall brethren to be more butcherly than euer Otho Erle of Monferrato, and prince of Vrbin was, who caus'd a yeoman of his chamber to be wrapped in a sheete poudred with fulpher and brimstone, and afterwards kindled with a Candle, was scalded and confumed to death, because he waked not at an hour by him appointed: let vs not excuse them also from some affinity with Manfredus the sonne of Henry the second emperor, who smoldered his own father, being an old man, between two Couerlets. These former furies might haue some excuse to
cover their cruelty, but these had no other color but a certain beastly madness which mowed them to kill those little Children their nephews, who by no means could prejudice or annoy the Duke of Malfi or his title, in the succession of his Duchie, the mother hauing withdrawn her goods, and had her dowrie assigned him: but a wicked hart wrapt in malice muft needs bring forth semblable workes. In the time of these murders the unfortunate Louer kept himself at Millan with his fonne Frederick, and vowed himself to the Lord Siluio Suello, who that tyme besieged the Caftell of Millan, in the behalf of Maximilian Sforcia, which in the end he conquered and recovered by composition wyth the French within. But that charge being atcheiued, the general Suello marched from thence to Cremona with his Campe, whether Bologna durft not folow, but repayred to the Marquize of Britone, in wych tyme the Aragon brethren so wroughte as hys goods were conficcate at Naples, and he dryuen to hys shiftes to vfe the Golden Duckates which the Duchesse gave him to relieue himselfe at Millan, whose Death although it were advertised by many, yet hee could not be persuaded to beleue the same, for that divers which went about to betray him, and feared he should flie from Millan, kept his beake vnder the water, (as the Prouerb is,) and affured him both of the Lyfe and welfare of his Spoufe, and that shortly his Brethren in law would be reconciled because many Noble men fauored hym well, and desired his returne home to hys countrey. Fed and filled with that vaine hope, he remayned more than a yeare at Millan, frequentyng good company, who was well entertainyed of the rycheft marchaunts and beft Gentlemen of the Cytye: and aboue all other, he had familiar access to the houfe of the Ladye Hippolita Bentiuoglia, where vppon a Daye after Dynner, takyng hys lute in hand, whereon he could exceedyngly well play, he began to sing a sonnet, which he had composd vppon the discours of hys myffortune, the tenor whereofinfueth.

The Song of Antonio Bologna, the husband of the Duchesse of Malfi.

If loue, the death, or tract of tyme, haue measured my distresse,
Or if my beatinge sorrowes may my languor well express:
Then loue come soone to visit me, which most my heart desires,
And so my dolor findes some ease, through flames of fanfies fires. The time runnes out his rollinge course, for to prolong myne ease, To th’ end I shall enjoy my loue, and heart himselfe appease, A cruell darte brings happy death, my soule then rest shall find: And sleepeinge body vnder Toumbe, shall dreame time out of mynde, And yet the Loue, the Time, nor Death, looks not how I decreace: Nor geueth eare to any thinge, of this my wofull peace. Full farre I am from my good hap, or halfe the ioye I craue, Whereby I chaung my state wyth teares, and draw full neere my graue. The courteous Gods that giues me lyfe, now mooues the Planets all: For to arreft my groaning ghost, and hence my sprite to call. Yet from them still I am sepearde, by thinges vnequall heere, Not ment the Gods may be vniust, that breedes my chaunging cheere. For they prouide by their foresight, that none shall doe me harme: But she whose blasing beauty bright, hath brought me in a charme. My mistrefle hath the powre alone, to rid me from this woe: Whole thrall I am, for whom I die, to whom my sprite shall goe. Away my soule, goe from the griefs, that thee oppressest still, And let thy dolor witnesse beare, how mutch I want my will. For since that loue and death himselfe, delights in guiltlesse bloud, Let time transport my troubled sprite, where deffny seemeth good. This song ended, the poor Gentleman could not forbeare from pouring forth his Luke warme Tears, which abundantly ran downe his heavy Face, and his pantinge Sighes truly discouered the alteration of his mynde, whych mooued ech wight of that assembly to pitty his mournful State: and one specially of no acquaintance, and yet knew the deuises that the Aragon Brethren had trayned and contriued against hym: that vnacquaynted gentleman his name was Delio, one very well learned, and of trim invention, who very excellently hath endited in the Italian vulgar tongue. This Delio knowing the Gentleman to be husband to the deceafed
Duchesse of Malfi, came vnto him, and taking him aside, said: "Sir, albeit I haue no great acquaintance with you, this being the first time that euer I saw you, to my remembrance, so it is, that vertue hath futch force, and maketh gentle myndes so amorous of their like, as when they doe beholde ech other, they feele themselves coupled as it were in a bande of mindes, that imposible it is to diuide the fame: now knowinge what you be, and the good and commendable qualities in you, I coumpt it my duty to reveale that which may chance to breede you damage. Know you then, that I of late was in company with a Noble man of Naples, whych is in this Citty, banded with a certaine company of horfemen, who tolde mee that he had a speciall charge to kill you, and therefore prayed me (as it seemed) to require you not to come in his fight, to the intent he might not be confrayned to doe that which shoulde offend his Conscience, and grieue the fame all the dayes of his life: morcuer I haue worfe Tidinges to tell you: the Duchesse your Wyfe deade by violent hand in prifon, and the most part of them that were in hir company: bësides this assure your selfe, that if you doe not take heed to that which this Neapolitane Capitayne hath diiffered, other wyll doe and execute the fame. This mutch I haue thought good to tell you, bicaue it would very mutch grieue me, that a Gentleman so excellent as you be, shoulde be murdered in that myferable wyfe, and I shoulde deeme my selfe vnworthy of lyfe, if knowinge these practifes I shoulde diisseemble the fame." Whereunto Bologna aunswered: "Syr Delio, I am greatly bound vnto you, and geue you hearty thankes for the good will you bære me. But in the conspiracy of the brethren of Aragon, and of the death of my lady, you be deceyued, and some haue giuen you wrong intelligence: for within these two dayes I receyued letters from Naples, wherein I am aduertised, that the right honorable and reverend Cardinal and his Brotehr be almoost appeased, and that my goods shall bee rended agayne, and my dear Wyfe restored." "Ah fyr," sayde Delio, "how you be beguilled and Fedde wyth Follyes, and nourished with sleights of Court: assure your selfe that they which write these trifles, make futch shamefull sale of your lyfe, as the Butcher doth of his fëth in the Shambles, and fo wickedly betray you, as imposible it is to inuent
a treason more detestable: but bethinke you well thereof." When he had sayd so, he tooke his leave, and joyned himselfe in company of some and pregnante Wyttles, there assembled together. In the meane tyme, the cruell Spirite of the Aragon Brethren were not yet appeased with the former murders, but needes must finish the last act of Bologna his Tragedy by losse of his lyfe, to keepe his Wyfe and Chyldren company, so well in an other Worlde as he was united with them in Loue in this frayle and transitory passeage. The Neapolitan gentleman before spoken of by Delio, which had taken this enterprize to satisfie the barbarous Cardinall to berieue his Countreyman of lyfe, hauinge chaunged his mynde, and differing from day to day to forte the same to effect, it chaunced that a Lombarde of larger Conscience than the other, inueigled with Couetoufnesse, and hired for ready Money, practised the death of the Ducheffe poore husband: this bloody beaste was called Daniel de Bozola that had charge of a certayne bande of footemen in Millan. Thys newe Iudas and peftillent manqueller, who wythin certayne dayes after knowinge that Bologna ofteentimes Repayred to heare Seruice at the Church and conuent of S. Fraunces, secretly conueyed himself in ambush, hard besides the church of S. Iames, (being accompanied wyth a certayne troupe of Souldiers) to affayle infortunate Bologna, who was sooner slayne then hee was able to thinke vpon defence, and whose mishap was butch, as hee whych kylled hym had good leyfure to faue hymselfe by reaon of the little pursuite made after hym. Beholde heere the Noble fact of a Cardinall, and what fauer it hath of Christian purity, to commit a slaughter for a fact done many yeares past vpon a poore Gentleman which neuer thought him hurt. Is thys the sweete obseruation of the Apostles, of whom they vaunt themselues to be the Successeours and followers? And yet we cannot finde nor reade, that the Apostles, or thosse that stept in their trade of lyfe, hyred Ruffians, and Murderers to cut the Throates of them which did them hurt. But what? it was in the tyme of Iulius the second, who was more martiall than Christian, and loued better to shed bloud than giue blessing to the people. Such ende had the infortunate mariage of him, whych ought to haue contented himselfe wyth that degree and honor that
he had acquired by the deeds and glory of his vertues, so mutch by eech wight recommended: we ought neuer to climb higher than our force permitteth, ne yet surmount the bounds of duty, and leffe suffer our felues to be haled fondly forth with desire of brutal sensuality. Which siume is of sutch nature, that he neuer giueth ouer the party whom he maystereth, vntil he hath brought him to the shame of some Notable Folly. You see the miserable discourse of a Princeffe loue, that was not very wyse, and of a Gentleman that had forgotten his estatte, which ought to serue for a lookinge Glaffe to them which bee ouer hardy in makinge Enterprifes, and doe not measure their Ability wyth the greatnesse of their Attemptes: where they ought to mayntayne themselfes in reputation, and beare the title of well aduised: foreseeing their ruine to be example for all posterity, as may bee seene by the death of Bologna, and by all them which sprang of him, and of his infortunate Spouse his Lady and Maitresse. But we haue discourse enough hereof; sith diuersitie of other hystories do call vs to bring the fame in place, which were not mutch more happy than the bloudy end of thofe, whose Hystory ye haue already heard.
THE TWENTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The disordered Lyfe of the Countesse of Celant, and how she (causing the County of Massino to be murdered,) was beheaded at Millan.

Not wythout good caufe of long tyme haue the wyfe, and discrete, Prudently governed their Children, and taken great heed ouer their Daughters, and thofe alfo whom they haue chosen to bee their Wyues, not in vSing them lyke Bondwomen, and Slaves, to beereine them of all Liberty, but rather to auoyde the murmure, and secrete flaunderous Speach of the common people, and occasions offered for infection, and marrying of Youth, specially circumfpeft of the assaults bent agaynst Maydens, being yet in the firfte flames of fire, kindled by nature in the hearts, yea of thofe that be the wyseft, and beft brought vp. Some doe deeme it very straunge, that solemne Guard bee obserued ouer thofe which ought to lyue at lyberty, and doe consider how lyberty and the bridle of Lycence let flip vnfo Youth, they breede vnfo the fame most strong and tedious Bondage, that better it had bene for youth to haue beene chayned, and clofed in obscure Pryfon, than marked wyth thofe blottes of infamy, which Sutch Lycence and Lyberty doe conduce. If England doe not by experience see Maydens of Noble Houfes Infamed through to mutch vnbrideled, and frank manner of Lyfe, and their Parents defolate for futch villanyes, and the name of their houses become Fabulous and Ridiculous to the people: surely that manner of Efpiall and watch ouer Children, may be noted in Nations not very farre conuening from vs, where men be Ielous of the very Fantasie of them, whom they think to be induced with great vertues, and of thofe that dare with their very Lookes geue attaynt, to behold their Daughters: but where examples be euident, where all the World is assuured of that which they fee by daily experience, that the fruifts of the disordered, breake out into light, it behooueth no more to attend the daungeorous cuftomes of Countreyes, to condefcend to the fottisf Opinions of thofe, whych fay that youth to narrowly looked vnto, is trayned vp in futch grofenesse, and blockifhnesse of fpyrite, as
impossible it is afterwaires the same shoude do any thinge prayse worthy. The Romayne maydens whilom were Cloyftered within their Fathers Pallaces, still at their Mothers Elbowes, and notwithstanding were so wel brought vp, that those of beft ciuility and finest trained vp in our age, shall not be the feconde to one of the leaft perfect in the Citty. But who can learne ciuility and vertue in thes our dayes? our Daughters noufled in companies, whose mouthes run ouer with Whorish and filthy talke, wyth behauioyr full of Ribauldry, and many fraughted wyth facts leffe honest than Speach is able to expresse. I doe not pretend heereby to deprive that fexe of honest and feemely talke, and company, and leffe of exercise amongst the Noble Gentlemen of our Englyshe Soyle, ne yet of the Liberty receyued from our Aunceftours,only (me thyncke) that requisite it were to contemplate the manners and inclination of wils, and refrayne those that be prone to wantonness, and by lyke meanes to rejoyce the mindes of them that be bent to heavinesse, deuided from curtesie and Ciuility, by attendinge of whych choyfe, and considering of that difference, impossible it is but vertue must fhyne more bright in Noble houses than homelynesse in Cabanes of Pefautes, and Countrey Carles: who oftentymes better obferue the Discipline of our Predecessours in education of their Childern, than they which presume to prayse themselues for good skil in vse and gouernment of that age, more troubleome and paynefull to rule, than any other wythin the compasse of man’s lyfe. Therefore the good and wise Emperour Marcus Aurelius would not haue his Daughters to be trayned vp in Courts. “For (quod he) what profit shal the Nurse receyue by learning hir mayden honefty and vertue, when our workes intice them to daliaunce and vice, apprehending the folly of those that bee amorous?” I make this discourse, not that I am so rigorous a Judge for our maydens of England, but that I wishe them so reformed, as to see and be seene should be forbidden, as assurde that vertue in what place so ever she be, cannot but open things that shall fauor of hir excellency. And now to talke of an Italian Dame, who fo long as hir first husband (knowing hir inclination) kept hir subjeckt, liued in reputation of a modest and sober wyfe. Nothing was seene in hir that could defame hir renoume. But so foone as the
shadow of that free captiuitie was made free by the death of hir husband, God knoweth what pageant she played, and how she foyled both hir owne reputation, and the honour of hir second Mate, as yee shall vnderstande if with pacience yee vouchsafe to reade the discouerfe of thys present Hystory. Cefal, (as it is not vnknonwen) is a Citty of Piedmont, and subiect to the Marquize of Montferrato, where dwelled one that was very rich, although of base birth, named Giachomo Scappardone, who being grome wealthy, more by wicked art, and v fury, to mutch manifest, than by his owne diligence, toke to Wife a yong Greeke mayden, which the Marchiones of Montferrato mother of Marquize Guglielmo, had brought home wyth hir from the voyage that shee made into Greacie wyth hir husbande, when the Turkes ouerran the countrey of Macedonia, and seased vpon the Citty of Modena which is in Morea. Of that mayden Scappardone had a Daughter indifferent fayre, and of behaviour luell and pleafaunt, called Bianca Maria. The Father dyed wythin a while after hir birth, as one that was of good yeares, and had bin greatly turmoyled in getting of riches, whose value amounted about one Hundred Thoufand Crownes. Bianca Maria arriued to the age of fixteen, or feuenteene yeares, was required of many, afwell for hir Beauty, Gentlenes, and good grace, as for her goods, and riches. In the ende she was maried to the Vicecount Hermes, the Sonne of one of the chiefeft Houfes in Millan, who incontinently after the mariage, conveyed hir home to hys house, leauing his Greeke mother to gouerne the vfuries gotten by hir dead husband. The Gentleman which amongs two greene, knew one that was ripe, hauing for a certayne tyme well known, and learned the maners of hys Wyfe, saw that it behooued hym rather to deale wyth the Bit and brydle than the spur, for that she was wanton, full of defire, and coueted nothing so mutch as fond and disordered liberty, and therefore without cruel dealng, difquiet, or trouble, hee vfed by little and little to keepe hir in, and cherisht hir more than his nature willingly would suffer, of purpose to holde hir wythin the boundes of duty. And although the Millan Dames haue almos like lyberties that ours haue, yet the Lord Hermes kept hir wythin Dores, and suffred hir to frequent none other house and company, but the Lady Hippolita Sforcia, who
uppon a day demaunded of him wherefore hee kept in his wyfe so short, and persuaded hym to geue her somewhat more the Brydle, bicause diuers already murmured of this order, as to frayte and Frowarde, efteeming hym eyther to be to mutch fond ouer hir, or else to Jealous. "Madame," fayde the Millanoife, "they whych at pleaure so speake of me, know not yet the nature of my Wyfe, who I had rather should be somewhat restrayned, than run at Rouers to hir difhonour, and my flame. I remember wel madame the proper faying of Paulus Emilius that notable Romane: who being demaunded wherefore he had put away his Wyfe being a Gentlewoman so fayre and beautifull. 'O,' quod he and lifted vp his leg whereupon was a new payre of Buikins) 'yee see this fayre Buikin, meete and seemely for this Leg to outward apperance not greeuous or noyfome, but in what place it hurteth me, or where it wringeth yee doe neyther see nor yet feele. So I, madame, do feele in what place my Hoafe doeth hurt and wring my Legge. I know madame what it is to graunt to fo wanton a dame as my Wyfe is, hir will, and how farre I ought to fip the rayne: jealous I am not vpon the fayth I beare vnto God, but I feare what may chaunce vnto me. And by my trouth, madame, I geeue her Lycence to repayre to you both Day and Nyght, at whatsoever hour you pleafe, being assured of the vertuous company that haunteth your houfe: otherwyse my Pallace shall fuffyce hir pleasure for the common ioy of vs both, and therefore I wish no more talk hereof, leaft too importunate fuites do offend my nature, and make me thinke that to be true whych of good will I am loth to fufpect, contenting my felfe with hir Chaflity, for feare leaft to mutch liberty do corrupt hir." These words were not spoken wythout caufe, for the wyfe husband saw wel that futch beasts, albeit rudely they ought not to be vfed, yet stifly to be holden short, and not suffred too mutch to wander at will. And verily his prophecy was to true for reſpect of that which followed: who had not bene maried full vi. yeares, but the Vicecount Hermes departed thys World, whereof she was very forie bycaufe she loued him derely, hauing as yet not tasted the licorous baiets of futch liberty, as afterwards she drank in gluttonous draughts, when after hir husband's obfequies, she retired to Montferrato, and then to
Ca fal to hir Father's houfe, hir mother being also dead, and she a lone woman to joy at pleasure the fruict of hir desires, bendeinge hir only studie to gay and trimme Apparell, and imploied the mornings with the vermilion rud to colour hir cheekes by greater curiosity than the most fameleffe Curtifan of Rome, fixing hir eyes vpon ech man, gyring, and laughing with open mouth, and pleafantly difpofed to talk and reafon with every Gentleman that paffed by the streate. This was the way to attayne the glorious feaf of hir triumphant filthines, who wan the prife aboue the moft famous women whych in hir tyme made profecfion of thofe armes, wherewith Venus once dispoyled Mars, and toke from him the strongeft and beft fleeled armure of all his furniture. Thinck not fayre maydes, that talk and clattering with youth is of small regardre. For a Citty is halfe won when they within demaunde for parle, as loth to indure the Canon shot. So when the care of yong Wyfe or mayde is pliant to lasciuious talk, and deliteth in wanton words, albeit hir chastity receyue no damage, yet occafion of speach is minifred to the people, and perchaunce wyth futch difadvaantage, as neuer after hir good name is recovered. Wherefore needefull it is, not only to auoyde the effect of euill, but also the leaft fupfition: for good fame is requifite for the Woman, as honest lyfe. 

The great Captain Iulius Cæfar, (which firft of al reduced the common wealth of Rome in fourme of monarhie) beinge once demaunded wherefore hee hadde refufed hys Wyfe before it was prowed that she had offended with Clodius, the night of the sacri fices done to the Goddesse Bona, anfwered fo wyfely as truely, that the houfe of Cæfar ought not onely to be voyde of whordome but of fupfition therof. Behold thercfore what I haue sayd, and yet doe saie againe, that ye oughte to take greate heede to youre felues, and to laugh in tyme, not reclining your eares to vncomely talke, but rather to follow the nature of the Serpenty, that stoppeth his eare with his tayle, to auoide the charms and forceries of the Enchaunter. Now this Bianca Maria was fued vnto, and purfued of many at Cafal that defired hir to Wyfe, and amonges the reft two did profer themselues, which were the Lord Gifmondo Gonzaga, the neere kinsman of the Duke of Mantua, and the Counte of Celant, a great Baron of Sauoy, whose landes lie in the vale of
Agosta. A great pastyme it was to thys fyne Gentlewoman to feede hir self wyth the Orations of those two Lordes and a ioye it was to hir, to vs her owne discours and aunswers expreffinge with right good grace sundry amorous countenance, intermingling therwithall fighes, fobbes, and alteration of cheere, that full well it might haue bene sayde, of loue trickes that she was the only dame and mistrefse. The Marchyonesse of Montferrato defiros to gratify the Lord of Mantua his sonne in law, endeuored to induce this wanton Lady to take for spoufe Gifmondo Gouzaga, and the fute fo well proceeded, as almoft the mariage had bene concluded if the Sauoy Earle had not come betwixte, and shewed forth his Noblenesse of minde, when he vnderftode how things did paffe, and that another was ready to beare away the pryfe, and recouer his mistrefse. For that caufe he came to vifit the Lady, who intertayned him wel, as of custom she did al other. And for that he would not empeyle hys tyme in vayne, when he founde hir alone and at conuenyent leyfure, began to preache vnto hir in thys wyse with futch countenance, as she perceyued the Counte to be far in loue with hir.

The Oration of the Counte of Celant to his Ladye.

"I am in doubt Madame, of whom chiefly I ought to make complaint, whetber of you, or of my selfe, or rather of fortune which guideth and bryngeth us together. I fee wel that you receive some wrong, and that my caufe is not very iust, you taking no regarde vnto my passion which is outrageous, and leffe hearkeninge vnto my request that fo many times I have giuen you to understand onely grounded vpon the Hones loue I beare you. But I am besides this more to be accused for sufferinge an other to marche so far over my game and soyle, as I haue almoft loft the trage of the pray after which I most desire, and specially doe condemne my Fortune, for that I am in daunger to lose the thyng which I defere, and you in peryll to passe into that place where your captiuitie halfe worse than the flames by the Portugales condemned to the mines of India. Doeth it not suffifie you that the Lord Hermes closed you vp the space of v. or vi. yeares in his Chamber, but wil you nedes attempt the rest of your youthly daies amid the Mantuanes, whose fuppicious heads are ful of hammers working in the
fame? Better it were madame, that we approchynge neerer the
gallante guife of Fraunce, shoulde live after the lyberty of that Coun-
trey, than bee captiue to an Italian house, which wyll refrain you
with like bondage, as at other tymes you have felt the experience.
Moreover ye fee what opinion is like to be conceiued of you,
when it shalbe bruted that for the Marquize feare, you haue maried
the Mantuan Lord. And I know well that you like not to be ef-
seemed as a pupil, your nature cannot abyde compulſion, you
be free from hir authority, it were no reason you should be con-
strained. And not to stay in framing of orations, or stand vp
difice of Words, I humbly befeche you to behold the constant
love I beare you, and being a Gentleman fo Wealthy as I am, none
other cause induceth me to make this fute, but your good grace
and bryngynge vp, which force me to loue you aboue any other
Gentlewoman that liueth. And although I myghte alleage other
reasons to proue my faying, yet referre I my felf to the experi-
ence and bounty of youre mynd, and to the equity of your Judg-
ment. If my passion were not vehement, and my torment without
comparifon, I would with my fained griefs to be laughed to scorn,
and my disssembled payne rewarded with flouts. But my loue
being sincere and pure, my travaile continuall, and my griefs
endeffe, for pity fale I befeche you madame to consider my
faithfull deferts with your duetiful curtesie, and then shal you
fee how mutch I ought to be preferred before them, which vnder
the shadow of other mens puifance, do feke to purchase power to
command you: where I do faithfully bynd and tye my word and
dede continuallly to loue and serve you, wyth promyfe al the dayes
of my Lyfe to accomplifh your commaundements. Behold if it
please you what I am, and with what affection I make mine humble
playnt, regard the Meffanger, loue it is himſelf that holdeſh me
within your fnares, and maketh mee captuye to your beauty and
gallant graces, which haue no pieré. But if you refuse my fute,
and caufe me breath my words into the aire, you shalbe accused of
cruelty, ye shal be the entier deſái̇c of a gentleman which loueth
you better than loue himſelfe is able to yelde flame and fire to
force any wight to loue mortal creature. But, verily, I beleue the
heauens haue departed in me futch aboundance, to the intent in
louyng you with vehemence so great, you may also thinke that
it is I which ought to be the Friend and spoufe of that gentle and
curteous Lady Bianca Maria, which alone may cal her self the
mistrefse of my Heart.” The Ladye whych before was mocked and
flouted wyth the Counte his demaunds, hearing thys lafte discoure,
and remembring his fift mariage, and the natural ienalofie of
Italians, halfe wonne, without making other countenance, anfwered
the Counte in thys manner: “Syr counte, albeyt that I am obedy-
ente to the wyll and commaundemente of madame the Marchyonesse,
and am loth to dyspleafe hir, yet wil I not fo farre gage my
lybertye, but ftil referue one poynt to faye what reafeth in my
thoughte. And what shoulde lette me to chofe fuch one, to
whome I fhalbe both his life and death? And whereof beinge
once posfed, it is impoffyble to be rid and acquitted? I affure
you, if I feared not the fppeach and fulpition of malyous mindes,
and the venime of slaunderous Tongues, neuer husband shoule
bryng me more to bondage. And if I thought that he whom I
pretend to chofe, would be fo cruel to me, as others whom I know,
I would prefently refufe mariage for euer. I thanke you neuer-
theleffe, both of your aduertifements giuen me, and of the honor
you doe me, your self defiryng to accomplifh that honor by mar-
riage to be celebrated betweene vs. For the fidelity of which your
talke, and the little difsimulation I fee to be in you, I promise
you that there is no gentleman in this countrey to whom I giue
more puiffance over me, than to you, if I chaunce to mary, and
thereof make you fo good affurance, as if it were already done.”
The Counte feeing fo good an entry would not suffer the tyme to
flip, but beating the Buffes vnftill the praye was ready to fproung,
replyed: “And fith you know (madame) what thing is profitable,
and what is hurtfull, and that the benefite of lyberty is fo mutch
recommended, why doe you not performe the things that may
redounde to your honor? Affure mee then of your word, and
promise me the faith and loyaltie of maryage, then let me alone to
deale wyth the ref, for I hope to atayn the effect without
offence and displeafe of any.” And feeing hir to remaine in a
mufe without fppeaking word, he toke hir by the hand and kifing
the fame a million of tymes, added thse Words: “How now,
madame, be you appalled for so pleasaunt an assault, wherein your aduerfary confesseth himselfe to be vanquished? Courage, madame, I say courage, and beholde him here which humbly praieth you to receiue him for your lawfull husband, and who swareth vnto you all futch amitye and reuerence that husband oweth to his loyall spouse." "Ah, fyr Counte," sayd she, "and what wyl the Marquize say, vnto whom I haue wholly referred my self for mariage? shal not the haue iuft occasion to frowne vpon mee, and frowardly to vfe me for little respect I heare vnto hir? God be my witneffe if I would not that Gonzaga had never come into this countreie: for although I loue him not, yet I haue almost made him a promyfe, which I can not kepe." "And fith there is nothing don," (said the Sauoy Lord) "what nede you to torment your selfe? wyl the Marquize wrecke hir tyrannie ouer the will of hir subiectes, and force Ladies of hir Lande to marie againste their luste? I thinke that so wyse a princeffe, and so well nurtured, will not so far forget hir self, as to straine that which God hath left at lyberty to euerie wight: promyfe me onely maryage and leaue me to deale wyth the rest: other thynges shalbe wel prouided for." Bianca Maria vanquished with that importunity, and fearing againe to fall into feruitude, hoping that the Counte would maintaine futch liberty as he had assured, agreed vnto hym and plyghted vnto him her faith, and for the tyme vfed mutuall promyfes by wordes respec- tuely one to another: and the better to conforme the fact, and to let the knotte from breakyng, they bedded themselues together.

The Counte very ioyfull for that encounter, yielded futch good beginning by his countenance, and by Famyliar and continuall haunte with Bianca Maria, as shortly after the matter was knowen and came to the Marqueffe eares, that the Daughter of Scappardone had maried the Counte of Celant. The good lady albeit that shee was wroth beyond measure, and willingly would haue ben reuenged vpon the bride, yet hauing respect to the Counte, which was a noble man of great authority, swallowed down that pille wythout chewing, and prayed the Lord Gonzaga not to be offended, who feing the light behauiour of the Ladie, laughed at the matter, and prayfèd God for that the thing was so wel broken off: and he did forefee already what issue that Comedye would haue, beynge
very famylyar for certayne Dayes in the Houfe of Bianca Maria. Thys maryage then was publyshed, and the solemnity of the Nuptyals were done very pryncely, accordyng to the Nobylity of hym which had maryed hir: but the augurie and prefage was heawy, and the melancholike face of the seafon (which was obfcred and darkened about the time they shouled go to church) declared that the mirth and ioy should not long continue in the house of the counte, according to the common faying: *He that loketh not before he leapeth, may chaunce to stumble before he sleepe*.

For the lord of Celant being retird home to his valeys of the Sauoy mountains, began to loke about his businesse, and perceived that his wife furpafed al others in light behauiour and vnbridede defires, whereuppon hee refolued to take order and stop hir paffage before she had won the field, and that frankly she shoule goe feke hir ventures where shee lift, if she would not be ruled by his aduife. The foolish Countefle feeing that hir husband wel espied hir fond and foolifh behauior, and that wisely he went about to remedy the fame, was no whir aftonied, or regarded his aduife, but rather by forging complaints did caft him in the teeth fometymes with hir riches that shee brought him, sometime with thofe whom she had refufed for his fake, and with whom farre of she liued lyke a sauage creature amid the mountaine deserts and baren dales of Sauoy, and tolde him that by no meanes she minded to be clofed and shut vp like a tameffe beaft.

The Counte which was wyfe, and would not breake the Ele vppon his knee, proudently admonifhed hir in what wyse a Ladye ought to efteeeme hir honor, and how the lighteft faults of Noble forts appeare mortal finnes before the world: and that it was not sufficient for a Gentlewoman to haue hir body chaff, if hir fpach were not according, and the minde correfpondent to that outward femblance, and the conferuation agreeable to the secret conceiptes of Mynd: "And I shal be ful fory fwete Wife" (fayd the Counte) "to give you canfe of discontent: for wher you shalbe vexed and molefted, I shal receibe no ioy or pleafure, you being [such one as ought to be the fecond my self, determining] by God's grace to keepe my promife, and vfe you like a wyfe, if fo be you regard me with duey femblable: for reafon will not that the
head obey the members, if they shew not themselues to be futch as depend vpon the health and life of it. The husband being the Wyue's chiefe, ought to be obeyd in that which reafon forbideth: and shee referring hir felfe to the pleafure of hir head, forceth him to whom she is adioyned, to do and aflay all trauayle and payne for hir fake. Of one thinge I muft needes accuse you, which is, that for trifles you frame complaynt: for the mynde occupied in folly, lufteth for nothinge more than vayne things, and those that be of little profite, specially where the pleafure of the Bodye is onely considered: where if it follow reafon, it diflembleth his griefes with wordes of wyfedome, and in knowing mutch, fayneth notwithstanding a fubtile and honest ignoraunce: but I may bee mutch deceyyed herein, by thinking that a Woman fraught with fickle Opinions may recline her cares to what fo euer thing, except to that whych deliteth hir mynde, and pleafeth the defires framed wyth in hir foolyfhe fantafie. Let not thyf speach be straunge vnto you, for your woordes vtttered without diferetion, make me vfe thyf language: finally (good madame) you shall shew your felfe a Wyfe and louing wyfe, if by takeinge heed to your requestes, you faithfully follow the advife thereof." The Countesse whych was fo fine and malicious as the Earle was good and wyfe, diflembling her griefe, and coueringe the venome hidden in hir mynde, began fo well to play the hypocrite before hir husbande, and to counterfayte the simple Dame, as albeit he was right politike, yet he was within hir Snare intrapt, who flattered him wyth fo fayre Wordes, as shee won him to goe to Cafal, to vifite the lands of hir Inheritaunce. We see whereunto the intent of this falye Woman tended, and what checkmate shee ment to geue both to hir husband, and hir honour: whereby we know that when a woman is dispoed to geue hir felfe to wickednesse, hir mynde is voyd of no malyce or invention to fort to ende any daunger or perill offere vnto hir. The factes of one Medea (if credite may be gieuen to Poets) and of Phaedra, the Woman of Theseus, we declare with what beafily zeale they began and finifhed their attempts: the eagles flight is not fo high, as the Foolyfhe defires, and Conceiptes of a Woman that trufeth in hir owne opinion, and treadeth out of the tracft of duety, and way of Wyfedome. Pardon
me, good Ladies, if I speake so largely, and yet think not that I
mean to display any other but sutch, as forget the degree wherein
their Auncestours have placed them, and whych digresse from the
true path of those that haue immortalized the memory of them-
selfes, of their husbands, and of the houses also whereof they
came. I am very lothe to take vppon mee the office of a slau-
derer, and no leffe do mean to flatter those, whom I fee to their
great shame, offende openly in the sight of the worlde: but why
should I dylymble that which I know your felues would not con-
ceyle, ye in conffcncence yee were requyred? It were extreme
follye to decke and clothe vnce wyth the holy garment of Vertue,
and to call that Countesse and Ciulyt, whych is manyfet whoredom
and Trechery: let vs terme eth thyng by his due Name, and not
deface that whych of it selle is faire and pure: let vs not also ftaine
the renoume of thofe, whom their own Vertue do recommende.
This gentle Countesse beeing at Cafal, making mutch of his hus-
bande, and kifing him with the kif of treason, and of him
being vnfainedly beloued and cherifhed, not able to forget his
fermons, and mutch leffe his owne filthy lyfe, seeyng that with his
Counte it was impossyble for hir to liue and glut her lecherous
lust, determined to runne away and fecke hir aduenture: for the
brynging to paffe wherof she hath already taken order for money,
the interest wherof growing to hir daily profite at Millan: and
hauynge leuied a good summe of Ducates in hande, vntyll hir
other rents were ready, she fled away in the night in companye of
certayne of hir men which were priuie to her doeings. Hir retire
was to Pauie, a City subiecte to the state and Duchy of Millan,
where she hired a pryncely pallace, and appareled the same ac-
cording to hir estate and Trayne of hir husband, and as her owne
revenue was able to beare. I leaue for you to thinke what buzzings
entred the Counte’s head, by the sodayne flight of his wife, who
would haue fent and gone hir selle after to feke hir out, and
bryng hir home againe, had he not well considered and wayed his
owne profite and aduantage, who knowing that hir afbence would
rid out of his head a fardell of fupitions whiche he before con-
ceued, was in the ende refolued to lette hir aloue, and suffer hir
remaine in what place so euer she was retirid, and whence hee
neuer minded to cal hir home agayne. "I were a very foole," (said he) "to keepe in my Houfe fo pernicious and fearfull an enimy, as that arrant wherse is, who one day before I beware will caufe some of hir ruffians to cut my throte, bides the Vyolatyon of hir holye Maryage Bed: God defende that futch a Strumpet by hir presence should any longer profane the houfe of the Lord of Celant, who is well rewarded and punished for the exceffiuue loue whych he bare hir: let hir goe whether thee lift, and lyue a God's name at hir eafe, I do content my self in knowing what Women be able to do, wythout further attempt of fortune or other proofe of hir wycked Lyfe." He added further, that the honor of fo Noble a perfonage as he was, depended not upon a woman's mischief: and affure your felfe the whole race of woman kind was not sparcd by the Counte, against whom he then inuyed more through rage than reason, he considered not the honest fort of women, which deface the vyllany of thofe that glie themfelles ouer to theyr own lufts, wythout regarde of modefty and shame, which oughte to be Famylyar, as it were by a certain Naturall inclynatyon in all degrees of Women and Maydens. But come we again to Bianca Maria, holding now hir Courte and open houfe at Pauie, wher fhe got fo holy a fame, as miftreffe Lais of Corinth did, whose trumpris was neuer more common in Asia than that of this fayre dame, almost in every corner of Italy, and whose conuerfation was futch as hir frank liberty and familiary demeanor to ech wyghte, well witneffe hir horryble Lyfe. True it was that her reputatyon ther was very fimal, and fhe hired not hir felfe, neyet toke pains by fettng hir body to fale, but for fome refonable gayne and earnest pain: howbeit the (of whom somtimes the famous Greke orator would not buy repentaunce for fo high a prycz) was more exceffiuue in Sale of hir Merchaundyfe, but not more wanton: for fhe no sooner espyed a comely Gentleman that was youthly, and well made, but would prefently fhow him fo good countenance, as he had ben a very foole, that knewe not what prouender this Colt did neigh: whose shameleffe Gefture Maffalina the Romane princeffe dyd neuer furmount, except it were in that thee vifited and haunted common houfes: and this dame vifed hir difports wythin hir owne, the other alfo receiued indyfferently Carters, Galleye flaues, and
Porters: and thys halfe Greeke did hir paftyme wyth Noble Men that were braue and lustye: but in one thing thee well resembled hir, whych was, that Meffalina was soner wearye with tranayle, than the satisfied with pleasure and the filthy vfe of hir body, like vnto a fink that receyueth al filth, wythout digorgyng any throwne into the fame: this was the chaste lyfe which that good Lady led, after she had taken flight from hir husband. Marke now whether the Milanois that was hir first husbande, were a grosse headed perfon or a foole, and whither hee were not learned and skilful in the science of Phisognomy, and time for him to make ready the rods to make hir know hir duety, therwith to correct hir wanton youth, and to cut of the lusty twigs and proud scienes that foked the moisture and hart of the stock and branches. It chaunced whiles she liued at Pauie, in this good and honorable port, the Counte of Maffino called Ardizzino Valperga came to the Emperour's service, and therby made hysabode at Pauie with one of his brothers: the Counte being a goodly Gentleman young and gallant in apparel, giuen to many good quallities had but one onely fault, which was a mayme in one of his legges, by reason of a certain adventure and blow receiued in the warres, although the fame toke away no part of his comelinesse and fyne behauyor. The Counte I say, remaining certayne days at Pauie beheld the beauty and singularity of the Countesse of Celant, and stayed with futch devotion to view and gaze vpon hir, as manye times he romed vp and down the fireate wherein she dwelt to find meanes to speake vnto hir. His first talke was but a Bon tour: and simple salutation, fuch as gentlemen commonly vfe in company of Ladies, and at the firste brunte Valperga couldse settle none other judgement vpon that Goddeffe, but that she was a wife and honest dame, and yet futch one as needed not the Emperors camp to force the place, which as he thought was not so well flanked and rampired but that a good man of Armes myght easilie winne, and the breache so liuely and fauible, as any fouldier might passe the fame: he became so famuliari with the Lady, and talked with hir so secretly, as vpon a day being with hir alone, hee courted in this wise: "Were not I of all men moiste blame worthy, and of greatest folly to be reproued, so long time to be acquainted with a Lady
so faire and curteous as you be, and not to offire my servise life and goodes to be disposed where you pleased? I speake not thys, Madame, for any euel and sinister judgement that I conceyue of you, for that I prayfe and esteeme you aboue any Gentlewoman that euer I knew til this day, but rather for that I am so won- derfully attached with your good graces, as wrong I should doe vnfo your honor and my loyal servise towards you, if I continued dumbe, and did conceyle that whych incessantly would confume my heart with infynyte numbre of ardent defyres, and waft myne intrails for the extreame and burning loue I bear e you. I do re- quire you to put no credite in me, if I refufe what it fhall pleafe you to commauud me: wherfore Madame, I humbly befech you to accepte me for your owne, and to favour me as futhch one, whych with all fidelity hopeth to paffe hys time in your company." The Counteffe although she knew ful wel that the fire was not fo liuely kindled in the stomacke of the Counte as hee wente aboue to make hir beleue, and that his wordes were to eloquent, and coun- tenance to joyfull for fo earney a lourer as hee femed to be, at thys firft incountry; yet for that he was a valiant Gentleman, yong, lufty, and strongly made, minded to retaine him, and for a tyme to flaye hir stomacke by appeafying hir gluttonous appetite in matters of loue, with a morfell fo dainty, as was thys Mynion and lufty young Lorde: and when the Courage of hym began to coole, ano- ther fhoulde enter the lifies. And therefore she answered hym in thys wife: "Although I (knowying the vfe and manners of men, and with what Baits they Hoke for Ladies, if they take not heede, having proued their malice and little loue,) determined neuer to loue other than mine affection, ne yet to favoure Man excepte it bee by fhewyng some Familiar manner to heare theyr talke, and for paftime to hearken the braue requests of thofe which fay they burne for loue, in the mids of some delghtfome brooke. And albeit I think you no better than other bee, ne more fayhfully, more affeéctyonate, or otherwyfe moued than the ref, yet I am contente for respeécte of youre honoure, somewhat to beelene you and to accepte you for myne owne, fith your dyfcretyon is futhch (I trufl) as fo Noble a Gentleman as you bee, wyll hym f elfe declare in thofe Affayres, and when I fee the effeécte of my
Beholde the Carrion. cannot youth certayne bewrapped Sonnettes certayne fielde was defire whereby thoufand his hundredes, and receuying the Ladie's language for his aduantage, and that hir countenance by alteration of hir minde did ad a certayne beauty to hir face, and perceyuing a desire in hir that he should not vse delay, or be to squeueimish, she demaunding naught else but execucion, tooke the present offered time, forgetting all ceremonies, and reverence, he embraced hir and kissed hir a Hundred Thousand tymes. And albeit shee made a certayne simple and prouoking refistance, yet the louer notinge them to be but preparatives for the sport of loue, he strayed from the bounds of honesty, and threw her vpon a fielde Bed wythin the Chambre, where shee folaced hymself wyth hys long desired suite. And finding hir worthy to be beloued, and she him a curteous gentleman, consulted together for continuance of their amity, in fuch wife as the Lorde Ardizzino spake no more but by the mouth of Bianca Maria, and dyd nothyng but what she commaunded, being so bewrapped wyth the heauy Mantell of hir Beaufly Loue, as hee still abode nyght and day in the house of his beloued: whereby the brute was noyfed throughout the Citty, and the fonges of their Loue more common in ech Citizen's mouth, than Stanze or Sonnettes of Petrarch, Played and Fayned vpon the Gittrone, Lute, or Lyra, more fine and witty than those vnfauery Ballets that be tuned and chaunted in the mouthes of the common fort. Beholde an Earle well ferued, and drest by enjoying fо false a Woman, which had already falsfied the fayth betrouched to hir husband, who was more honest, milde, and vertuous than she deferred. Beholde alfo, yee Noble Gentlemen, the simplicitie of this good Earle, how it was deceyued by a false and filthy ftrumpet, whose stincking lyfe and common vse of body woulde have withdrawn ech simple creature from mixture of their owne wyth fuch a Carrion. A lesson to learne al youth to refrayne the Whoorishe lookes of lighte conditioned Dames, a number (the more to be pittied) shewing foorth themselves to the Portfale of euery Cheapener, that lift demande the pryce, the grozenes whereof before considered, were worthy to be defied and loathed. This Ladye seeinge her Louer noufled in hir luft, dandle him with a thousand trumperyes, and made
THE COUNTESS OF CELANT.

hym holde the Mule, while other enjoyed the secrete iporte which earst hee vfed hymself. This acquayntance was so dangerous to the Counte, as she hir selfe was shamelesse to the Counte of Celant: for the one bare the armes of Cornwall, and became a seconde Aëteon, and the other wickedly led his lyfe, and loft the chiefes of that hee loked for by the seruice of great Princes, through the trefon of an arrante common queane. Whiles this Loue contynued in al Pleasure and lyke contentation of either parts: fortune that was ready to mounte the stage, and shew in sight that her mobylyte was no more flable than a woman’s wyll: for vnder futch habite and sexe Painters and Poets descrybe hir) made Ardizzino suspeste what desire she had of chaunge: and within a while after, sawe himselfe fo farre misliked of his Lady, as though he had never bene acquainted. The caufe of which recoile was, for that the Countesse was not contented with one kind of fare, whose Eyes were more greedy than hir fomake able to digest, and aboue al defined chaunge, not seking meanes to finde hir that was worthy to be beloued and intaryned of fo great a Lady, as she esteemed hir selfe to be, and as futch of their owne opinion thinke themselfes, who counteraiete more grauitie and reputation than they doe, whome Nature and vertue for theyr maiesty and holynes of lyfe make Noble and praife worthy. That desyre deceived hir nothing at all, for a certaine time after that Ardizzino posseffed the forte of this fayre Countesse, there came to Pauia, one Roberto Sanfeuerino earle of Gaiazzo, a yong and valiaunte gentleman, whose Countrye lyeth on this side the Mountaines, and was verye famlyar with the Earle of Massino. This vufaythful Alcina and cruel Medea had no foner caft hir Eye vpon Signor di Gaiazzo, but was pierced with loue in futch wife, as if forthwith shee had not attayned hir defyres, she would haue run mad, bycaufe that Gentleman bare a certayne flatelye representatyon in hys Face, and promysed futch dexteritie in hys deedes, as fodaynly shee thought him to be the man that was able to staunch hir filthy thurst. And theryfore fo gently as shee could, gave ouer hir Ardizzino, with whom shee utterly refused to speake, and shunned hys company when shee sawe him, and by shutting the gates agaynst him: the Noble man was notable to forbear from throwing forth
fome words of choler, wherby she tooke occasio[n both to expell him, and also to beare hym sutch displeasure, as then she con-
spired his death, as afterwards you shall perceyue. This greate hatred was the caufe that she fell in loue as you haue harde wyth
the Counte of Gaiazzo, who shewed vnto him all signe of Amitye, and seeing that hee made no greate fute vnto hir, she wrote vnto
him in this manner.

The Letter of Bianca Marie, to the Counte of Gaiazzo.
Sir, I doubt not by knowing the state of my degree, but that ye
blu[u] to see the violence of my mynd, which paffing the limites of
modesty, that ought to guard futh a Lady as I am, forceeth me
(vncertayn of the caufe) to doe you understand the gryef that doeth
torment me, which is of futh conftraynt, as if of curtesie ye do
not vouchsafe to come vnto me, you shall commnyt two faults, the
one leaung the thing worthy for you to loue and regard, and which
defermeth not to be caft of, the other in causinf the Death of hir,
that for Loue of you, is bereft of rest: wherby loue hath very little
in me to feafe vpon, either of heart or liberty. The caue of which
gryef proceedeth from your only grace, which is able to vanquyfhe
hir, whose victorious hap hath conquered all other, and who attend-
ying your resolut aunfwer, shal rest vnder the mercifull refuge of
hope, whych deceiuing hir, shal fe by that very meanes the wretched
end of hir that is al your owne.

Bianca Maria Countesse of Celant.
The yong Lorde metal mult maruelled at this mesfage, were it for that
already hee was in loue with hir, and that for loue of his friend
Ardizzino, durft not be known therof, or for that he feared she wold
be straught of wits, if she were despifed, he determined to go vnto
hir, and yet stayed thinking it not to be the part of a faythfull com-
panyon to deceiue his Friend: but in the end pleasure furmount-
ing rea[n], and the beauty ioyned wyth the good grace of the Lady
hauing blinded him, and bewitched his wits fo wel as Ardizzino,
he toke his way towards hir house, who waited for him wyth good
deuotion, whither being arriued, he failed not to vfe like spech
that Valperga did, either of them (after certain reuerences and
other feue words) minding and defyringe one kinde of intertayne-
ment. This practize dured certayn months, and the Countesse was fo farre rapt with her new louer, as she only employed hir self to please him, and he shewed himselfe so affection as therby she thought to rule and gouerne him in all things: wherof she was afterwards deceipt as you shall vnderstand the maner. Ardizzino feing himself wholly abandoned the preffence and loue of his Lady, knowing that she railed vpon him in al places where she came, departed Pauia halfe out of his wittes for Anger, and fo strayed from comely ordfyr by reasone of his rage, as hee displayed the Countesse thre times more liuely in hir colours, than she could be paynted, and reproved hir wyth the termes of the vileft and mofte common ftrumpet that euuer ran at rouers, or shot at random. Bianca Maria vnderstode hereof, and was aduertised of the vile report that Ardizzino spred of hir, throughout Lombardie, which chaffed hir in futch wyfe as shee fared like the Bedlem fury, ceafting night nor day to playne the vnkindnes and folly of hir reiectted louer: fomtimes faying, that she had iuft caufe fo to do, then flattering hir felfe, allledged, that men were made of purpose to suffer futch follyes as were wroughte by hir, and where they termed themselfes to bee Women's Seruauntes, they ought at theyr Miftresse Handes to endure what pleased them. In the end, not able any longer to refrayne hir choler, ne vanquifh the appetite of renewe, purpofed at all adventure to prouide for the death of her auncient Enimie, and that by meanes of him whom she had now tangled in her Nettes. See the vnnameaffe of this mas-tife bitche, and the rage of that Female Tiger, howe shee goeth about to armee one friend againft an other, and was not content onely to abuse the Counte Gaiazzo, but defuifd how to make him the manqueller. And as one night they were in the middef of their embracements, she began pitifully to weepe and sigh, in futch wyfe as a man would have thought (by the vexation of hir hearte) that the foule and body would haue parted. The younge Lorde louingly enquired the caufe of hir heauinesse: and fayd vnto hir, that if any had done hir displeasure, hee would reuenge hir caufe to hir contentment. She hearing him fay fo, (then in studie vpon the deuice of hir Enimie's death) fpake to the Counte in this manner: "You know fir, that the thing whych mofte tormenteth the
Gentle heart and minde that can abide no wronge, is defamation of honoure and infamous reporte. Thus mutch I say for that the Lord of Massino, (who to say the truthe, was fauoured of me in like forte as you be now) hath not been ashamed to publishe open flaunder agaynst me, as though I were the arraínt Whore that euer had giuen her selfe ouer to the Galley slaues alongs the shorie of Scicile. If he had vaunted the fauour which I have done him but to certayne of his privat Friendes, I had incurred no flaunder at all, mutch leffe any lyttle fuspition, but hearyng the common reportes, the wrongfull Woordes and wycked brutes that he hath rayfed on me: I beseech you fyr, to do me reaason that he may feele his offence and the smart for his committed fault agaynst hir that is al yours." The Lord Sanfeuerno hearyng this discouerfe, promised hir to do hys beft, and to teache Valperga to talke more foberly of hir, whom he was not worthy for to ferue, but in thought. Notwithstandyng, he sayde more than he ment to do, for he knew Ardizzino to be so honest, fage and curteous a personage, as hee would neyther doe nor fay any thing without good cause, and that Ardizzino had iuer quarrell agaynst hir, by takyng that from hym whych hee loued (although it was after his discontinuance from that place, and vpon the onely request of hir.) Thus he concluded in mind styl to remayne the fryend of Ardizzino, and yet to fpend his time with the Countesse, which he did the space of certayn monthes without quarrelling with Valperga, that was retirèd to Pauie, with whom he was converfant, and liued familiarly, and moft commonly vfed one table and bed together. Bianca Maria seing that the Lord of Gaiazzo cared not mutch for hir, but onely for his pleasure, determined to vse like pra&cie against him, as she did to hir former lower, and to banifh him from hir Houfe. So that when he came to fee hir, either she was sicke, or hir affaires were sutch, as she could not kepe hym company: or else hir gate was shut vpon him. In the end (playing double or quit) she prayed the sayd Lord to shewe hir futch pleuaure and friendhip, as to come no more vnto hir, bicaue she was in termes to goe home to hir hufband the Counte of Celant, who had lent for hir, and feared leaft his ferauants shoulde finde her houfe ful of futers, alleaging that she had liued long inoughe in
that most sinful life, the lightest faultes whereof were to heynous for dames of hir port and calling, concluding that so long as she lyued she would beare him good affection for the Honest Company and conueration had betwene them, and for his curtseie towards hir. The yong Earle, were it that he gaue credidt vnto hir tale or not, made as though he did beleue the same, and without longer dyseourfe, forbare approche vnto hir houfe, and drue out of his heade al the Amorous affection which he caried to the Piedmont Circes. And to the ende he might haue no cause to thinke vpon hir, or that his presence shoulde make hym flaeue againe to hir that first pursued him, he retired in good time to Millan: by which retire hee avoided that mishap, wherwith at length this Peftilent women would haue cut him over the shynesse, even when his mind was leaft theron. Such was the malice and mischiefe of hir heart, who ceaing to play the whore, applied hir whole pastime to murder. Gaiazzo being departed from Pauie, thys Venus once agayne aflayed the embraces of hir Ardizzino, and knew not wel how to recouer hym agayne, bycaue she feared that the other had discouered the Enterpyfe of his Murder. But what dare not shee attempte whose mynde is flaeue to finne? The first aflayes be harde, and the minde doubtfull, and confcience gnaweth vpon the worme of repentance, but the same once noufled in vice, and rooted in the heart, it is more plesaunte, and gladsome for the wicked to execute, than vertue is familiar to those that follow hir: So that shame separate from before the eyes of youth, riper age nourfed in impudency, their sight is so daeled, as they can see nothing that eyther shame or feare can make them blush, which was the cause that this Lady, continuinge fill in hir mischiefe, so mutch practised the freendes of hym whom shee desired to kill, and made mutch fit excuse by hir Ambassades, as shee was content to speake to hir, and to here hir Iustifications, whych were easie enough to doe, the Judge being not very guilty. Shee promisid and swore that if the fault were proued not to be in him, neuer man should see Bianca Maria, (so long as she lyued) to be other than a friend and flaeue to the Lord Ardizzino, wholly submitting hirselfe vnto his will and pleasure. See how peace was capitulated betweene the two reconciled Louers, and what were the articles of
the fame, the Lorde of Maffino entringe Possession agayne of the
fort that was reualted, and was long tyme in the power of another.
But when he was seazed agayne, the Lady saw full wel, that hir
reoured friend was not fo hard to pleafe, as the other was, and
that wyth him she liued at greater liberty. Continuing then their
amorous Daunce, and Ardizzino hauing no more care but to reioyce
himselfe, norhys Lady, but to cherishe and make much of his friend,
beholde eftfoones the desire of Bloud and wyll of murder, newly
reuiued in that new Megera, who incited (I knowe not with what
rage,) fanfied to haue him slayne, whych refused to kill hym,
whom at this present she loued as himselfe. And he that had
inquired the caufe thereof, I thyncke none other reafon coulde
be rendred, but that a braynelefhe heade and reafonlefmine,
doe thincke moft notable murders, and myschiefe be easie to be
brought to paffe, who fo strangely proceeded in difordred Lufes,
which in fine caufuld their myferable shame, and ruine, wyth
the death of himselfe and hym, whom she had stirred to the faé,
boldeninge him by perfuafion, to make him belene Vyce to bee
Vertue, and Glorioufly commended hym in hys follies, whych you
shall heare by readinge at lengthe the dicourse of thy Hystory.
Bianca Maria, seeing himselfe in full possession of hir Ardizzino,
purposed to make hym chiefe executioner of the murder, by hir
intended, vpon Giaazzo, for the doing whereof one night holdinge
hym betwene hir armes, after shee had long time dalyed with
hym, like a cunninge Maistresse of hir Art, in the ende weauninge
and trayning hir treaue at large, she fayd thus vnto hym: "Syr,
of long time I haue bene defirous to require a good turne at your
hands, but fearing to trouble you, and thereupon to be denied, I
thought not to be importunate: and albeit the matter toucheth
you, yet did I rather holde my peace then to here refufall of a
thinge, which your selfe ought to profer, the fame concerning
you." "Madame," fayd hir Louer, "you know the matter neede
to be haynous and of great importaunce, that I shoulde deny you,
specially if it concern the bleamish of your honor. But you say the
fame doth touch mee somewhat neerely, and therefore if ability
be in me, spare not to vttre it, and I wyll affay your satisfaction
to the vtttermoist of my power." "Syr," fayd she, "is the Counte

VOL. III.

E
of Gaiazzo one of your very frends?" "I thinke" (aundered Valperga) "that he is one of the moste frends I haue, and in respect of whole frendship, I will hazarde my selfe for him no lesse than for my Brother, being certaine that if I have neede of him, he will not faile to do the like for me. But wherefore doe you ask me that question?" "I will then tel you," sayd the Traytrefle (kissing him so sweetely as euer he felt the like of any Woman,) "for somuch as you be so deuyed of your opinion in him who is wicked in dissimbling of that, which maliciously lieth hidden in his heart. And briefly to say the effect: assure your selfe hee is the greatest and most mortall Ennimy that you haue in the Worlde. And to the intent that you do not think this to be some forged Tale, of light inuention, or that I heard the report of some not worthy of credit, I will say nothing but that whych hymselfe did tell me, when in your absence he vied my company. He sware vnto me, without declaration of the caufe, that hee could neuer bee mery, nor his mynde in rest, before hee saw you cut in pieces, and shortly woulde giue you fuch assaulte, as al the dayes of our lyfe, you shoule neuer haue lust or mynde on Ladies lyfe. And albeit then, I was in choler agaynft you, and that you had miniftred some caufe, and reason of hatred, yet our firste love had taken fuch force in my hart, and I besought him not to do that enterprisse so long as I was in place where you did remayne, because I cannot abide (wythout preuent death) to see your finger ake, mutch lesse your lyfe berieued from you. Vnto which my fute his Eare was deasse, swearing still and protestinge that either he would be layne himselfe, or else dispatch the Countee Ardizzino. I durft not" (quod the) "ne wel could as then aduertise you thereof, for the final acceffe that my seruants had vnto your lodgings, but now I pray you to take good heed by preventing his diuellishe purpose: For better it were for you to take his lyfe, than he to kill and murder you, or otherwyse work you mischief, and you shal be esteemed the wifer man, and he pronounced a traitor to seeke the death of him, that bare him fuch good will. Doe then according to myne aduice, and before he begin, doe you kill hym, by the which you shall saue your selfe, and doe the part of a valyaunt knight, biffides, the satissying of the mynde of hir that
above all pleasures of the World doth chiefly desire the same. Experience now will let me proue whether you loue me or not, and what you will do for hir that loueth you so dready, who openeth this conspiried murder, awell for your safety, as for lengthening of the lyfe of hir, which wythout yours cannot endure: graunt this my sute (O friend most deare) and suffer me not in sorrowfull plight to be despoyled of thy prefence: and wilt thou suffer that I shoulde dy, and that yonder Proude, Trayterous, and vnfaithfull varlet shoulde liue to laugh mee to scorne?" If the Lady had not added those last words to hir foolish fermon, perchaunce she might haue prouoked Ardizzino to folow hir Counfell: but seeing hir fo obstinately continue hir request, and to prosecute the same with futch violence, concluding vpon hir owne quarrel, his conscience throbbed, and his minde measured the malice of that Woman, with the honefte of him, against whom that tale was told, who knew his frend to be fo found and trufty, as willingly he would not do the thinges that should offend him, and therefore would geue no credit to false report without good, and apparant proove: for which caufe hee was persuaded that it was a malicious tale deuised by some that went about to fowe debate betweene those two friendly earles. Notwithstanding, vpon further pause, and not to make hir chafe, or force hir into rage, he promised the execution of hir cursed wil, thanking hir for hir advertisement, and that he would prouide for hys defence and surety: and to the intent that hee might thyncke he went about to performe his promife, he tooke his leave of hir to goe to Millan, which hee did, not to follow the abominable will of that rauenous Maftife, but to reveale the matter to his companion, and drect the same as it deterued. Being arrived at Millan, the chiefe Citty of Lombardy, he imparted to Gaiazzo from poynet to poynet the discourse of the Counteffe, and the peticion hee made vnto hym, vppon the conclusion of hir Tale: "O God" (sayd the lord Sanfeuerino,) "who can beware the traps of Whoores, if by thy grace our hands be not forbidden, and our hearts and thoughts guided by thy goodnes? Is it possible that the Earth can breede a Monster more pernicious than this most Pestilent Beast? Thys is truely the grist of hir Father's fury, and the stench of all hir Predeceffours villanyes: it is impossible of a
Kyte or Cornerant to make a good Sparhauk, or Tercle gentle. This carion no doubt is the Daughter of a Vilayne, fprong of the baseft race amongs the common people, whose mother was more fine than chafe, more subtile than fober: this minion hath forfaken hir husband, to ereft bloudy Skaffoldes of murder amid the Nobles of Italy: and were it not for the dishonour which I should get to foyle my hands in the bloude of a Beast so corrupt, I woulde teare hir with my Teeth in a hundreth Thoufand peeces: how many times hath she entreated mee before: in how many sundry fortes with joyned handes hath she befought mee to kill the Lorde Ardizzino? Ah, my Companion, and right well beloved Freende, can you thincke mee to bee fo Trayterous, and Cowarde a Knaue, as that I dare not tell to them to whome I heare displeaure what mallice lurketh in my heart?” “By the fayth of a Gentleman,” (fayd Ardizzino,)“I would be for my mynd shoule feaze on futch Folly, but I am come to reuenea thys into you, that the Song might found no more wythin myne eares. It behoueth vs then, fith God hath kept vs hytherto, to avoyde the ayre of that infection, that our braynes be not putrified, and from henceforth to fly thofe Blondfuckers, the Schollers of Venus: and truely great dishonour would redound to vs, to kill one an other for the onely paftime and fottifh fanfic of that mynion: I haue repented me an hundred times when the firft mooved mee of the deuice to kill you, that I did not geeue a hundred Poignaladoes wyth my Dagger, to stop the way by that example for all other to attempt futch Butcheries: for I am well affured that the mallyce whych fhee beareth you, proceedeth but of the delay you made for satsafction of hir murderous defire, whereof I thancke you, and yelde my felfe in all caufes to imployme my lyfe, and that I haue, to do you fervice.” “Leaue we of that talk” (fayd Gaiazzo) “for I haue done but my duety, and that which ech Noble heart ought to every wight, doing wrong to none, but prone to help, and doe good to all: whych is the true marke and Badge of Nobility. Touching that malignant Strumpet, hir owne lyfe shall reuenge the wrongs which she hath gone about to venge on vs. In meane while let vs reioyce, and thincke the goods, and richeffe fhee hath gotten of vs, wil not caufe hir Bagges mutch to Strout and Swel.
To be short, she hath nothing whereby she may greatly laugh vs to scorn, except our good entertainment of hir night and day do provoke hir: let other coyne the pence henceforth to fill her Coafers, for of vs (so farre as I see) she is decyued." Thus the two Lordes passed forth their tyme, and in all Companies where they came, they spent their Talke, and Communication of the disordered lyfe of the Countesse of Celant. The whole Citty also rang of the sleights and meanes she vsed to trappe the Nobleman, and of her pollicies to be rid of them when her thirst was flanched, or diet grew lothefome for want of change. And that whych greued hir most, an Italian Epigram blased forth hir proues to hir great difhonour, whereof the Copy I cannot get, and some fay that Ardizzino was the author: for it was composed, when he was dispossessed of patience: and if shee coulde haue wrecked hir will on the knights, I beleue in hir rage she would haue made an Anathomy of their Bones. Of whych hir two enimies, Ardizzino was the greateft, agaynft whom hir displeasure was the more, for that he was the firit with whom she entred Skirmifh. Nothing was more frequent in Pauy, than villanous Iefts, and Playes vpon the filthy Behauiour of the Countesse, which made hir aflamed to goe out of hir Gates. In the ende shee purpofed to chanuge the Ayre and place, hoping by that alteration to stay the Infamous Brute, and Slauder: so she came to Millan, where firft she was inuefted wyth flate of honour, in honest Fame of Chaffe lyfe fo longe as Vicount Hermes liued, and then was not purfued to faunch the thirst of thofe that did ordinarily draw at hir Fountayne. About the tyme that she departed from Pauy, Dom Pietro de Cardone a Scicilian, the Baflard Brother of the Counte of Colifano, whose Lieurtenaunt he was, and their father flayn at the Battayle of Bicocca wyth a band of horfemen arrived at Milan. This Scicilian was about the age of one or two and twenty yeres, somwhat black of face, but well made and ftere of countenance: whiles the Countefte foirnord at Milan, this gentleman fell in love with hir, and searched all meanes he coulde to make hir hys friende, and to enjoy hir: who perceyuing him to be young, and a Nouice in Skirmifhes of Loue, lyke a Pigeon of the firft coate, determined
to lure him, and to ferue hir turne in that which shee purposed to 
doe on those agaynst whom shee was outrageiously offended. Now 
the better to entice thys younge Lorde vnto her Fantafye, and to 
catch hym wyth hir bayte, when hee passed through the Streate, and 
saluted hir, and when he Syghed after the manner of the Spaniard, 
rominge before hys Lady, shee shewed him an indifferent mery Coun-
tenaunce, and sodaynely refrayned that Cheere, to make hym taste 
the pleasure mingled with the four of one desire, which he could not 
tel how to accomplishe: and the more faynt was his hardines 
for that he was neuer praftifed in the daliance and seruice of Lady of noble 
houfe or calling, who thincking that the Gentlewoman was one of 
the Principall of Millan, he was straungely vexed, and tormented for 
hir loue, in futch wyfe as in the night he could not rest for fanta-
fing, and thinking vpon hir, and in the Day passed up and downe 
before the Doore of her lodging. One eueninge for his disport hee 
went forth to walke in company of another Gentleman, which well 
could play vppon the Lute, and defired him to gieue awake vnto hys 
Lady, that then for iealousie was harkeninge at hir window, both 
of the founde of the Instruement, and the Ditty of hir amorous 
Knight, where the Gentleman song thys Sonet.

The death with trenchant dart, doth brede in brefl futch il, 
As I cannot forget the smart, that thereby rifeth stil. 
Yet neerthelefle I am, the ill it felfe in deede, 
That death with daily dolours deepe, within my breaft doth breede.

I am my Mistrefle thrall, and yet I doe not kno, 
If she beare me good will at all, or if she louse or no. 
My wound is made fo large, with bitter wo in brefl, 
That still my heart prepares a place to lodge a carefull gueft.

O dame that hath my lyfe and death at thy defire. 
Come eafe my mind, wher fancies flames doth burne like Ethn: fire, 
For wanting thee my life is death and doleful cheere, 
And finding fauor in thy fight, my dayes are happy heere.
Then he began to sigh so terribly, as if already he had given sentence, and definitive Judgement of his farewell, and disputed with his fellow in such fort, and with Opinion so assured of his contempt, as if he had been in love with some one of the Infants of Spayne: for which cause he began very pitifully to sing these verses.

That God that made my foule, and knows what I have felt,
Who causeth sighs and sorrows oft, the sely soule to swelt,
Doth see my torments now, and what I suffer still,
And understand I taste mo griefs, than I can shew by skill.

Hee doth consent I wot, to my ill hap and woe,
And hath accorded with the dame that is my pleasaunt foe,
To make my boilingle breft abound in bitter blisse,
And so bereue me of my rest, when heart his hope shall misse.

O what are not the songs, and sighs that louers haue,
When night and day with sweete defires, they draw vnto their graue,
Their grief by frendship growes, where ruth nor pity raynes,
And so like snow against the Sun, they melt away with pains.

My dayes must finishe so, my destny hath it set,
And as the candle out I goe, before hir grace I get.
Before my fute be heard, my seruice throughly knowne,
I shalbe layd in Tumbe ful low, so colde as Marble stone.

To thee faire Dame I cry, that makes my senses arre,
And plantest peace within my breft and then makes sodain war:
Yet at thy pleasure still, thou must my sower make sweete,
In granting me the sauour due, for faithfull Louers meete.

Which sauour geue me now, and to thy Noble mynde,
I doe remayne a Galley slane, as thou by prooife shall finde.
And so thou shalt releafe my heart from cruel bandes,
And haue his fredome at thy wil that yelds into thy handes.
So rendring all to thee, the gods may ioyne vs both
Within one lawe and league of loue, through force of constant troth.
Then shalt thou mistrefle be, of lyfe, of Limme and all,
My goods, my golde, and honour, loe! shall fo be at thy call.

Thys gentle order of loue greatly pleased the Lady, and therefore opened hir gate to let the Scicilian lorde, who seeing hymfelfe fauoured (beyond all hope) of his Lady, and cheerfully intertayned, and welcommed with great curtesie ftoode so still atton- nied, as if hee had beene fallen from the Cloudes: but the which coulde teache hym good manner, to make hym the minister of hir myfchiefe, takynge hym by the hande, made hym fit downe vpon a greene Bed befydes hir, and feeing that he was not yet imbolde- ned, for all hee was a Souliour, shee shewed hir felfe more hardy than hee, and firste asslayled hym wyth talke, fayinge: "Syr, I praye you thinke it not straunge, if at thys houre of the nyght, I am bolde to caufe you enter my house, beinge of no great ac- quayntaunce wyth you, but by hearinge your curteous saluta- tions: and wee of thys Countrey bee somewhat more at liberty than they in those partes from whence you come: besides it lyketh mee well (as I am able) to honour straunge gentlemen, and to retayne them with right good willinge heart, fith it pleafeth them to honour mee wyth repayre vnto my house: fo shall you be welcome flyll when you pleafe to knocke at my Gate, whych at all tymes I wyll to be opened for you, wyth no leffe good wyll than if yee were my naturall Brother, the fame wyth all the thinges therein, it may pleafe you to dispose as if they were your own." Dom Pietro of Cardonne well satiffied, and contented wyth thys vnlooked for kyndneffe, thanked her very Curteously, humbly praying hir befides to dayne it in good parte, if he were fo bolde to make requeste of loue, and that it was the onelye thynge which hee abone all other defyred moffe, so that if shee would receive him for hir friende and Seruant, shee shoulde vnderstannde hir to be a Gentleman, which lightly woulde promife nothing excepte the accomplishment did followe: the that sawe a greater onfet than she loked for, answered hym smyling with a very good grace:
“Sir, I haue knowne very many that haue vouched flipperie pro-
myses, and proffered lordly services vnto Ladies, the effect wherof
if I myght once see, I would not thinke that they coulde vanishe so
foone, and confume like fmoake.” “Madame” (fayde the Scici-
lian) “yf I fayle in any thing which you commaunde mee, I praye
to God neuer to receiue any favor or grace of those Curtesies
which I craue.” “If then” (quod shee) “you wyl promife to
employ your selfe aboute a businesse that I haue to do when I
make request, I wyll alfo to accept you for a friende, and graunt
futch secrecie as a faithful louer can defyre of his Lady.” Dom
Pietro which would have offred hym selfe in Sacrifice for hir, not
knowyng hir demaunde, tooke an othe, and promyfed hir so
lyghtly as madly afterwardes he did put the fame in proffe. Be-
holde the preparatues of the obfequies of their first loue, and the
guages of a bloudie Bed: the one was prodigall of hir honoure,
the other the tormente of his reputation, and neglec ted the duety
and honor of his state, which the house wherof he came, com-
maunded hym to kepe. Thus all the nyght he remained with
Bianca Maria, who made him so wel to like hir good entertayn-
ment and imbracementes, as he neuer was out of her Company.
And the warie Circes fayned her self so faire in loue wyth hym,
and vfed so many toyes and gametricks of her filthy science,
as he not onelye esteemed hym selfe the happiest Gentleman of
Scicilia, but the moft fortunate wight of all the Worlde, and by
bibbing of hir Wyne was fo straungely charmed with the Plea-
fures of his fayre Myftresse, as for hir fake he would haue taken
vpon him the whole ouerthrowe of Milan, so well as Blofe of
Cumes to fette the Cittye of Rome on fire, if Tyberius Gracchus
the fedicious, woulde haue giuen it him in charge. Sutch is the
manner of wilde and foolish youth, whych suffreth it selfe to be
caried beyonde the boundes of reason. The same in time past
did ouerthrow many Realmes, and caufed the chaunge of diuers
Monarchies: and truely vnseemely it is for a man to be subdue
ed to the will of a common strumpet. And as it is vnomol to sub-
mit him selfe to futch one, so not requisite to an honest and ver-
tuous Dame, his maried Wyfe. Which vnmanly deedes, be occa-
sions that diuers Foolifhe Women commit futch filthy factes, with
their inspeckable trumperies begiling the simple man, and perchance through to mutch losing the Bridle raynes to the lawfull Wyfe, the poore man is strangely deeyued by some adulterous varlet, whych at the Wyue's commaundment, when the feeth opportunity, wil not shrinke to hazarde the honour of them both, in fuch wife as they ferue for an example vpon a common Scaffold to a whole generation and Posterity. I wyll not seeke farre of for examples, being satisfied with the folly of the Baflard Carbonne, to please the cruelty and malice of that infernall fury the Countesse, who hauinge lulled, flattered, and bewitched with hir louetricks (and peraduenture with some charmed drinke) her new Pigeon, feeinge it time to folicipte his promife, to be reuenged of thofe, whych thought no more of hir conspiracies and trayterous deuifes, and alfo when the time was come for punifhinge of hir whoredome, and chaflising of the breach of fayth made to hir husbande, and of hir intended murders, and fome of them put in execution, she I fay, defirous to fee the ende of that, which in thought she had contruyed, vpon a day tooke Dom Pietro aside, and secretly began this Oration: "I take God to witnes (fir) that the requet which I pretend prefently to make, proceedeth of defire rather that the Worlde may know how iuftly I seeke meanes to mayntayne myne honour, than for defire of reuenge, knowinge very well, that there is nothing fo precious, and deere vnto a woman, as the preferuation of that infesimable Iewell, specially in a Lady of that honourable degre whych I mayntayne amonche the beft. And to the intent I feme not tedious with prolixity of words, or fhe other than direct circumstancies before him that hath ofred iuſt reuenge for the wrongs I haue receyued: knowe you fir, that for a certain tyme I continued at Pauie, kepynge a houfe and Trayne fo honeſt, as the beſt Lords were contented wyth myne ordinarie: It chaunced that two honeſt Gentlemen of Noble Houfe haunted my Palace in lyke fort, and with the fame intertaining whych as you fee, I doe receive ech Gentleman, who beyng well intreated and honoure of me, in the ende forgat theſe theſeſeſelfes fo farre, as without reſpect of my flate and callinge, wythout regard of the race and family wherof they come, haue attempted the flaudery of my good name, and vſter subuersion of my
renoume: and sufficient it was not for them thus to deale with mee poore Gentlewoman, without desert (excepte it were for admittance them to have accessse vnto my house) but also to continue their Blasphemies, to myne extreame reproach and shame: and bowe true the fame is, they that know me can well declare, by reason whereof, the vulgar people prone and ready to wycked reportes, haue conceived futsch opynion of me, as for that they see me braue and fine in Apparell, and speccially throughe the flaunderous speache of those gallantes, do deeme and repute me for a common Whoore, wherof I craue none other wytnesse than your selfe and my conscience. And I sware vnto you, that fith I came to Milan, it is you alone that hath vanquished, and made the Triumph of my Chaftytye: and ye you were absent from this Citye, I affure you on my fayth that I would not tarry here xxii. houres. These infamous ruffians I say, these perffecutters and termagantes of my good name, haue chafed mee out of all good Cityes, and made me to be abhorred of euch honest company, that weary I am of my lyfe, and lothe to lyue any longer except fpedeye redresse bee had for reuengement of this wronge: wherefore except I finde some Noble Champion and Valyaunte Personage to requyte these Vyllains for their spitefull Speach blased on me in euery Corner of Towne and Countreye, and to paye them theyre rewardre and hire that I may lyue at Lybertye and quyet, Sorrowe will eyther confume mee or myne owne handes shall hasten fpedeye Death." And in speakeyng thofe Woordes, theee beganne to weeps with futsch abundance of teares streaming downe hir Cheekes and Necke of Alabafter hewe, as the Sicilian whych almost had none other God but the Countesse, sayd vnto hir: "And what is he, that dare moleft and flaunder hir that hath in hir puissance so many Souldiers and men of Warre? I make a vow to God, that if I know the names of thofe two arrant villaynes, the which haue so defamed my Myfreffe name, the whole worlde shall not saue their liues, whole carrion Bodies I will hew into so many gobhets, as they haue members vpon the fame: wherefore Madame" (sayd ye, imbracing her) "I pray you to grieue your selfe no more, commit your wronges to me, only tell me the names of thofe Gallaunts, and afterwards you shall vnderstande
what difference I make of woorde and deede, and if I doe not trimme and dreffe theym so finelly, as hereafter they shall haue no neede of Barber, neuer trust me any more.” Shee, as reniued from death to lyfe, kyffed and embraced him a thousand tymes, thankinge hym for his good will, and offering him all that she had. In the ende she tolde him that her enemies were the counties of Maffino and Gaiazzo, which but by their deaths alone were not able to amend and repayre her honour. “Care not you” (fayde hee) “for before that the Sunne shall sprede his Beames twice 24. houre upon the earth, you shall heare newes, and know what I am able to do for the chaffishment of those deuils.” As he promised, hee sayled not to do: for whythin a whyle after as Ardizzino was goinge to supper into the Citty, he was efpayed by hym, that had in company attendaunt vpon hym fyue and twenty men of Armes, which waited for Ardizzino, in a Lane on the left hand of the Streate called Meraegli, leading towards the church of Sainct Iames, through which the Countee must needes passe. Who as he was going very pleafantly dispoſed with his brother, and 5 or 6 of his men, was immediately affayled on euery fide, and not knowinge what it ment, would haue fled, but the Wayes, and Paſſages were ftopped rounde aboute: to defende himselfe it awayled not hauing but their fingle Swords, and amidst the troupe of fuch a bande that were throughly armed, which in a moment had murdeſed, and cut in peeces all that company. And although it was late, yet the Countie Ardizzino many times named Dom Pietro, which caufed hym to be taken, and imprifoned by the Duke of Bourbon, that was fled out of Fraunce, and then was Lieuenaunt for the Emperour Charles the fifth in Milan. Whofoever was aftonned and amazd with that Imprifonment, it is to bee thoughte that the Scilician was not greatly at his eafe and quiet, who needed no torments to force him confeffe the fact, for of his owne accorde voluntarily he dyſlosed the fame, but he fayde he was prouoked thervnfo by the perfuasion of Bianca Maria telling the whole discoure as you haue heard before. She had already intelligence of this chaunce, and might haue fled and faued her felfe before the fact (by the confeffion of Dom Pietro) had ben discouered, and attended in some secrete place till that stormie
time had bene calmed and appeased. But God which is a right-full iudge woulde not suffer hir wickedneffe strech any further, sith she hauing found out furch a nimble and wilful executioner, the Countee of Gaiazzo could not long haue remained aliuie, who then in good time and happy hour was abfent out of the City. So foone as Dom Pietro had accused the Counteffe, the Lord of Bourbon fente her to pryfon, and being examined, confefed the whole matter, trufting that hir infinite numbre of Crownes woulde haue corrupted the Duke, or thofe that represented his perfon. But hir Crownes and Lyfe paffed all one way. For the day after hir imprifonment fhee was condemnpned to lofe hir heade: and in the meane time Dom Pietro was faued, by the diligence and fuite of the Captaynes, and was employed in other Warres, to whom the Duke gaue him, for that he was lothe to lofe fo notable a Souliour, the very right hand of his Brother the Countee of Colifano. The Counteffe hauing sentence pronounced vpon hir, but trufting for pardon, would not prepare hir felfe to dy, ne yet by any meanes craue forgiuenes of hir faults at the hands of God, vntil fhee was conueyed out of the Caftell, and ledde to the common place of execution, where a Scaffold was prepared for hir to play the laft Acte of thys Tragedy. Then the miserable Lady began to know hirfelfe, and to confefle hir faults before the people, deoutly praying God, not to haue regard to hir demerites, ne yet to determine his wrath agaynft hir, or enter with hir in iudgement, for fo mutch as if the fame were decreed accordinge to hir iinquity, no falueation was to be looked for. She befought the people to pray for hir, and the countee of Gaiazzo that was abfent, to pardon hir malice, and treason which fhee had deuifed agaynft him. Thus miserably and repentantly dyed the Counteffe, which in hir lyfe refufed not to imbrace and follow any wickednes, no mifchiefe fhee accompted euill done, fo the fame were implored for hir ple- 

ursion and pastime. A goodly example truely for the youth of our present time, sith the most part indifferently do launch into the gulfe of difordred lyfe, suffering themfelues to bee plunged in the puddles of their owne vayne conceiptes, without confideration of the mifchieues that may enflue. If the Lord of Cardonne had not bene beloued of his generall, into what calamity had he fallen for
yeldinge himselfe a pray to that blody Woman who had more regarde to the light, and wilfull fanfie of hir, whom he serued like a flaue, than to his duety and estimation? And truely all futch be voyde of their right wits, which thinke themselfes beloved of a Whoore. For their amity endureth no longer than they sucke from their purses and bodies any profit or pleasurable. And because almost everyday semblable examples be seen, I will leave of this discourse, to take me to a matter, not farre more pleasaunt than this, although founded vpon better grounde, and stablished upon loue, the first onfet of lawfull mariage, the successfull whereof chaunted to murderous ende, and yet the fame intended by neyther of the beloved: as you shall be judge by the continuance of reading of the history ensuing. Beare with me good Ladyes (for of you alone I crave this pardon) for introducing the Whoorifh lyfe of the Counteffe, and his blody enterprife: because I know right wel, that recitall of murders, and blody facts wearie the minde of those that loue to lyue at ref, and with for fayre weather after the troublesome fторmes of raging Seas, no lef than the Pilote and wife Mariner, hauing long time endured and cut the perillous ftraites of the Ocean Sea. And albeit the corruption of our nature be fo great, as follies delighte vs more than earnest matters fraught wyth reafon and wisedome, yet I think not that our minde be fo peruerced and diuided from truth, but sometimes wee care and seeke to speake more grauely then the countrey Hynde, or more soberly than they, whose lyues do beare the marke of infamy, and be to every wight notorious for the onely name of their vocation. Suffifeth vs that an Hystory, be it neuer fo full of fporte and pleasure, do bring with it inftruction of our lyfe, and amendement of our maners. And wee ought not to be fo curious or scrupulous, to reie& merry and pleafant deuifes that be voide of harmeful talke, or wythout futch glee as may hynder the education of Youth procline, and ready to chosse that is corrupt, and naught. The very booke of holy scriptures doe describe vnto vs perfons that bee vicious, and fo detestable as nothing more, whose facts vnto the fimple may seeme vnfeemely, vpon the leaft recitall of the fame. And shall wee therefore reie& the readinge, and eschue thofe holy booke? God forbid, but with diligence to
beware, that we do not resemble those that be remembred there for example, forsomuch as speedely after sinne, ensueth grievous, and as fodayne punishment. For which cause I have selected these Historyes, of purpose to aduertife Youth, how they that follow the way of damnable iniquity, fayle not shortly after their great offences, and execution of their outrageous vices, to feele the iuft and mighty hand of God, who guerdoneth the good for their good works and deedes, and rewardeth the euil for their wickednes and mischiefe. Now turne we then to the History of two, the rarest Louers that euer were, the performance, and finifhinge whereof, had it bene so prosperous as the beginning, they had ioyed ioyfully the Fruiets of their intent, and two noble houses of one City reconciled to perpetuall freundship.
THE TWENTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

The goodly Hystory of the true, and constant Loue between Rhomeo and Iulietta, the one of whom died of Poyson, and the other of sorrow, and heuineffe: wherein be compryfed many adventures of Loue, and other deuifes touchinge the same.

I am sure that they which measure the Greatneffe of Goddes workes accordinge to the capacity of their Rude, and simple vnder-stondinge, wyll not lightly adhibite credite vnto thys Hystory, so wel for the variety of strange Accidents which be therein de-scribed, as for the nouelty of so rare, and perfect amity. But they that haue read Plinie, Valerius Maximus, Plutarche, and diuers other Writers, do finde, that in olde time a great number of Men and Women haue died, some of exceffiue ioy, some of ouermutch forrow, and some of other passions: and amongs the same, Loue is not the leaft, whych when it feazeth vppon any kynde and gentle subieft, and findeth no refislaunce to erue for a rampart to fty the violence of his course, by little and little vndermineth, melteth and confumeth the vertues of naturall powers in futch wyfe as the pyrite yealdinge to the burden, abandoneth the place of lyfe: which is verified by the pitifull, and infortunate death of two Louers that surrendred their lafl: Breath in one Toumbe at Verona a Citty of Italy, wherein repose yet to thys day (with great maruell) the Bones, and remnauntes of their late lousing bodies: an hystory no leffe wonderfull than true. If then particular affecion which of good right euer man ought to beare to the place where he was borne, doe not deecyue those that trauayle, I thincke they will confesse wyth me, that few Citties in Italy, can surpasse the fayd Citty of Verona, aswell for the Nauigable riuier called Adifia, which passeth almoast through the midst of the same, and thereby a great trasique into Almayne, as also for the prospect towards the Fertile Mountaynes, and pleafant valeyes which do enuiron the same, with a great number of very clere and lyuely fountaynes, that erue for the eafe and commodity of the place. Omittinge (bisides many other singularities) foure Bridges, and an
RHOMEO AND JULIETTA.

infinite number of other honourable Antiquities dayly apparaunt vnto those, that be to curious to viewe and looke vpon them. Which places I haue somewhat touched, bicause thys most true History which I purpose hereafter to recite, dependeth thereupon, the memory whereof to thys day is so wel known at Verona, as vnneths their blubbred Eyes be yet dry, that saw and beheld that lamentable fight. When the Senior Ecala was Lord of Verona, there were two families in the City, of farre greater fame than the rest, afwell for riches as Nobility: the one called the Montefches, and the other the Capellets: but lyke as moit commonly there is difcorde amonges thym which be of semblable degree in honour, even so there hapned a certayne enmity betweene them: and for so much as the beginning thereof was vnlawfull, and of ill foundation, so lykewyfe in procee of time it kindled to futch flame, as by diuers and sundry deuyfes praftifed on both sides, many loft their lyues. The Lord Bartholmew of Ecala, (of whom we haue already fpoken) being Lord of Verona, and seeing futch disorder in his common weale, ayyayed diuers and sundry waies to reconcile those two houfes, but all in vayne: for their hatred had taken futch roote, as the fame could not be moderated by any wyfe counsell or good advice: betweene whom no other thing could be accorded, but guing ouer Armour, and Weapon for the time, attending some other leaflon more convenient, and wyth better leyfure to appeafe the reft. In the time that those things were adoeing, one of the family of Montefches called Rhomeo, of the age of 20 or 21 yeares, the comliest and beft conditioned Gentleman that was amonges the Veronian youth, fell in loue with a yong Gentlewoman of Verona, and in few dayes was attached with hir Beauty, and good behauioyr, as he abandoned all other affaires and busines, to ferue and honour hir: and after many Letters, Ambaffades, and presents, he determined in the ende to speake vnto hir, and to disclose hys passions, which he did without any other praftife. But the which was vertuously brought vp, knew how to make him so good anfwer to cut of his amorous affections, as he had no luft after that time to returne any more, and shewed hir self so auftere, and sharpe of Speach, as she vouchfafed not with one looke to behold him. But how much the young Gentleman faw hir whifh,
and silent, the more he was inflamed: and after he had continued certayne months in that service wythout remedy of his grieue, he determined in the ende to depart Verona, for profe if by chaunge of the place he might alter his affection, saying to himselfe: “What do I meane to loue one that is so vnkinde, and thus doth disdayn me: I am all hir owne, and yet she flieth from me: I can no longer liue, except hir preence I doe enjoy: and she hath no contented mynde, but when sheis furtheff from me: I will then from henceforth Estrange my felfe from hir, for it may fo come to passe by not beholding hir, that thys fire in me which taketh increase and nourishment by hir fayre Eyes, by little and little may dy and quench.” But minding to put in profe what he thought, at one instant hee was reduced to the contrary, who not knowing whereupon to resolue, paflled dayes and nights in marueilous Playnts, and Lamentations: for Loue vexed him so neare, and had so well fixed the Gentlewoman’s Beauty within the Bowels of his heart, and mynde, as not able to reffit, hee faynted with the charge, and consumed by little and little as the Snow agaynst the Sunne: whereof hys parenttes, and kinred did maruayle greatly, bewaylinge hys misfortune, but aboue all other one of hys Companyons of riper Age, and Counfell than hee, began fharpely to rebuke him: for the loue that he bare him was fo great as hee felt hys Martirdome, and was pertaker of hys passion: which caufed him by ofte viewyng his friend’s difquietneffe in amorous panges, to say thus vuto him: “Rhomeo, I maruell mutch that thou fpendedst the best time of thine age, in purfute of a thing, from which thou feest thy felf defpifed and banifhed, wythout reffpecte either to thy prodigall dispenfe, to thine honor, to thy teares, or to thy myferable lyfe, which be able to moue the most constant to pity: wherefore I pray thee for the Loue of our auncient amity, and for thyne health fake, that thou wilt learn to be thine owne man, and not to alyenat thy lyberty to any fo ingrave as she is: for fo farre as I coniecature by things that are pafled betwene you, either she is in loue wyth some other, or else determineth newer to loue any. Thou arte yong, rich in goods and fortune, and more excellent in beauty than any Gentleman in thy Cyty: thou art well learned, and the onely fonne of the howfe wherof thou commeft: what gryef would
it bee to thy poore olde Father and other thy parentes, to see the so drowned in this dungeon of Vyce, speially at that age wherein thou oughtest rather to put them in some Hope of thy Vertue? begyn then from henceforth to acknowledge thyne error, wherein thou haft hitherto lyued, doe away that amorous vaile or couerture whych blyndeth thyne Eyes and letteth thee to folow the ryghte path, wherein thine auncestors haue walked: or else if thou do feele thy self so subiect to thyne owne wyll, yelde thy hearte to some other place, and chose some Mistrefle accordyng to thy worthynesse, and henceforth doe not low thy Paynes in a Soyle so harrayne whereof thou reapest no Fruyte: the tyme approcheth when al the Dames of the Cyty shal assemble, where thou mayst behold futch one as shal make thee forget thy former gryeves." Thys younge Gentleman attentyuely hearyng all the persuading reasones of hys fryend, began somewhat to moderate that heat and to acknowledge all the exhortatyons which hee had made to be directed to good purpose: and then determined to put them in proofe, and to be present indifferently at al the feasts and assemblies of the City, without bearing affection more to one Woman than to an other: and continued in thys manner of Lyfe, ii. or iii. monthes, thinking by that meanes to quench the sparks of auncient flames. It chaunced then within fewe dayes after, about the feast of Chrysfmasse, when feasts and bankets most commonly be vied, and maskes accordyng to the custome frequented, that Anthonie Capellet being the Chief of that Familye, and one of the principal Lords of the City too, made a banket, and for the better Solempnization thereof, inuited all the Noble men and dames, to which Feast resorted the moft part of the youth of Verona. The family of the Capellets (as we haue declared in the begininge of thys Hyftory) was at variance with the Montesches, which was the caufe that none of that family repaired to that Banket, but onelye the yong Gentleman Rhomeo, who came in a maske after supper with certaine other yong Gentlemen: and after they had remained a certayne space with their vifards on, at length they did put of the fame, and Rhomeo very shamefaft, withdrew himself into a Corner of the Hall: but by reaon of the light of the Torches which burned very bright, he was by and by
known and loked vpon of the whole Company, but specially of the Ladies, for besides his Native Beauty wherewith Nature had adorned him, they maruelled at his audacity how hee durft presume to enter so secreteely into the Houfe of that Famyllye which had little cause to do him any good. Notwithstanding, the Capelletts disfembling their mallice, either for the honor of the company, or else for respect of his Age, did not misufe him eyther in Worde or Deede: by meanes whereof wyth free liberty he behelde and viewed the Ladies at hys Pleasure, which hee dyd so well, and wyth grace so good, as there was none but did very well lyke the presence of his perfon: and after he had particularly given Judgement vpon the excellency of each one, according to his affection, hee fawe one Gentlewoman amonges the reste of fur-paffinge Beautye who (althoughe hee had never feene hir tofore) pleased him aboue the rest, and attributed vnto hir in heart the Chyefefte place for all perfection in Beautye: and feaflyng hir incessantlye with piteous lookes, the Loue whych hee bare to his first Gentlewoman, was overcomen with this newe fire, that toke futch norifhment and vigor in his hart, as he was not able neuer to quench the fame but by Death onely: as you may vnderfande by one of the strangeth discourses, that euer any mortal man deuised. The yong Rhomeo then felyng himfelfe thus toffed wyth thys newe Tempeft, could not tell what countenaunce to vfe, but was fo surprised and chaunged with thefe laft flames, as he had almoft forgotten himfelfe, in futch wife as he had not audacity to enquier what she was, and wholly bente himfelf to feeede hys Eyes with hir fighte, wherewith he moyftened the sweete amorous venome, which dyd fo empoyfon him, as hee ended hys Dayes with a kinde of moft cruell death. The Gentlewoman that dydde put Rhomeo to futch payne was called Julietta, and was the Daughter of Capellet, the mayfter of the houfe wher that assembly was, who as hir Eyes did rolle and wander too and fro, by chaunce espied Rhomeo, which vnto hir seemed to be the goodlieft perfonage that euer feene: and Loue (which lay in wayte neuer vntill that time,) afayling the tender heart of that yong Gentlewoman, touched hir so at the quicke, as for any resitance she could make, was not able to defende his forces, and then began to set at naught
the royalties of the feaste, and felt no pleasure in his heart, but when she had a glimpse by throwing or receiving some sight or looke of Rhomeo. And after they had contented eche others troubled heart with millions of amorous looks which oftentimes interchangeably encountered and met together, the burning Beames gaue sufficient testimonie of loue's priuy onsettes. Loue hauing made the heartes breach of those two louers, as they two fought means to speake together, Fortune offered them a very meete and apt occasion. A certayne Lord of that troupe and companye tooke Julietta by the Hande to Dauce, wherein she behaued his selfe so well, and wyth so excellent grace, as shee wanne that Daue the prize of Honour from all the Damofels of Verona. Rhomeo bauynge foreeene the place whereunto shee mynyed to retire, approched the fame, and so dyfereely vfed the matter, as shee founde the meanes at his returne to fit beseide hire: Julietta when the daunce was finisshed, returned to the very place where she was set before, and was placed betwene Rhomeo and an other gentleman called Mercutio, which was a courtlyke Gentleman, very well be loued of all men, and by reafoo of his pleaeaunt and curteous behauior was in euery company wel intertayned. Mercutio that was of audacity among Maydens, as a Lyon is among Lambes, feazed intentlyly vpon the hande of Julietta, whose hands wontedly were so cold both in Wynter and Sommer as the Mountayne yce, although the fire's heat did warm the fame. Rhomeo whych fat vpon the left side of Julietta, seynge that Mercutio held hire by the right hand, toke hire by the other that he myght not be deceit of his purpose, and strayning the fame a little, he felt himself so preft wyth that newe fauor, as he remayned mute, not able to aunfwer: but shee perceyuyng by his chaungue of color, that the fault proceded of the vehemensse of loue, desyryng to speake vnto hym, turned his selfe towards hym, and wyth tremblyng voyce ioyned with virginal shamefaftnesse, intermedled with a certayn baffulnesse, sayd to hym: "Blesed be the houre of your neare approche:" but mynding to procede in further talke, loue had so closed vp his mouth, as she was not able to end his Tale. Wherunto the yong Gentleman all rauished with ioy and contentation, fighing, asked hire what was the caufe of that ryght fortunate
bleffing: Iulietta, somewhat more emboldened with pytyful loke
and fmyling countenance, said vnto him: "Syr, do not maruell if I
do bleffe your comminge hither, becauf e ffr Mercutio a good tyme
wyth frofty hand hath wholly frofen mine, and you of your curtefy
haue warmed the fame agayne." Wherunto immediately Rhomeo
replied: "Madame, if the heauens hauce ben so favorable to
employe me to do you fome agreeable fervice, being repaired hither
by chance amongs other Gentlemen, I efteeme the fame well
beflowed, crauyng no greater benefite for fatisfa&ion of all my
contentations receiued in this World, than to ferue obey and honor
you fo long as my lyfe doth laft, as experience fhall yeld more
ample prove when it fhall pleafe you to geue further affaye:
moreouer, if you haue receiued any Heat by touche of my Hand,
you may be well assured that thofe flames be dead in refePT of
the lyuely Sparkes and violent fire which fortheth from you fayre
Eyes, which fire hath fo fiercely inflamed all the moft fenfible parts
of my body, as if I be not succored by the fauoure of your good
graces, I do attend the time to be confumed to duft." Scarfe had
he made an ende of thofe laft words but the daunce of the Torche
was at an end: whereby Iulietta, which wholly burnt in loue,
straightly clappyng her Hand with hys, had no leffure to make
other aunfwer, but softly thus to fay: "My deare frend, I know
not what other affured wyntneffe you defire of loue, but that I let
you vnderftand that you be no more your own, than I am yours,
beying ready and dyfposed to obey you so farre as honour fhall
permyt, befeeching you for the prefent tyme to content your
felfe wyth thys aunfwere, vntyll some other feason meeter to Com-
mvnicate more secretly of our affaires." Rhomeo feeing himfelfe
preffed to part of the Company, and for that hee knew not by
what meanes he myght fee hir agayne that was hys Life and Death,
demanded of one of his friends what fhee was, who made aunfwer
that fhe was the Daughter of Capellet, the Lord of the houfe, and
Mayfter of that daye's feaft (who wroth beyonde meafeure that
Fortune had fent him to fo daungerous a place, thought it impos-
fible to bring to end his enterprife begun.) Iulietta couetous on
the other fide, to know what yong Gentleman he was which had fo
curteoufly intertayned hir that Nyght, and of whome fhee felt
the new wound in hir heart, called an olde Gentlewoman of honor which had nursed hir and brought her vp, vnto whom she sayd leaning vpon hir shoulder: "Mother, what two young Gentlemen be they which first goe forth with the two Torches before them." Vnto whome the old Gentlewoman told the name of the houfes wherof they came. Then she asked hir againe, what young gentleman that was which holdeth the vifarde in his hand, wyth the damask cloke about hir. "It is" (quod she) "Romeo Montefche, the fonne of youre Father's capytall Enimye and deadly foe to all your kinne." But the Mayden at the onely Name of Montefche was altogyther amazed, despayrynge for euere to attayne to hirfand hir great affectyoned fryend Rhomeo, for the auncyent hatreds betweene those two Families. Neuertheless she knewe so well how to diffemble hir grief and discontented Minde, as the olde Gentlewoman perceiued nothing, who then began to persuade hir to retire into hir Chamber: whom she obeyed, and being in bed, thinking to take hir wonted rest, a great tempest of divers thoughtes began to enuiron and trouble hir Mynde, in futch wyfe as shee was not able to close hir Eyes, but turninge heere and there, fantasied divers things in hir thought, sometimes purposed to cut of the whole attempte of that amorous practife, sometimes to continue the fame. Thus was the poor pucell vexed with two contraries, the one comforted hir to pursue hir intent, the other proposed the immynente Perill wherevnto vndyfcutely shee headlong threwe hir self: and after she had wandred of long time in this amorous Labyrinth, she knew not whereupon to resolue, but wept incessantly, and accused hir selfe, sayinge: "Ah, Caitife and myferable Creature, from whence do rife these vnaccustomed Trauayles which I feele in Mynde, prouokynge mee to looche my refte: but infortunate wretch, what doe I know if that yong Gentleman doe loue mee as hie fayeth. It may be vnder the vaile of fugred wordes he goeth about to steale away mine honore, to be revenged of my Parentes whych haue offended his, and by that meanes to my euerlaftinge reproche to make me the fable of the Verona people." Afterwardes fodainly as shee condemned that which she suspecket in the beginning, sayd: "Is it poible that vnder futch beautye and rare comelynesse, dyfloyaltye and treafon may haue theyr
Syedge and Lodgynge? If it bee true that the Face is the faythfull Meffanger of the Mynde's Conceypte, I may bee affured that hee doeth loue mee: for I marked fo many chaunged Colours in his Face in time of his talke with me, and sawe hym fo tranported and besides himselfe, as I cannot wyse the any other more certayne lucke of Loue, wherein I wyll perfyft immutable to the lafte gespe of Lyfe, to the intente I may haue hym to bee my husband: for it maye so come to passe, as this newe aliaunee shall engender a perpetuall peace and Amity betweene hys Houfe and mine.” Arrestinge then vppon this determynation heyll, as the sawe Rhomeo passinge before hir Faather's Gate, the shewed hir selfe with merry countenance, and followed hym so with loke of Eye, vntill she had loft his fighnt. And continuing this manner of Lyfe for certaine Dayes, Rhomeo not able to content himself with lookes, daily did behold and marke the situation of the houfe, and one day amongs others hee espied Julietta at hir Chamber Window, bounding vpon a narrow Lane, ryght ouer against which Chamber he had a Gardein which was the caufe that Rhomeo fearing discouery of their loue, began the day time to passe no more before the Gate, but so foone as the Night with his browne Mantell had couered the Earth, hee walked alone vp and downe that little strete: and after he had bene there many times, missing the chiefest caufe of his comming, Julietta impaciont of hir euill, one night repaired to hir window, and perceived throughe the bryghtnesse of the Moone hir friend Rhomeo vnder hir window, no leffe attended for, than hir hymselfe was weightinge. Then she secretly with Teares in hir Eyes, and wyth voyce interrupted by sighes, sayd: “Signior Rhomeo, me thinke that you hazarde your perfon to must, and commyt the fame into great Daunger at thys time of the Nyght, to protrude your self to the Mercy of them which meane you little good. Who yf they had taken would haue cut you in pieces, and mine honor (which I efteme dearer than my lyfe,) hindred and suspeeted for euer.” “Madame” aunswered Rhomeo, “my Lyfe is in the Hand of God, who only can dispose the fame: howbeyt yf any Man had foughnte menes to beryeue mee of my Lyfe, I shoulde (in the pre-sence of you) haue made him knowne what mine ability had ben to defend the fame. Notwythfandyng Lyfe is not fo deare, and
of such estimation wyth me, but that I coulde vouchsafe to sacrifice the same for your sake: and although my myshappe had bene so greate, as to bee dyspatched in that Place, yet had I no caze to be forrye therefore, excepte it had bene by losynge the meanes, and way how to make you vnderstande the good wyll and duety which I beare you, defyynge not to conferue the same for anye commoditye that I hope to haue thereby, nor for anye other respecte, but onelye to Loue, Serue, and Honor you, so long as breath shal remaine in me.” So soone as he had made an end of his talke, loue and pitye began to seaze vpon the heart of Iulietta, and leaning hir head vpon hir hand, hauing hir face all besprent wyth teares, she saide vnto Rhomeo: “Syr Rhomeo, I pray you not to renue that grief agayne: for the onely Memory of such inconueneyence, maketh me to counterpoyse betwene death and Lyfe, my heart being so vnited with yours, as you cannot receyue the least Iniury in this world, wherein I shall not be so great a Partaker as your self: beseechyng you for conclusion, that if you defiere your owne health and mine, to declare vnto me in fewe Wordes what your determinacion is to attaine: for if you couet any other secrete thing at my Handes, more than myne Honoure can well allowe, you are maruelously deceiued: but if your defiere be godly, and that the frendship which you protest to beare mee, be founded vpon Vertue, and to bee concluded by Maryage, receiuing me for your wyfe and lawfull Spoufe, you shall have fuch part in me, as whereof without any regard to the obedience and reuerence that I owe to my Parentes, or to the auncient Enimity of oure Familys, I wyll make you the onely Lord and Mayfter [ouer me], and of all the thyngs that I possesse, being preft and ready in all poyntes to folow your commandement: but if your intent be otherwyse, and thinke to reape the Fruyt of my Virginity, vnder pretense of wanton Amity, you be greatly deceiued, and doe pray you to avoide and suffer me from henceforth to lyue and rest amongs myne equals.” Rhomeo whych looked for none other thyng, holding vp his Handes to the Heauens, wyth incredible ioy and contentation, aunfwered: “Madame, for so mutch as it hath pleased you to doe me that honour to accepte me for sucth a one, I accorde and consent to your request, and doe offer vnto you the best part
of my heart, which shall remayn with you for guage and sure testimony of my saying, vntill futch tyme as God shall giue me leve to make you the enterier owner and posseffor of the fame. And to the intent I may begyn myn enterpryfe, to morrow I will to the Frier Laurence for counell in the fame, who befoed that he is my ghoftly father is acuimomed to giue me instruction in al my other secret affaires, and fayle not (if you pleafe) to meete me agayn in this place at this very hour, to the intent I may giue you to underftand the deuice betwene him and me." Which she lyked very well, and ended their talke for that time. Rhomeo receyuing none other favour at hir hands for that night, but only Words. Thys Frier Laurence, of whom hereafter wee shall make more ample mention, was an auncient Doctor of Diuinity, of the order of the Fryers Minors, who befoed the happy profeffion which he had made in studie of holy writ, was very skilful in Philofophy, and a great fearcher of nature's Secrets, and exceeding famous in Magike knowledge, and other hidden and secret sciences, which nothing diminished his reputation, bicaufe hee did not abufe the fame. And this Frier through his vertue and piety, had fo well won the citizens hearts of Verona, as he was almoft the Confeffor to them all, and of all men generally reuerenced and beloued: and many tymes for his great prudence was called by the lorde of the Citty, to the hearing of their weightie caufes. And amonges other he was greatly favoured by the Lorde of Escale, that tyme the principall gouernor of Verona, and of all the Family of Montefches, and of the Capellets, and of many other. The young Rhomeo (as we haue already declared) from his tender age, bare a certayne particuler amity to Frier Laurence, and departed to him his secrets, by meanes whereof so foone as he was gone from Iulietta, went ftrayght to the Fryers Francifcians, where from point to point he discoursed the succeffe of his loue to that good father, and the conclusion of mariage betwene him and Iulietta, adding vpon the ende of talke, that hee woulde rather choofe shamefull death, than to fayle hir of his promife. To whom the good Frier after he had debated diuers matters, and propos'd al the inconueniences of that secret mariage, exhorted hym to more mature deliberation of the fame: notwithstanding, all the alleged perfu-
fions were not able to reuoke his promyfe. Wherefore the Frier vanquished with his stubborneffe, and also forecasting in his mynde that the mariage might be some meanes of reconciliacion of thofe two houses, in th'end agreed to his requete, intreating him, that he myght haue one dayes refpit for leyfure to excogitate what was beft to be done. But if Rhomeo for his part was carefull to prouide for his affayres, Iulietta lykewise did her indevour. For seeing that shee had none about her to whom she might discouer her paffions, shee deuised to impart the whole to hir Nurfe which lay in her Chambre, appoynted to wayte vppon hir, to whom she committed the intier secrets of the loue between Rhomeo and hir. And although the olde Woman in the begininge refifted Iulietta hir intent, yet in the ende she knew fo wel how to persuade and win hir, that she promised in all that she was able to do, to be at hir commande-ment. And then she sent hir with all diligence to speake to Rhomeo, and to know of him by what meanes they might be maried, and that he would do hir to vnderstand the determination betwene Fryer Laurence and him. Whom Rhomeo aunswered, how the first day wherein he had informed Fryer Laurence of the matter, the sayde Fryer deferred aunfwer vntil the next, which was the very fame, and that it was not past one houre fithens he returned with finall resolution, and that Fryer Laurence and he had deuised, that she the Saterday following, shoule crave leaue of hir mother to go to confession, and to repayre to the Church of Saynct Francis, where in a certayne Chappell secreatly they shoule be maried, praysing hir in any wyse not to fayle to be there. Which thinge she brought to passe with futch difcretion, as hir mother agreed to hir requete: and accompanied onely wyth hir gouerneffe, and a young mayden, she repayed thither at the determined day and tyme. And fo foone as she was entred the Church, she called for the good Doctor Fryer Laurence, vnto whom anfwer was made that he was in the thriving Chappell, and forthwith aduertifement was giuen him of hir comming. So foone as Fryer Laurence was certified of Iulietta, hee went into the body of the Church, and willed the olde Woman and yong mayden to go beare service, and that when hee had heard the confession of Iulietta, he would send for them agayn. Iulietta beinge entred a little Cell wyth Fryer Laurence,
he shut fast the door as he was wont to do, where Rhomeo and he had bin together shut fast in, the space of one whole hour before. Then Friar Laurence after that he had shrived them, sayd to Julietta: "Daughter, as Rhomeo here present hath certified me, you be agreed, and contented to take him to husband, and he likewise you for his Epoufe and Wyfe. Do you now still persist and continue in that mynde?" The Lovers aunswered that they desired none other thing. The Fryer seeing theyr conformed and agreeable wills, after he had discoursed somewhat vpon the commendation of mariage dignity, pronounced the usuall wordes of the Church, and the hauing receyued the Ring from Rhomeo, they rose vp before the Fryer, who sayd vnto them: "If you haue any other thing to conferre together, do the same wyth speede: for I purpose that Rhomeo shall goe from hence so secretly as he can."

Rhomeo sped to goe from Julietta sayde secretly vnto hir, that shee shoulde send vnto hym after diner the old Woman, and that he would cause to be made a corded Ladder the same euening, thereby to climbe vp to her Chamber window, where at more leasure they would deuise of their affaires. Things determined betwene them, either of them retyr'd to their house with incredible contention, attendinge the happy houre for consummation of their mariage. When Rhomeo was come home to his house, he declared wholly what had passed between him and Julietta, vnto a Servaunt of his called Pietro, whose fidelity he had so greatly tried, as he durst haue truſted him with his life, and commanded hym wyth expedition to provide a Ladder of Cordes wyth a strong Hooke of Iron fastned to both endes, which he easilie did, because they were mutch vfed in Italy. Julietta did not forget in the Euening about fiue of the Clocke, to send the olde Woman to Rhomeo, who hauing prepared all things necessary, cauſed the Ladder to be deliuered vnto her, and prayed hir to require Julietta the same euening not to fayle to bee at the accustomed place. But if this Iorney seemed long to these two passioned Lovers, let other Judge, that haue at other tymes aſsayed the lyke: for every minute of an houre seemed to them a Thouſande yeares, so that if they had power to commaund the Heauens (as Ioſua did the Sunne) the Earth had incontinently bene shadowed wyth darkeſt Cloudes. The
apoynsted houre come, Rhomeo put on the most fumptuous apparell hee had, and conducst by good fortune neere to the place where his heart tooke lyfe, was so fully determined of hys purpose, as easily hee clymed vp the Garden wall. Being arriued hard to the wyndow, he perceyued Iulietta, who had already so well faftned the Ladder to draw him vp, as without any daunger at all, he entred hir chambre, which was so clere as the day, by reafon of the Tapers of virgin Wax, which Iulietta had caufed to be lighted, that she might the better beholde hir Rhomeo. Iulietta for hir part, was but in hir night kercchief: who so soon as she perceyued him colled him about the Neck, and after shee had kifed and re-kifed hym a million of times, began to imbrace hym betwene hir armes, hauing no power to speake vnto him, but by Sighes onely, holding hir mouth close againft his, and being in this traunce beheld him with pitifull eye, which made him to live and die together. And afterwards somewhat come to hir selfe, the sayd with sighes deeply fetched from the bottom of hir heart: "Ah Rhomeo, the examler of al vertue and gentlenes, moft hartely welcome to this place, wherein for your lacke, and absence, and for feare of your perfon, I hauie gushed forth so many Teares as the spring is almoft dry: but now that I hold you betwen my armes, let death and fortune doe what they lift. For I count my selfe more than satisfied of all my sorrowes past, by the fauour alone of your prefence." Whom Rhomeo with weeping eye, giuing ouer filence aunswered: "Madame, for somuch as I neuer receyued so mutch of fortune's grace, as to make you feele by luyly experience what power you had ouer me, and the torment euery minute of the day sustained for your occasion, I do assure you the least grief that vexeth me for your absence, is a thousand times more paynefull than death, which long time or this had cut of the threede of my lyfe, if the hope of this happy Journey had not bene, which paying mee now the iuft Tribute of my weepings past, maketh me better content, and more glad, than if the whole Worlde were at my commaundement, befeeching you (without further memory of auncient griefe) to take advice in tyme to come how we may content our passionate hearts, and to fort our affayres with sutch Wyfedome and discretion, as our enimies without aduantage may
let vs continue the remnant of our dayes in rest and quiet." And as Iulietta was about to make answere, the Olde woman came in the meane time, and sayd vnto them: "He that wasteth time in talke, recouereth the same to late. But for so mutch as eyther of you hath endured futch mutual paynes, behold (quoth shee) a campe which I haue made ready:" (shewing them the Fielde bed which shee had prepared and furnisht,) whereunto they easilie agreed, and being then betwene the Sheets in priuy bed, after they had gladded and cherisht themselues with al kinde of delicate embracements which loue was able to deuise, Rhomeo vnlooofing the holy lines of virginity, tooke posseffion of the place, which was not yet besieged with futch joy and contention as they can judge which have affayed like delites. Their marriage thus consummate, Rhomeo perceyuing the morning make to hafty approach, tooke his leaue, making promise that he would not fayle whithin a day or two to refort agayne to the place by lyke meanes, and semblable time, vntil Fortune had prouided fure occasion vnfeardly to manyeffe their marriage to the whole Worlde. And thus a month or twayne, they continued their joyful minds to their incrediblle satisfaccion, vntil lady Fortune envious of their prosperity, turned hir Wheele to tumle them into such a bottomleffe pit, as they payed hir vfury for their pleasures paft, by a certaine moft cruell and pitifull death, as you shal vnderstand hereafter by the difcours that followeth. Now as we haue before declared, the Capellets and the Montefches were not so well reconciled by the Lord of Verona, but that there resed in them futch sparks of auncient displeasures, as either partes waited but for some light occaſion to draw togetheres, which they did in the Easter holy dayes, (as bloody men commonelie be moft willingly dispofed after a good time to commit some nefarious deede) beides the Gate of Bourfarie leading to the olde caftel of Verona, a troupe of Capellets rencountered with certayne of the Montesches, and without other woordes began to fett vpon them. And the Capellets had for Chiefe of their glorious enterprize one called Thibault, cofin Germayne to Iulietta, a yong man strongly made, and of good experience of armes, who exhorted his Companions with stout Stomakes to repreſe the boldnes of the Montesches, that ther
might from that time forth no memory of them be left at all. The rumoure of this fray was disperfed throughout al the corners of Verona, that succour might come from all partes of the Citty to depart the same. Whereof Rhomeo aduertized, who walked alonges the Citty with certayne of his Companions, hafted him speadily to the place where the slaughter of his Parents and alies were committed: and after he had well aduifed and beholden many wounded and hurt on both sides, he sayd to his Companions: "My frends let vs part them, for they be fo flehe one vpon an other, as will all be hewed to pieces before the game be done." And sayng fo, he thuft himselfe amids the troupe, and did no more but part the blowes on eyther side, crying vpon them aloud: "My frends, no more, it is time henceforth that our quarel ceafe. For besides the provocation of God's juft wrath, our two families be flaunderous to the whole World, and are the caufe that this common wealth doth grow vnto disorder." But they were fo egre and furious one agaynst the other, as they gaue no audience to Rhomeo his councel, and bent theymselfes too kyll, dysmembere and teare eche other in pieces. And the fyght was so cruell and outrageous betweene them as they which looked on, were amased to fee theym endure those blowes, for the grounde was all couered with armes, legges, thighes, and bloude, wherein no signe of cowardnes appeard, and mayntayned their feyth fo longe, that none was able to iudge who hadde the better, vntill that Thibault Cousin to Julietta inflamed with ire and rage, turned towards Rhomeo thinkinge with a pricke to runne him through. But he was so wel armed and defended with a priuye coat whiche he wore ordinarily for the doubt he had of the Capellets, as the pricke rebounded: vnto whom Rhomeo made answere: "Thibault thou maieft know by the pacience which I haue had vntill this present tyme, that I came not hether to fyght with thee or thynse, but to feke peace and atonemente betweene vs, and if thou thinkest that for defaulte of courage I haue fayled myne endeuer, thou doest greate wronge to my reputacion. And impute thyse my suffrancse to some other perticullar reспект, rather than to wante of blomacke. Wherfore abufe mee not but be content with this greate effusion of Bloude and murders already committed. And
prouoke mee not I beseche thee to passe the boundes of my good will and mynde.” “Ah Traitor,” sayd Thibaulte, “thou thinkest to saue thy selfe by the plotte of thy pleauant tounge, but see that thou defende thy selfe, els presently I will make thee feelle that thy tounge shal not gard thy corps, nor yet be the Buckler to defende the same from present death.” And sayinge so, he gaue him a blow with fuch furye, as hadde not other warned the same hee had cutte of his heade from his shoulders, and the one was no readyer to lende, but the other incontinentlye was able to paye agayne, for hee being not onelye wroth with the blowe that hee had received, but offended with the injury which the other had done, began to pursue his enemy with fuche courage and viuacity, as at the third blowe with his swerd hee caufed him to fall backewarde starkke deade vppon the grounde with a pricke vehementlye thruste into his throate, whiche hee followed till hys Sworde appeared throughge the hynder parte of the same, by reason wherof the conflict ceased.

For besides that Thibault was the chiefe of his companye he was also borne of one of the Noblest houes within the Citty, which caufed the Poteftate to affemble his Souldiers with diligence for the apprehension and imprisonment of Rhmeo, who feyeng yl fortune at hande, in secrete wise conuayed him felle to Fryer Laurence at the Friers Francifcane. And the Fryer vnderstandinge of his fafte, keppe him in a certayne secrete place of his coente vntil fortune did otherwyse prouyde for his safe goinge abroade. The brute fpred throughout the citty, of this chauncye don vpnon the Lorde Thibault, the Capellets in mourning weedes caufed the deade bodye to be caried before the fygnory of Verona, so well to moue them to pytty, as to demaunde iustice for the murder: before whom came also the Montesches, declaryng the innocencye of Rhmeo, and the wilfull affault of the other. The counsell assembled and witnisses heard on both partes a straignt commaundemente was genen by the Lorde of the Citty to geene ouer theire weapons, and touchinge the offence of Rhmeo, because he hadde killed the other in his owne defence, he was banished Verona for euer. This common miffortune published throughout the Citty, was generally forowe and lamented. Som complayneth the death of the Lorde Thibault, fo well for his dexteritye in armes as for the
hope of his great good seruice in time to come, if hee hadde not bene prevented by futch cruel Death. Other hewailed (specially the Ladies and Gentlewomen) the ouerthrow of yong Rhomeo, who besides his beauty and good grace wherewith he was enriched, had a certayne naturall allurement, by vertue whereof he drew vnto him the hearts of eche man, like as the flory Adamante doth the cancred iron, in futch wife as the whole nation and people of Verona lamented his mischaunce: but above all infortunat e Julietta, who aduertifed both of the death of hir cozen Thibault, and of the banishment of hir husband, made the Ayre found with infinite number of mornefull playnts and miserable lamentations. Then feeling hirselfe to mutch outraged with extreeme passion, she went into hir chamber, and ouercome with sorrowre threwe hir selfe vpon hir bed, where she began to reinforce hir dolor after fio ftraunge fashion, as the most constant would have bene moued to pitty. Then like one out of hir wits, she gazed heere and there, and by fortune beholding the Window whereat Rhomeo was wont to enter into hir chamber, cried out: “Oh vnhappy Windowe, oh entry moift vnlucky, wherein were wouen the bitter toyle of my former mishaps, if by thy meanes I have receyued at other tymes some light pleasure or transitory contention, thou now makest me pay a tribute fo rigorous and paynefull, as my tender body not able any longer to support the same, shall henceforth open the Gate to that lyfe where the ghost discharged from this mortal burden, shal seke in some place els more afured rest. Ah Rhomeo, Rhomeo, when acquayntaunce first began betweene vs, and reclined myne eares vnto thy suborned promisses, confirmed with so many othes, I would neuer have beleued that in place of our continued amytty, and in appeasing of the hatred of our houses, thou wouldest haue fought occasion to breake the same by an acte fo shamefull, whereby thy same shal be spotted for euer, and I miserable wretch desolate of Spoufe and Companion. But if thou haddest beene so gready after the Cappelletts bloud, wherefore didst thou spare the deare bloud of mine owne heart when so many tymes, and in futch secret place the same was at the mercy of thy cruell handes? The victorie which thou shouldest haue gotten ouer me, had it not bene glorious inough for thine ambitious minde, but for more trium-
phant solemnity to bee crowned wyth the bloude of my dearest kinsman? Now get thee hence therefore into some other place to deceive some other, so unhappily as my selfe. Neuer come agayne in place where I am, for no excuse shall hereafter take holde to asswage mine offended minde: in the meane tyme I shall lament the rest of my heavy lyfe, with futch flore of teares, as my body dried vp from all humidity, shall shortly search reliefe in Earth.” And hauing made an ende of those hir wordes, hir heart was fo grievously strayned, as shee couldie neyther weepe nor speake, and stooke fo immoueable, as if she had bene in a traunce. Then being somewhat come agayne vnto hirselfe, with feeble voyce shee sayd: “Ah, murderous tongue of other men’s honor, how dareft thou fo infamously to speake of him whom his very enimies doe commend and prayse? How presumeth thou to impute the blame vpon Rooameo, whose vnguiltines and innocent deedes euery man alloweth? Where from henceforth shall be bys refuge, Sith she which ought to bee the onely Bulwarke, and assured rampire of his distreffe, doth purfe and dafame him? Receyue, receyue then Rooameo the fatisfaiction of mine ingratitude by the sacrifce which I shal make of my proper lyfe, and fo the faulte which I haue committed agaynte thy loyaltye, shal made open to the Worlde, thou being reuenged and my selfe punished.” And thinking to vse some further talke, all the powers of hir body fayled hir wyth signes of present death. But the good olde Woman whych could not imagine the caufe of Julietta hir longe abfence, doubted very mutch that she suffred some passioun, and fough her vp and downe in euery place wythin hir Father’s Pallice, vntill at length shee founde hir lyinge a long vpone hir Bed, all the outwarde parts of hir body fo colde as Marble. But the goode Old woman which thought hir to bee deade, began to cry like one out of hir Wittes, sayng: “Ah deare Daughter, and Nourfechyld, bowe mutch doeth thy death now griewe mee at the very heart?” And as she was feeling all the partes of hir body, shee perceyued some sparke of Lyfe to bee yet within the same, whych caufed hir to call hir many tymes by her name, til at length she brought her oute of her founde, then fayde vnto her: “Why Julietta, myne owne deare darelyng, what meane you by this tormoylinge of your selfe? I
cannot tel from whence this youre behauiour and that immoderate heauines doe procede, but wel I wot that within this houre I thought to haue accompanied you to the graue." "Alas good mother" (auanswerd woful Iulietta) "do you not most euidently perceiue and see what iust caufe I haue too sorrow and complayne, loofyng at one instante two persons of the world which wer vnto mee most deare?" "Methinke," aunswered the good woman, "that it is not seemely for a gentlewoman of your degree to fall into such extremetye: for in tyme of tribulation wyfedome shoule most preuaile. And if the lord Thibault be deade do you thinke to get him agayn by teares? What is he that doth not accuse his ouermutch presumptioun: woulde you that Rhomeo hadd done that wronge to him, and hys houre, to suffer himselfe outraged and affayled by one to whom in manhoode and prowesse he is not inferioure? Sufficeth you that Rhomeo is alyue, and his affayres in futche eftate whoe in tyme may be called home alyue from banifhmente, for he is a greate lorde, and as you know well allied and fauored of all men, wherefore arme your selfe from henceforth with pacynce: for albeit that Fortune doth efranuge him from you for a tyme, yet sure I am, that hereafter shee will refore him vnto you alyue wyth greater ioye and Contentatyon than before. And to the Ende that wee bee better asfured in what state he is, yf you wyll promyfe me to gyue ouer your heauynesse, I wyll to Daye knowe of Fryer Laurence whether he is gone." To which requesft Iulietta agreed, and then the good woman repayred to S. Frauncis, wher shee founde Fryer Laurence who tolde her that the fame nyghte Rhomeo would not fayle at hys accustomed houre to visite Iulietta, and there to do hir to vnderstande what he purposed to doe in tyme to come. This iorney then fared like the voyages of mariners, who after they haue ben toft by greate and troublous tempeft seeyng some Sunne beame pearce the heauens to lyghten the lande, affure themselues alyue, and thinkinge to haue anoyed shipwracke, and sodaynlye the seas begynne to swell, the waues do roare with futche vehemence and noyse, as if they were fallen alyue into greater danger than before. The aigned houre come, Rhomeo fayled not accordinge to hys promife to bee in his Garden, where he founde his furniture preft to mount
the Chamber of Julietta, who with displayed armes, began so strayghtly to imbrace hym, as it seemed that the soule would haue abandoned hir body. And they two more than a large quarter of an hour were in futch agony, as they were not able to pronounce one word, and wetting eeh others Face fast closed together, the teares trickeled downe in futch abundance as they seemed to be throughly bathed therein, which Rhomeo perceyuing, thinking to stay those immoderate teares, sayd vnto hir: "Myne owne dearest freend Julietta, I am not now determined to recite the particulars of the straung happes of frayle and infantaunte Fortune, who in a moment hoifteth a man vp to the hyghest degree of hir wheele, and by and by, in leffe space than in the twynkeling of an eye, the thoweth hym downe agayne fo lowe, as more miferie is prepared for him in one day, than favour in one hundred yeares: whych I now proue, and haue experience in my selfe, which haue bene nourished delicately amonges my frends, and maynteyned in futch prosperoues fstate, as you doe little know, (hoping for the full perfecion of my felicity) by meanes of our mariage to haue reconciled our Parents, and frends, and to conduct the residue of my lyfe, according to the scope and lot determined by Almighty God: and neuerthelesse all myne enterprifes be put backe, and my purpo- ses tourned cleane contrary, in futch wise as from henceforth I must wander lyke a vagabonde through diuers Prouinces, and fequestrate my selfe from my Frends, wythout affurued place of myne abode, whych I desire to let you weete, to the intent you may be exhorted in tyme to come, paciently to beare so well myne absence, as that whych it shal please God to appoint." But Julietta, al affrighted wyth teares and mortal agonies, would not suffer hym to pase any further, but interruptinge his purpose, sayd vnto hym: "Rhomeo, how canst thou be so harde hearted and voyde of all pity, to leve mee heere lone, besieged with so manye deadlye myeries? There is neyther houre nor Minute, wherein death doth not appeare a thousand tymes before mee, and yet my misfortune is futch, as I can not dye, and therefore doe manyestlye perceyue, that the same death preferueth my lyfe, of purpoze to delight in my gryes, and tryumpe ouer my euyls. And thou lyke the mynifter and tyrante of hir cruelt, doest make
no conscience (for ought that I can see) having achieued the
Summe of thy defyres and pleasures on me, to abandon and for-
fake me: whereby I well perceyue, that all the lawes of Amity
are deade and utterly extinguyshed, forfomutch as he in whom
I had greatest hope and confidence, and for whose fake I am be-
come an eneny to my self, doth diadyme and contemne me. No,
no Rhomeo, thou must fully refolue thy selfe vppon one of these
11. points, either to see me incontinently thrown down head-
long from this high Window after thee: or else to suffer me to
accompany thee into that Countrey or Place whither Fortune shall
guide thee: for my heart is so much transformed into thine, that
so foone as I shall vnderstande of thy departure, prestely my lyfe
will depart this wofull body: the continuance whereof I doe not
defire for any other purpose, but only to delight my selfe in thy
prefence, to bee pertaker of thy miffortunes: and therefore if euer
there lodged any pity in the heart of gentleman, I beseeche the
Rhoneo with al humility, that it may now finde place in thee, and
that thou wilt vouchsafe to receyue me for thy seruaunt, and the
faithful companion of thy mifhaps: and if thou thinke that thou canst
not conveniently receyue me in the estate and habite of a Wyfe, who
shall let me to chaunge myne apparell? Shall I be the first that have
vshed like shiftestoescape the tyrannya of parentes? Dofe thou doubt
that my seruice will not bee so good vnto thee as that of Petre thy
seruaunte? Wyll my loyaltye and fidelitie be lesse than his? My
beauty which at other tymes thou hast so greatly commended, it is
not efteemed of thee? my teares, my loue, and the aunciente pleasures
and delights that you have taken in mee shal they be in oblivyon?"
Rhomeo seing hir in these alterations, fearing that worfe inconue-
nience would chaunce, tooke hir agayne betweene hys armes, and
kissing her amorously, sayd: Julietta, the onely mistrefse of
my heart, I pray thee in the Name of God, and for the fervent
Loue whych thou bearest vnto me, to doe away those vayne cogita-
tions, excepte thou meane to seeke and hazard the destruction of
vs both: for if thou perfeuer in this purpose, there is no remedye
but wee muste both perifie: for so foone as thynce abscence shalbe
knowen, thy Father will make sutch earnest pursuite after vs, that
we cannot choose but be discried and taken, and in the ende cruelly
punished, I as a theefe and thealer of thee, and thou as a dyfobe-
dyent Daughter to thy Father: and so in stead of pleafaunt and
quiet Lyfe, our Dayes shalbe abridged by moft shamefull Death.
But if thou wylt recline thy selfe to reafon, (the ryght rule of
humane Lyfe,) and for the tyme abandon our mutuall delights, I
will take futch order in the time of my banifhment, as within three
or foure Months wythoute any delay, I shalbe reuoked home agayne:
but if it fall out otherwyfe (as I truft not,) howfoeuer it happen,
I wyll come agayne vnto thee, and with the helpe of my Fryendes
wyll fetch the from Verona by ftrong Hand, not in Counterfeit
Apparell as a ftraunger, but lyke my spoufe and perpetuall com-
panion: in the meane tyme quyet your felfe, and be sure that
nothing elfe but death shall deuide and put vs a funder." The
reasons of Rhomeo fo mutch preualied with Iulietta, as thee made
hym thys aunfwere: "My deare fryend, I wyll doe nothing con-
trary to your wyll and pleafure: and to what place fo ever you
reppare, my hearte shal bee your owne, in while forte as you haue
guen yours to be mine: in the tyme while I pray you not to
faile ofteentimes to aduerfifie me by Frier Laurence, in what fate
your affaires be, and fpecially of the place of your abode." Thus
thefe two pore lovers paffed the Night togither, vntil the day
began to appeare which did dyuyde them, to their extreme
frowe and gryefe. Rhomeo hauinge taken leaue of Iulietta, went
to S. Fraunces, and after he hadde aduertyfied Frier Laurence of
his affaires, departed from Verona in the habit of a Marchaunt
ftraunger, and vsed futch expedytion, as without hurt he arriued at
Mantuona, (accompanied onely wyth Petre his Seruaunt, whom
hee haftily fente backe agayne to Verona, to ferue his Father) whehe he tooke a houfe: and luying in honorable companye,
affayed certaynge Mothnes to put away the gryefe whych fo tor-
mented him. But duryng the tyme of his abfence, miferable
Iulietta could not fo cloke hir frowe, but that through the euyl
colour of hir face, hir inwarde paffion was difcryed: by reafon
whereof hir Mother, who heard hir ofteentimes fighing, and ince-
santly complaying, coulde not forbear to fay vnto hir:
"Daughter, if you continue long after thys fort, you wyll haften
the Death of your good Father and me, who loue you fo dearely as
our owne lyues: wherefore henceforth moderate your haudinesse, and endeavor your self to be mery: think no more vpon the Death of your cofin Thibault, whome (fith it pleased God to cal away) do you thinke to revoke wyth Teares, and so withstande his Almightye will?" But the pore Gentlewoman not able to dyssemble hir griefe, sayd vnsto hir: "Madame, long time it is fithens the laft Teares for Thibault were poured forth, and I beleue that the fountayne is so well foked and dried vp, as no more will fpyng in that place." The mother which could not tell to what effect those Woords were spoken held hir peace, for feare she shoulde trouble hir Daughter: and certayne Dayes after seeing hir to continue in haudinesse and continuall griefs, afflained by al meanes possible to know, aswell of hir, as of other the houfholde Seruantes, the occaſion of their sorrow, but al in vayne: wherwith the pore mother vexed beyonde meaure, purposed to let the Lord Antonio hir Husband to vnderstand the cafe of hir Daughter: and vppon a day seeing hir at convenien leifure, she sayd vnto hir: "My Lord, if you haue marked the countenaunce of our daughter, and hir kinde of behauior fithens the Death of the Lord Thibault hir Coſyn, you shall perceiue so strange mutation in hir, as it will make you to maruell, for she is not onely contented to forgoe meate, drinke and flepe, but she spendeth hir tyme in nothinge else then in Weeping and Lamentatyon, delighting to kepe hir self solitarye wythin hir Chamber, where she tormenteth hir self so outragiouſly as if we take not heede, hir Lyfe is to be doubted, and not able to knowe the Oryginal of hir Payne, the more difficulte shall be the remedye: for albeit that I haue sought meanes by all extremity, yet cannot I learne the caufe of hir sicknesse: and where I thought in the beginning, that it proceded vpon the Death of hir Coſin, now I doe manifeſtly perceiue the contrary, specially when she hir self did affure me that she had already wept and shed the laſt teares for him that she was mynded to doe: and vnſcertayne whereupon to resolute, I do thinke verily that she mourneth for some deſpite, to see the moſt part of theyr companions maried, and she yet vnſprouyded, perſuading with hir selfe (it may be) that wee hir Parents do not care for hir: wherefore deare Husband, I heartely beſeech you for our reft and hir quiet, that hereafter ye be carefull
to prouyde for hir some maryage worthy of our state." Whereunto the Lord Antonio, willingly agreed, sayyng vnto hir: "Wyfe, I haue many tymes thought vppon that whereof you speake, notwithstanding of yet she is not attayned to the age of xviii. yeares, I thought to prouide a hufband at leyfure: neuerthelesse things beinge come to these Termes, and knowing the Virgins chastity is a dangerous Treasures, I wyll be mindfull of the same to your contentation, and she matched in futch wyfe, as she shal thynke the tyme hitherto well delayed. In the meane while marke dylygently whyther she bee in loue wyth any, to the end that we haue not so greate regarde to goodes, or the Nobylty of the house wherein we meane to beflow hir, as to the Lyfe and Health of our Daughter who is to me so deare as I had rather die a Begger without Landes or goods, than to beflow hir vpon one which shal vse and intreat hir il." Certayne dayes after that the Lorde Antonio had bruted the maryage of his daughter, many Gentlemen were futers, so wel for the excellency of hir Beauty, as for her great Rycheffe and reuenue. But aboue all others the alyaunce of a young Earle named Paris, the Counte of Lodronne, lyked the Lord Antonio: vnto whom lyberally he gauie his consent, and told his Wyfe the party vppon whom he dyd mean to beflow his Daughter. The mother very ioyful that they had found so honest a Gentleman for their Daughter, caufed hir secretly to be called before hir, doyng hir to vnderstande what things had paft between hir father and the Counte Paris, discoursing vnto hir the beauty and good grace of the yong Counte, the vertues for which he was commended of al men, ioyning therevnto for conclusion the great richeffe and favour which he had in the goods of fortune, by means whereof she and hir Fryends should liue in eternal honor: but Iulietta which had rather to hauie ben torne in pieces than to agree to that maryage, anfwered hir mother with a more than accustomed stomnette: "Madame, I mutch maruell, and therewithal am aftronned that you being a Ladye discrete and honorable, wil be so liberal ouer your Daughter as to commit hir to the pleafure and wil of an other, before you do know how hir mind is bent: you may do as it pleafeth you, but of one thing I do wel affure you, that if you bring it to paffe, it shal be against my wil: and
touching the regard and estimation of Counte Paris, I shall first lose my Lyfe before he shall have power to touch any part of my body: which being done, it is you that shall be counted the murderer, by delivering me into the hands of him, whom I neither can, wil, or know whiche way to loue: wherefore I praye you to suffer me henceforth thus to lyue, wythout taking any further care of me, for so mutche as my cruel fortune hath otherwyse dispoſed of me." The dolorous Mother which knewe not what Judgement to fixe vpon hir daughter's aunſwere, lyke a woman confuſed and besides hir felſe went to feeke the Lord Antonio, vnto whom without conceyling any part of hir Daughter's aunſwer, she dyd him vnderſtand the whole. The good olde man offended beyond meaſure, commaundéd her incontinently by Force to be brought before him, if of hir own good will she would not come: so soone as she came before hir Father, hir eyes full of teares, fel down at his fetes, which she bathed with the luke warme drops that distilled from hir Eyes in great abundance, and thankyng to open hir mouth to crye him mercy, the fobbes and fighes many tymes flopt hir speach, that shee remained dumbe not able to frame a Woorde. But the olde man nothing moued with his Daughter's Teares, sayd vnto hir in great rage: "Come hither thou vnkynd and dysobedient Daughter, haft thou forgotten how many tymes thou haft hearde spoken at the Table, of the puiffance and autho- rity our aunſcente Romane Fathers had over their children? vnto whom it was not onelye lawfull to fell, guage, and other- wyse dispoſe them (in theyr neceffity) at theiſe their pleaſure, but also which is more, they had ablolute power over theiſe their Death and Lyfe? With what yrons, with what torments, with what racks would thoſe good Fathers chaften and corree thee if they were a liue againe, to see that ingratitude, misbehavior and dysobedience which thou vſeft towards thy Father, who with many prayers and re- queſtes hath prooued one of the greatest Lords of this prouince to be thy husband, a Gentleman of beſt renoume, and indued with all kynde of Vertues, of whom thou and I be vnworthy, both for the notable maſſe of goods and substance wherewith he is enriched, as also for the Honoure and generofitie of the house whereof hee is descended, and yet thou playeft the parte of an obstinate and
RHOMEO AND JULIETTA.

rebellious Chyld agaynst thy Father's will. I take the omnipotence of that Almightye God to witnesse, which hath vouchfaded to bryng the forth into this world, that if vpon Tuesday nexte thou failest to prepare thy selfe to be at my Castell of Villafranco, where the Counte Paris purpofeth to meeve vs, and there giue thy consent to that whych thy Mother and I haue agreed vpon, I will not onely deprive thee of my worldly goodes, but alfo will make the efpouse and marie a pryfon fo straight and sharpe, as a thousande times thou shalt curfe the Day and tyme wherein thou waft borne: wherfore from hencforth take aduifement what thou doeft, for excepte the promife be kept which I haue made to the counte Paris, I will make the feele how greate the inft choler of an offended Father is againft a Chylde vakynde." And without stayying for other anfwre of his Daughter, the olde man departed the Chamber, and lefte hir vpon hir knees. Julieta knowing the fury of hir Father, fearing to incurre his indignation, or to prouke his further wrath, retired for the day into hir Chamber, and continued that whole Nyght more in weeping then lepyng. And the next Morning fayning to goe heare seruice, she went forth with the woman of hir Chamber to the Fryers, where she caused father Laurence to be called vnto hir, and prayed him to heare hir confeffion: and when she was vpon hir knees before hym, shee began hir Confeffion wyth Teares, tellinge him the greate mischyeue that was prepared for hir, by the maryage accorded betweene hir Father and the Counte Paris: and for conclusion sayd vnto hym: "Sir, for fo mutch as you know that I cannot by God's law bee maried twice, and that I haue but one God, one husband and one faith, I am determined when I am from hence, with these two hands which you fee ioyned before you, this Day to ende my forowful lyfe, that my soule may beare wythynesse in the Heauens, and my bloude vpon the Earth of my faith and loyalty preferued." Then hauyng ended hir talke, shee looked about hir, and seemed by hir wylde countenaunce, as though she had deuised some sinister purpose: wherfore Frier Laurence, astonned beyonde measure, fearyng leaft she would haue executed that which she was determyned, sayd vnto hir: "Mistrefse Julieta, I pray you in the name of God by little and little to moderate youre con-
ceiued griece, and to content your self whilst you bee here, vntill I haue promise what is best for you to doe, for before you part from hence, I will give you fuch consolation and remedy for your afflications, as you shall remaine satysfied and contented.” And resolued vpon thy good minde, he speedily wente out of the Churche vnto his chamber, where he began to consider of many things, his conscience beyng moued to hinder the marriage betwene the Counte Paris and hir, knowing by his meanes he had espoused an other, and callynge to remembrace what a dawning enterprize he had begonne by committynge hymself to the mercy of a fymple damofell, and that if shee fayled to bee wyse and secrete, all theyr doyngs should be differed, he defamed, and Rhomeo hir spoufe punished. Hee then after he had well debated vpon infinite number of deuises, was in the end overcomme with pity, and determined rather to hazarde his honour, than to suffer the Adultery of the Counte Paris with Iulietta: and being determined herevpon, opened his clofet, and takynge a vyall in his Hande, retourned agayne to Iulietta, whom he found lyke one that was in a Traunce, wayghtinge for newes, eyther of Lyfe or Death: of whome the good olde Father demandynge vpon what Daye hir maryage was appoynted. “The firste daye of that appoyntment (quod shee) is vpon Wednesdays, whych is the Daye ordeyned for my Confecte of Maryage accorded betwene my father and Counte Paris, but the Nuptiall solemnitye is not before the x. day of September.” “Wel then” (quod the religious father) “be of good cheere daughter, for our Lord God hathe opened a way vnto me both to deliuer you and Rhomeo from the prepared thrallom. I haue knowne your husband from his cradle, and bee hath daily committed vnto me the greatest secretes of hiss Conscience, and I haue so dearely loued him agayne, as if hee had ben mine owne fonne: wherefore my heart can not abide that anye man should do him wrong in that specially wherein my Counfell may stande him in fede. And forfomutch as you are his wyfe, I ought lykewyse to loue you, and feke meanes to deliuer you from the martyrdom and Anguiish wherewith I see your heart besieged: vnderstande then (good Daughter) of a secrete which I purpose to manifest vnto you, and take heede abowe all
things that you declare it to no living creature, for therein containeth your life and Death. Ye be not ignorant by the common report of the Cityzens of this City, and by the same published of me, that I haue travailed through the all the Provinces of the habitable Earthe, whereby during the continuall tyme of xx. yeres, I haue foughte no rest for my wearied body, but rather haue many times protruded the same to the mercy of brute beasts in the Wylderness, and many times alfo to the mercileffe Waues of the Seas, and to the pity of common Pirates together with a thousand other Daungers and shipwracks upon Sea and Land. So it is good Daughter that all my wandring Voyages haue not bene altogether vnprofitable. For besides the incredible contentation received ordinarily in mind, I haue gathered some particular fruyct, whereof by the grace of God you shall shortly feele some experience. I haue proved the secrete properties of Stones, of Plants, Metals, and other things hydden within the Bowels of the Earth, wherewith I am able to helpe my felfe alainft the common Lawe of Men, when necessity doth ferue: speccially in thynges wherein I know mine eternal God to be leaft offended. For as thou knowest I beyng approched as it were, even to the Brymme of my Graue, and that the Tyme draweth neare for yeldynge of myne Accompte before the Audytore of all Audytors, I oughte therefore to haue some deepe knowledge and apprehenfion of God's judgement more than I had when the heat of inconsidered youth did boyle within my lusty body. Know you therefore good daughter, that with those graces, and favours which the heauens prodigally haue bestowed upon me, I haue learned and proved of long time the composition of a certayne Paaffe, which I make of diuers soporiferous simples, which beaten afterwards to Poudere, and dronke wyth a quantytie of Water, within a quarter of an houre after, bringeth the receiuer into such a sleepe, and burieth so deeply the senses and other sprites of life, that the cunningest Phisitian will judge the party dead: and besides that it hath a more marueillous effect, for the perfon which vfeth the fame feeleth no kinde of grieue, and according to the quantity of the dough, the pacient remayneth in a sweete sleepe, but when the operation is wrought and done, hee returneth into his first estate. Now then Iulietta receive myne
instructi{on, put of all Feminine affecti{on by taking vpon you a
manly stomacke for by the only courage of your minde consisteth
the hap or mishap of your affayres. Beholde here I geue you a
Vyale which you shall keepe as your owne proper heart, and the
night before your mariage, or in the morninge before day, you
shall fill the same vp with water, and drink so much as is contayned
therein. And then you shall feel a certayne kynde of pleasaunt
sleepe, which incrochinge by litle and litle all the partes of your
body, wil constrayne them in futch wyfe, as vnmoueable they shal
remayne: and by not doing their accustomed dueties, shall loose
their naturall feelings, and you abide in futch exta{e the spake
of 40 hours at the lea{t, without any beating of poule{ or other
perceptible motion, which shal so afforre them that come to see
you, as they will judge you to be deade, and according to the cus-
tome of our Citty, you shal be caried to the Churchyarde hard by
our Church, where you shalbe intoumbed in the common monument
of the Capellets your ance{tors, and in the meane tyme we will
send word to lord Rhomeo by a speciaal messanger of the effect
of our deuice, who now abideth at Mantua. And the night follow-
ing I am fure he will not fayle to be heere, then he and I
together will open the graue, and lift vp your body, and after the
operation of the Poudre is paft, hee shall conuey you secretely to
Mantua, vnown to all your Parents and frends. Afterwards
(it may be) Tyme, the mother of Truth, shall cause concord be-
twene the offended City of Verona, and Rhomeo. At which time
your common caufe may be made open to the general contenta-
cion of all your frends." The words of the good father ended, new
joy surprised the heart of Julietta, who was so attentiue to his
talke as she forget no one poyn{e of hir leffon. Then the syd
vnto him: "Father, doubt not at all that my heart shal fayle in
performance of your commandement: for were it the strongest
Poyfon, or mo{tt periferous Venome, rather would I thrust it into
my body, than to consent to fall in the hands of him, whom I
utterly mislike: with a right strong reason then may I fortifie my
selfe, and offer my body to any kinde of mortall daunger to approch
and draw neare to him, vpon whom wholly dependeth my Life and
all the solace I haue in this World." "Go your wayes then my
daughter” (quod the Frier) “the mighty hand of God keepe you, and hys surpassest power defende you, and confirme that will and good mynde of yours, for the accompliishment of this worke.” Julietta departed from Frier Laurence, and returned home to hir father’s Palace about 11. of the clock, where she found hir mother at the Gate attending for hir: And in good devotion demaunded if shee continued still in hir former follies? But Julietta with more glad-some cheere than she was wont to vfe, not suffering hir mother to aske agayne, sayd vnsto hir: “Madame I come from S. Francisc Church, where I have taried longer peraduenture than my duety requireth: how be it not without fruict and great rest to my afflicted conscience, by reason of the godly persuasions of our ghastly Father Frier Laurence, vnto whom I have made a large declaration of my life. And chiefly have communicated vnto him in confessions, that which hath past betwene my Lord my father and you, vpon the mariaige of Countee Paris and me. But the good man hath reconciled me by his holy words, and commendable exhortations, that where I had minde neuer to mary, now I am well disposed to obey your pleure and commandement. Wherefore, madame, I beseech you to recover the favor and good wyl of my father, aske pardon in my behalfe, and say vnsto hir (if it please you) that by obeying his Fatherly requet, I am ready to meete the Countee Paris at Villafranco, and there in your presence to accept him for my Lorde and husband: In assurance whereof, by your patience, I mean to repayre into my Clozet, to make chiose of my most preious Jewels, that I being richly adorned, and decked, may appeare before him more agreeable to his minde, and pleasure. The good mother rapt with exceeding great joy, was not able to aunswere a word, but rather made speede to seeke out hir husband the Lord Antonio, vnto whom she reported the good will of hir daughter, and how by meanes of Frier Laurence hir minde was chaunged. Whereof the good olde man maruellous joyfull, prayfed God in heart, sayeing: “Wife this is not the firste good tyme which we have receiued of that holy man, vnto whom euery Citizen of this Common wealth is dearely bounde. I would to God that I had redeemed 20 of his yeares with the third parte of my goods, so grievous is to me his extreme old age.”
The selfe fame houre the Lord Antonio went to seeke the Countee Paris, whom hee thought to perfwade to goe to Villafranco. But the countee told him agaynse, that the charge would be to great, and that better it were to referue that cost to the marriage day, for the better celebration of the fame. Notwithstanding if it were his pleasure, he would himselfe goe visite Iulietta: and so they went together. The Mother aduertised of his comming, caused her daughter to make her selfe ready, and to spare no costly jewels for adorning of her beauty agaynst the Countee's comming, which she bestowed so well for garnishing of her Personage, that before the Countee parted from the house, she had so stolne away his heart, as he liued not from that time forth, but vpon meditation of her beauty, and flacked no time for acceleration of the marriage day, ceasing not to be importunate vpon father and mother for th'ende and consummation thereof. And thus with joy inough passed forth this day and many others vntil the day before the marriage, against which time the mother of Iulietta did so well prouide, that there wanted nothing to set forth the magnificence and nobility of their house. Villafranco whereof we haue made mention, was a place of pleasure, where the Lord Antonio was wont many tymes to re-create himselfe a mile or two from Verona, there the dyneuer was prepared, for so much as the ordinary solemnity of necessitie must be done at Verona. Iulietta perceyuing his time to approache dyfляемbed the matter so well as shee coulde: and when tyme forced her to retire to hir Chamber, her Woman would have waited vpon hir, and hauing liyen in hir Chambre, as her custome was: but Iulietta sayd vnto hir: "Good and faithfull mother, you know that to morrow is my maryage Day, and for that I would spend the most parte of the Nyght in prayer, I pray you for this time to let me alone, and to morrow in the Mornynge about vi. of the clocke come to me agaynse to helpe make mee readie." The good olde woman willing to follow hir minde, suffred hir alone, and doubted nothyng of that which shee did meane to do. Iulietta beinge within hir Chambre hauing an eawer ful of Water standing vpon the Table filled the viole which the Frier gaue her: and after she had made the mixture, the set it by hir bed side, and went to Bed. And being layde, new thoughtes began to affaile hir, with a con-
cept of grievous Death, which brought her into such case as she could not tell what to do, but playning incessantly sayd: "Am not I the most vnhappy and desperat creature, that euer was borne of Woman? For mee there is nothyng left in this wretched worlde but mishap, miserie, and mortall woe, my distresse hath brought me to such extremity, as to refuse mine honor and confidence, I am forced to deuoure the drynke whereof I know not the vertue: but what know I (sayd she) whether the Operatyon of thys Pouder will be to foone or to late, or not correspondent to the due tyme, and that my fault being discoured, I shall remayne a Fable to the People? What know I moreouer, if the Serpents and other venomous and crauling Wormes, whych commonly frequent the Graues and pittes of the Earth wyll hurt me, thynkyng that I am deade. But howe shal I indure the fynche of so many carions and Bones of myne auncetors whych rest in the Graue, yf by fortune I do awake before Rhomeo and Fryer Laurence doe come to help mee?" And as shee was thus plunged in the deepe contemplatyon of thynge, she thought that the faw a certayn vision or fantasie of hir Cousin Thibault, in the very fame fort as shee sawe him wounded and imbrued wyth Bloud, and mufing how that she must be buried quick amongs so many dead Carcaes and deadly naked bones, hir tender and delycate body began to shake and tremble, and hir yellowe lockes to stare for feare, in such wyse as fryghtned with terroure, a cold sweate beganne to pierce hir heart and bedewe the refel of al hir membres, in such wise as she thought that an hundred thousand Deathes did flande about hir, haling hir on euery side, and plucking hir in pieces, and feelyng that hir forces diminyfied by lyttle and lyttle, fearing that though to great debility she was not able to do hir enterpryse, like a furious and iuenfate Woman, with out further care, gulped vp the Water wythin the Voyal, then crosing hir armes vpon hir stomacke, she loft at that instante all the powers of hir Body, refyng in a Traunce. And when the morning lyght began to thruht his head out of his Oryent, hir Chaumber Woman which had lockte hir in with the Key, did open the doore, and thynkyng to awake hir, called hir many tymes, and sayd vnto hir: "Miftrese, you sleepe to long, the Counte Paris will come to raiue you." The poore olde
Woman spake vnto the wall, and sange a song vnto the deafe. For if all the horrible and tempestuous foundes of the world had bene cannoned forth out of the greatest bombardes and founded through hir delycate Eares, hir spyrites of Lyfe were so fast bounde and stopt, as she by no meanes coulde awake, wherewith the pore olde Woman amazed, began to shake hir by the armes and Handes, whych she found so colde as marble stone. Then puttyng Hande vnto hir Mouthe, sodainely perceyued that she was dead, for thee perceyued no breath in hir. Wherefore lyke a Woman out of hir Wyttes, thee ranne to tell hir mother, who so madde as a Tigre, berefte of hir Faunes hied hir selfe into hir Daughter's Chaumber, and in that pitiful flate beholdynge hir Daughter, thinkyng hir to be deade, cried out: "Ah cruell Death, which haft ended all my ioye and Blyffe, vfe the laft soucre of thy wrathfull ire agaynst me, leeff by sufferyng mee to liue the rest of my woefull Dayes, my Torment doe increafe." Then she began to fetch such straying sfighes, as hir heart did feeme to cleaue in pieces. And as hir cries began to encreafe, behold the Father, the County Paris, and a great troupe of Gentlemen and Ladies, which were come to honour the feast, hearing no footer tell of that which chaunced, were stroke into such sorrowful dumpes as he which had beheld their Faces would easly haue judged that the same had ben a day of ire and pity, specially the Lord Antonio, whose heart was frappe with such surpaßing woe, as neither teare nor word could issue forth, and knowing not what to doe, straight way fent to seeke the moost expert Phisitians of the towne, who after they had inquired of the life past of Iulietta, deemed by common reporte, that melancoly was the cause of that todayne death, and then their forows began to renewe a fresh. And if euer day was Lamentable, Piteous, Unhappy, and Fatall, truly it was that wherein Iulietta hir death was published in Verona: for shee was so bewayled of great and finall, that by the common playnts, the Common wealth seemed to be in daunger, and not without cause: for besides hir naturall beauty (accompanied with many vertues wherewith nature had enriched hir) she was els so humble, wife, and debonnaire, as for that humility and curtefe she had stollen away the hearts of every wight, and there was none but did lament hir Misfortune. And whilest these thinges

VOL. III.
were in this lamented state, Frier Laurence with diligence dispatched a Frier of his Couent, named Frier Anfelme, whom he trusted as himselfe, and delivered him a Letter written with his owne hande, commanding him expressly not to give the same to any other but to Rhomeo, wherein was conteyned the chauncie which had passed betwene him and Iulietta, specially the vertue of the Poudre, and commanded him the nexte ensuinge Nighte to speede himselfe to Verona, for that the operation of the Poudre that time would take ende, and that he should carry wyth him backe agayne to Mantua his beloved Iulietta, in diffembled apparell, vntill Fortune had otherwise prouided for them. The Frier made such hast as (too late) hee arrived at Mantua, within a while after. And bicaufe the maner of Italy is, that the Frier trauayling abroade ought to take a companion of his couent to doe his affaires wythin the City, the Fryer went into his couent, and for that he was within, it was not lawfull for him to come outhe againe that Day, bicaufe that certaine dayes before, one releygious of that couent as it was sayd, dyd dye of the plague: wherefore the Magistrates appoynted for the health and viuation of the sick, commaunded the Warden of the Houfe that no Friers shoulde wander abrode the city, or talke with any Citizen, vntill they were licened by the officers in that behalfe appoynted, which was the caufe of the great mishap which you shal heare hereafter. The Friar being in this perplexitye, not able to goe forth, and not knowyng what was conteynd in the Letter, deferred his Journey for that Day. Whilste things were in thys plyght, preparation was made at Verona, to doe the obseuies of Iulietta. There is a custome also (which is common in Italy,) to laye all the best of one lignege and Famlye in one Tombe, wherupon Iulietta was intoumbed, in the ordinary Graue of the Capellettes, in a Churcheyarde, hard by the Churche of the Fryers, of where alfo the Lord Thibault was interred, whose Obseuies honorably done, every man returned: whereunto Pietro, the fruaunt of Rhomeo, gaue his affyftance: for as we haue before declared, his mayster fente hym backe agayne from Mantua to Verona, to do his father seruice, and to aduertife him of that which shoulde chauncie in his absence there: who seeyng the Body of Iulietta, inclosed in Tombe, thinkyng
with the reste that shee had bene dead in deed, incontinentely tooke
poste horse, and with dylygence rode to Mantua, where he founde
his Mayster in his wonded house, to whom he sayde, wyth hys
Eyes full of Teares: 

"Syr, there is chaunced vnto you so straunge
a matter as if so be you do not arm your selfe with Constancye, I
am afayed that I shall be the cruell minyster of your Death: be
it known vnto you sir, that yesterdye morning my mistresse Iu-
lietta left his Lyfe in thys Worlde to fecke rest in an other: and
wyth these Eyes I saw her buryed in the Churchyarde of S. Fraun-
cis."  At the founde of whych heauye meslage, Rhomeo begann
woefullye to Lamente, as though hys spyrites gryued wyth the
Tormente of his Paßion at that instant would haue abandoned his
Bodye. But stronge Loue which woulde not permytte him to
faynt vntyl the extremity, framed a thoughte in hys fantesie, that
if it were posyble for him to dye besides hir his Death shoulde be
more glorious, and shee (as he thought) better contented: by rea-
son whereof, after he had washd his face for feare to discouer
his forrowe, hee wente out of his Chamber, and commaunded hys
man to tarry behynd him, that he myght walke through out all
the Corners of the Citye, to finde propre remedye (if it were posy-
bles) for hys grye.  And amogst others, beholdynge an Apotica-
rye's shope of lyttle furnyture and lyffe store of Boxes and other
thinges requisite for that fcyence, thought that the verye pouerty
of the mayster Apothecarye would make hym wyllingly yeld to that
which he pretended to demaunde: and after he had taken hym
aside, secretyly sayde vnto hym: 

"Syr, if you be the Mayster of the Houfe, as I thynke you be, beholde here Fifty Ducates, whych I
gyue you to the intent you deluy me some strong and vyolente
Poyfon that within a quarter of an houre is able to procure Death
vnto hym that shall vse it."  The couetous Apothecarye entyfed by
gayne, agreed to his requete, and faynyng to gyue hym some
other medycine before the People's Face, he speedily made ready a
strong and cruell Poyfon, afterwa从s he fayd unto him softly:

"Syr, I gyue you more than is needefull, for the one halfe is able
to destroy the strongest manne of the world:" who after he hadde
receyued the poyfon, returnned home, where he commaunded his
man to departe with diligence to Verona, and that he shoulde make
prouision of candels, a tynder Boxe, and other Instruementes meete
for the opening of the graue of Iulietta, and that aboue all things
hee shoulde not fayle to attende his commynges besides the
Churchyarde of S. Frauncis, and vpon Payne of Life to keepe hys
intente in silence. Which Pietro obeied in order as hys maister
had requyred, and made therin futch expediyon, as he arrived in
good time to Verona, taking order for al things that wer com-
manded him. Rhomeo in the meane while being folcyeted
wyth mortall thoughtes caufen incke and paper to be broughte
vnto hym, and in few words put in wryting all the dicouerse of his
loue, the mariage of him and Iulietta, the meane obserued for con-
fummation of the same, the helpe that he had of Frier Laurence,
the buying of his Poyfon, and laft of all his death. Afterwarde
hauing finished his heauy tragedy, hee closed the letters, and
sealed the same with his seale, and directed the Superfcription
thereof to hys Father: and puttyng the letters into his pursle, he
mounted on horsebacke, and vfed futch dylygence, as he arrived
vpon darke Nyght at the Citye of Verona, before the gates were
shut, where he founde his seruaunte tarying for him with a Lan-
terne and instruementes as is before sayd, meete for the opening of
the graue, vnto whome hee saide: "Pietro, helpe mee to open this
Tombe, and so soone as it is open I commaunde thee vpon payne
of thy life, not to come neere mee, nor to stay me from the thing
I purpose to doe. Beholde, there is a letter which thou shalt pre-
fent to morrow in the morning to my Father at his vpryfing,
which peraduenture shall please him better than thou thinkest." Pi-
etro, not able to imagine what was his maister's intent, finde
somwhat aloofe to beholde his maister's gestes and Countenance.
And when they had opened the Vaulbe, Rhomeo descended downe
two steppes, holdyng the candel in his hand and began to behol
wyth pityfull Eye, the body of hir, which was the organ of his
Eyes, and kyft it tenderly, holdyng it harde betwen his armes,
and not able to fatifie him selue with hir sight, put hys fearfull
handes vpon the colde stomacke of Iulietta. And after he had
touched hir in many places, and not able to feele anye certayne
Judgemente of Lyfe, he drewe the Poyfon out of hys boxe, and
swallowyng downe a great quantyte of the same, cryed out:
"O Iulietta, of whome the Worlde was vnworthye, what Death is it poffyble my Hearte coulde choose oste more agreeable than that whych yt suffereth harde by thee? what Graue more Gloryous, than to bee buried in thy Toumbe? what more woorthy or excellent Epytaphe can bee vowed for Memorye, than the mutuall and pyttyfull Sacryfice of our lyues?" And thinkinge to renue his forrowe, his hearte began to frette through the vyolence of the Poyson, whiche by lyttle and lyttle affailed the same, and lookyng about hym, efpied the Bodye of the Lorde Thibault, lying nexte vnto Iulietta, whych as yet was not al together putri-fied, and speakyng to the bodye as though it hadde bene alyue, fayde: "In what place so euer thou arte (O Couyn Thibault) I moft heartely do crye the mercy for the offence whych I haue done by depryuing of thy Lyfe: and yf thy Ghoft doe wyfhe and crye out for Vengeaunce vppon mee, what greater or more cruell fatoryfication canste thou defyre to haue, or henceforth hope for, than to see hym whych murdered thee, to bee empyfoned with his owne handes, and buryed by thy fide?" Then endyng he fylke, felyng by lyttle and lyttle that his lyfe began to fayle, falling prostrate vppon his knees, wyth feeble voyce hee foftely fayd: "O my Lord God, which to redeeme me didef tifcend from the bofom of thy Father, and tookef humane fleshe in the Wombe of the Vyrgine, I acknowledge and confesse, that this body of myne is nothing else but Earth and Duft." Then feazed vppon wyth delerate forrow, he fell downe vppon the Body of Iulietta with futch vehemence, as the heart faint and attenuated with too great torments, not able to beare fo hard a vyolence, was abandoned of all his fenfe and Naturall powers, in futch sorte as the fiege of his foule fayled hym at that instant, and his members stretched forthe, remayned fylfe and colde. Fryer Laurence whych knew the certayne tyme of the pouder's operation, maruelled that he had no anfwer of the Letter which he fent to Rhomeo by his fellowe Fryer Anfelme, departed from S. Frauncis and with Inruments for the purpofe, determined to open the Graue to let in aire to Iulietta, whych was ready to wake: and approchying the place, he efpied a lyght within, which made hym afraide vntyll that Pietro whych was hard by, had certyfied hym
that Rhomeo was with in, and had not ceas'd there to Lamente and Complayne the space of halfe an Hour: and when they two were entred the Graue and finding Rhomeo without Lyfe, made futch forrowe as they can well conceyue whych Loue their deare Fryende wyth lyke perfection. And as they were making their complaints, Julietta rising out of hir traunce, and beholding light within the Toumbe, vncertayne wheather it were a dreame or fantastie that appeared before his eyes, comming agayne to hir selfe, knew Frier Laurence, vnto whom she said: "Father, I pray thee in the name of God to perfourme thy promife, for I am almoſt deade." And then frier Laurence concealing nothing from hir, (bycaufe he feared to be taken through his too long abode in that place) faythfully rehearsed vnto hir, how he had sent frier Anſelme to Rhomeo at Mantua, from whom as yet hee had receiued no annswer. Notwithstanding he found Rhomeo dead in the graue, whose body he poyncted vnto, lyinge hard by hir, praying hir fith it was fo, paciently to beare that fodayne misfortune, and that if it pleased hir, he would conuey hir into fome monaſtery of women where she might in time moderate hir forrow, and gue reſt vnto hir minde. Julietta had no sooner caſt eye vpon the deade corps of Rhomeo, but began to breake the fountayne pipes of gushing teares, which ran forth in futch abounding, as not able to support the furor of hir griefe, she breathed without ceasing vpon his mouth, and then throwen hir felfe vpon his body, and embracing it very hard, feemed that by force of fighes and fobs, she would have reuiued, and brought him againe to life, and after she had kis'd and rekiſsed hym a million of times, she cried out: "Ah the fweete reſte of my cares, and the onely port of all my pleafures and paſtimes, haﬅ thou fo fure a hearte to chooſe thy Churchyaerde in this place betwene the armes of thy perfect Louer, and to ende the courſe of thy life for my fake in the floure of thy Youth when lyfe to thee shouſd have bene moft deare and deſeatable? how had this tender body power to reſiſt the furious Coumbat of death, very death it felfe here preſent? how coulde thy tender and delicate youth willingly permit that thou shouſd approch into this filthy and infected place, where from henceforth thou shalt be the paſture of Worms vnworthy of
thee? Alas, alas, by what means shall I now renew my playnts, which time and long patience ought to have buried and clearly quenched? Ah I, miserable and Caitifce wretch, thinking to finde remedy for my griefs, haue sharpened the Knife that hath gien me this cruel blow, whereof I receive the cause of mortall wound. Ah, happy and fortunate graue which shalt serue in world to come for witniff of the most perfect aliaunce that euer was betweene two most infortunate lovers, receyue now the laft fobbing fighes, and intertayment of the most cruel of all the cruel fubiefts of ire and death."

And as she thought to continue hir complaynts, Pietro aduertifed Frier Laurence that he heard a noyfe besides the citadell, wherewyth being afraied, they spceedily departed, fearing to be taken: and then Julietta feeing hir felfe alone, and in full Liberty, tooke agayne Rhomeo betwene hir armes, killing him with futch afeception, as she seemed to be more attaynted with loue than death, and drawing out the Dagger which Rhomeo ware by his fide, she pricked hir felfe with many blowes against the heart, fayinge with feeble and pitifull voice: "Ah death the end of forrow, and beginning of felicity, thou art moft hartely welcome: feeare not at this time to fharpen thy dart: giue no longer delay of life, for feeare that my fprite trauayle not to finde Rhomeo's fhoft amongs fuch number of carion corpfes: and thou my deare Lord and loyall hufband Rhomeo, if there reft in thee any knowledge, receyue hir whom thou haft fo faythfully loued, the onely caufe of thy violent death, which frankly offrith vp hir foule that none but thou shalt ioy the loue whereof thou haft made fo lawfull conquest, and that our foules paffing from this light, may eternally lye together in the place of euerlafting ioy." And when she had ended those wordes shee yielded vp hir fhoft. While these things thus were done, the garde and watch of the Citty by chaunce passe by, and feeing light within the graue, fuspected straignt that there were some Necromancers which had opened the Toumbe to abuse the deade bodies for ayde of their arte: and defrous to knowe what it ment, went downe into the vaut, where they found Rhomeo and Julietta, with their armes imbracing eoch other's neck, as though there had bene some token of lyfe. And after they had well viewed them at leysure, they perceyued in what case they were:
and then all amazed they sought for the theeeues which (as they thought) had done the murther, and in the ende founde the good father Fryer Laurence, and Pietro the servaunte of deade Rhomeo (which had hid themselfes under a stall) whom they caryed to Pryfon, and aduerthyfed the Lord of Ecala, and the magistrates of Verona of that horrible murder, which by and by was published throughoute the City. Then flockd together al the Citizens, women and children leaung their houses, to loke vpon that pittyful fighte, and to the Ende that in presence of the whole Cytie, the murder should be knowne, the Magistrates ordayneed that the two deade Bodies shold he erected vpon a flage to the view and sight of the whole World, in futch forte and manner as they were found withyn the Graue, and that Pietro and frier Laurence shoulde publikely bee examyned, that afterwardes there myght be no murmure or other pretended cause of ignoraunce. And thys good olde Frier beyinge vpon the Scaffold, hauinge a whyte Bearde all wet and bathed with Teares, the Judges commanded him to declare vnto them who were the Authors of that Murder, fith at vntimely houre hee was apprehended with certayne Irons besides the Graue. Fryer Laurence, a rounde and franke Man of talke, nothyng moued with that acufation, anfwered them with floute and bolde voyce: "My maifters, there is none of you all (if you haue respect vnto my forepaffed Life, and to my aged Yeres, and therewithall haue confideration of this heauy speectacle, whereunto unhappy fortune hath the preffently brought me) but doeth greatly maruell of fo sodeine mutation and change vnlooked for fo mutch as these three score and Ten or twelve Yeares fithens I came into this Worlde, and began to proue the vanities thereof, I was neuer suspected, touched, or found guilty of any crime which was able to make me blufhe, or hide my face, although (before God) I doe confesse my selfe to be the greatest and moft abhomi-
nable finner of al the redeemed flocke of Chrift. So it is notwyth-
standing, that fith I am prefect and ready to ronder mine accomplte, and that Death, the Graue and wormes do dailye sumon this wretched corps of myne to apare before the Iuyftye seate of God, still wayghtyng and attending to be caried to my hoped graue, this is the houre I say, as you likewyse may thinke wherein I am
fallen to the greatest damage and preiudice of my Lyfe and honest porte, and that which hath ingendred thys synyster opynyon of mee, may peraduenture bee thefe greate Teares which in abundaunce tryckle downe my Face as though the holy scriptures do not witneffe, that Jesus Christ mowed with humayne pitty, and compas-sion, did wepe, and pour forth teares, and that many times teares be the faythfull messengers of a man's innocency. Or else the most likely euidence, and prefumption, is the suspected hour, which (as the magiftrate doth fay) doth make mee culpable of the murder, as though all houres were not indifferently made equall by God their Creator, who in his owne perfon declareth vnto vs that there be twelue houres in the Day, fhewing thereby that there is no exception of houres nor of minutes, but that one may doe eyther good or ill at all times indifferently, as the party is guided or for-faken by the fprit of God: touching the Irons which were founde about me, needefull it is not now to let you vnderstand for what vfe Iron was firit made, and that of it felfe is it not able to increase in man eyther good or euill, if not by the mischieuous minde of hym which doth abuse it. Thus mutch I haue thought good to tell you, to the intent that neyther teares nor Iron, ne yet suspected houre, are able to make me guilty of the murder, or make me otherwyfe than I am, but only the witneffe of mine owne confcience, which alone if I were guilty fhould be the accufer, the witneffe, and the hangman, whych, by reafon of mine age and the reputation I haue had amonges you, and the little time that I haue to live in this World shoulde more torment me within, than all the mortall paynes that could be deuifed: but (thankes be to myne eternall God) I feele no worme that gnaweth, nor any remorfe that pricketh me touching that fact, for which I fee you all troubled and amazed: and to fet your harts at ref, and to remove the doubts which hereafter may torment your confciences, I fware vnto you by all the heauenly parts wherein I hope to be, that forthwith I will disclofe from firit to laft the entire discours of this pitifull tragedy, which peraduenture fhall driue you into no leffe wondre and amaze, than those two poore passionate Louers were strong and pacient, to expone themselues to the mercy of death, for the fervent and indiffoluble loue betwene
Then the Fatherly Frier began to repeate the beginning of the loue betwene Iulietta, and Rhomeo, which by certayne space of time confirmed, was profecuted by wordes at the first, then by mutual promise of mariage, vnknown to the world. And as within few dayes after, the two Louers feelinge themselves sharpened and incited with stronger onset, repaired vnto him vnder colour of confeffion, protestinge by othe that they were both married, and that if he woulde not solemnize that mariage in the face of the Church, they shoulde be constrayned to offend God to liue in disordred lust: in consideracion whereof, and specially seeing their alliaunce to be good, and comfortable in dignity, richesse and Nobility on both sides, hoping by that meanes perchaunce to reconcile the Montefches, and Capellets, and that by doing such an acceptable worke to God, he gaue them the Churches blessing in a certayne Chappel of the friers church whereof the night following they did confummate the mariage fruiets in the Pallace of the Capellets. For testimonie of which copulation, the woman of Iuliettae's Chamber was able to depose: Adding moreouer, the murder of Thibault, which was Cousin to Iulietta: by reafon whereof the banifhment of Rhomeo did followe, and howe in the absence of the sayd Rhomeo, the mariage being kept secret betwene them, a new Matrimony was intreated wyth the Countee Paris, which misliked by Iulietta, she fell prostrate at his feete in a Chappell of S. Frauncis church, with full determination to haue killed hirself with hir owne hands, if he gaue hir not councell how she shoulde auoyde the mariage agreed betwene hir father and the Countee Paris. For conclusion, he sayd, that although he was resolued by reafon of his age, and neareneffe of death to abhorre all secrete Sciences, wherein in his younger yeares he had delight, notwithstanding, pressed with importunity, and moued with pitty, fearing leaft Iulietta shoulde do some cruelty agaynst hirselfe, he strayned his conscience, and chose rather with some little fault to grieue his minde, than to suffer the young gentelwoman to destroy hir body, and hazarde the daunger of hir soule: and therefore he opened some part of his auncient cunning, and gaue her a certayne Pouder to make hir sleepe, by meanes whereof she was thought to be deade. Then he
tolde them how he had sent Frier Anfelm to cary letters to Rhomeo of their enterprife, whereof hitherto he had no aunswere. Then briefly he concluded how he found Rhomeo dead within the graue, who as it is moft likely did impoyfon himfelfe, or was otherwife fmothered or suffocated with forow by findinge Iulietta in that state, thinking shee had bene dead. Then he tolde them how Iulietta did kill himfelfe with the Dagger of Rhomeo to beare him company after his death, and how it was impoffible for them to faue hir for the noyfe of the watch which forced them to flee from thence. And for more ample approbation of his faying, he humbly befought the Lord of Verona and the Magiftrats to fend to Mantua for Frier Anfelm to know the caufe of his flack returne, that the content of the letter fend to Rhomeo might be feene: to examine the Woman of the Chamber of Iulietta, and Pietro the feruaunt of Rhomeo, who not attending for further requeft, fayd vnto them: "My Lordes, when Rhomeo entred the graue, he gaue me this Pacquet, written as I suppose with his owne hand, who gaue me exprefse commaundement to deliuer it to his father." The pacquet opened, they found the whole effe£t of this fторy, specially the Apothecarie's name, which fold him the Poyfon, the price, and the caufe wherefore he vfed it, and all appeared to be fo cleare and euident, as there refted nothing for further verifi- cation of the fame, but their prefence at the doing of the particulars thereof, for the whole was fo well declared in order, as they were out of doubt that the fame was true: and then the Lord Bartholomew of Eftoua, after he had debated with the Magiftrats of these euents, decreed that the Woman of Iulietta hir chamber fould bee banifhed, because she did conceale that priuy marriage from the Father of Rhomeo, which if it had beene knowne in tyme, had bred to the whole Citty an vnierfall benefit. Pietro becaufe he obeyed hys mayfier's commaundement, and kept close hys lawfull secretes, according to the well conditioned nature of a trufty feruaunt, was fet at liberty. The Poticary taken, rackt, and founde guilty, was hanged. The good olde man Frier Laurence, as well for refpe£t of his auncient fervice which he had done to the common wealth of Verona, as also for his vertuous life (for the which hee was specially recommended) was let goe in peace, with-
out any note of Infamy. Notwithstanding by reason of his age, he voluntarily gave over the World, and closed himself in an Hermitage, two miles from Verona, where he lived 5 or 6 years, and spent his time in continuall prayer, until he was called out of this transitory world, into the blissful state of everlasting joy. And for the compassion of so strange an infortune, the Montesches, and Capellets poured forth such abundance of tears, as with the fame they did evacuate their ancient grudge and choler, whereby they were then reconciled: and they which could not bee brought to attonement by any wisedome or humayne councell, were in the ende vanquished and made frends by pity: and to immortalizate the memory of so intier and perfect amity, the Lord of Verona ordain'd, that the two bodies of those miraculous Louers should be fast interombed in the grave where they ended their lives, in which place was erected a high marble Piller, honoured with an infinite number of excellent Epitaphes, which to this day be apparaunt, with such noble memory, as amongst all the rare excellencies, wherewith that City is furnished, there is none more Famous than the Monument of Rhomeo and Iulietta.
THE TWENTY-SIXTH NOUELL.

Two gentlemen of Venice were honourably decreed of their Wyues, whose notable practises, and secret conference for attievinge their desire, occasioned divers accidentes, and ingendered double benefit: wherein also is recited an eloquent oration, made by one of them, pronounced before the Duke and state of that Citie: with other chance and acts concerning the same.

Here have I thought good to summon 2 Gentlewomen of Venice to appeare in Place, and to mount on Stage amongs other Italian Dames to shew cause of their bolde incountrey agaynst the Folly of their two Husbands, that vncharitably without respect of neyghbourhoode, went about to affayle the honesty of eyther's wyfe, and weening they had enjoyed others felicity, by the womens prudence, foresight and ware gouernment, were both deceiued, and yet attayned the chiefest benefit that mariage state doth looke for: so that if search bee made amonges antiquities, it is to be doubted wheather greater chastity, and better pollicy could be founde for accomplifhment of an intended purpofe. Many deeds haue ben done by women for saueguard of their Husbandes lyues, as that of the Minyse, a sort of Women whose husbandes were imprisoned at Lacedæmon, and for treason condemned, who to saue their lyues, entred into prifon the night before they should dy, and by exchange of apparell, deliuered them, and remayned there to suffer for them. Of Hipficratea also the Queene and Wyfe of Mithridates king of Pontus, who spared not hir Noble beauty and golden lockes to manure hir selfe in the use of armes, to kepe hir husband company in perils and daungers: and being overcome by Pompeius, and flying away, never left him vnaccompanied, ne forfooke fuch trauayle as he himfelse suftayned. The like also of Æmilia, Turia, Sulpitia, Portia, and other Romane Dames. But that fuch haue preuented their husband's folly, seldome we reade, sauing of Queene Marie, the Wife of Don Pietro king of Arragon, who marking the infolency of hir husband, and fory for his disordred life, honest iealousie opening hir continent...
eyes, forced hir to seeke meanes to remoue his wanton acts, or at leastwifhe by pollicy and wife foreight to make him husbande and culture his own foyle, that for want of seafonable tillage was barren and voyde of fruicte. Wherefore consulting with the Lord chamberlayne, who of custome brought whom the king liked best, was in place of his woman bestowed in his Bed, and of her that night begat the yong Prynce Giacomo, that afterwardes proved a valiaunte, and wife king. These passing good pollicies of women many times abolisht the frantik lecherous fits of husbands gieuen to superfluous lusts, when first by their chaste behaviour and womanly patience they contayne that which they be loth to fee or heare of, and then demanding counsell of sobriety and wisedome, excogitate sleights to shun folly, and expell discurtesie, by husbande's carelesse vfe. Such practifes, and denises, these two Gentlewomen whom I now bringe forth, disclose in this discoure ensuing. In the City of Venice, (which for riches and fayre Women excelleth all other within the region of Italy) in the time that Francesco Foscari, a very wyfe Prynce, did gouerne the state, there were two young Gentlemen, the one called Girolamo Bembo, and the other Anfelmo Barbadico, betwene whom as many times chaunceth amongs other, grew fuch great hatred and cruel hostili- lity, as ech of them by secret and all possibole meanes denised to doe other shame and displeasure, which kindled to fuch outrage, as it was thought impossible to be pacified. It chaunced that at one tyme both of them did mary two noble young Gentlewomen, excellent and fayre, both brought vp vnder one Nurfe, and loued ech other lyke two Sifters, and as though they had been both borne of one body. The Wyfe of Anfelmo, called Ifotta, was the Daughter of Meffier Marco Gradenigo, a man of great estimation in that City, one of the procurators of San Marco, whereof there were not fo great number in those dayes as there bee now, because the Wyfes men, and best Approved of Lyfe were choosen to that great and Noble dignity, none allotted thereunto by Bribes or Ambition. The Wyfe of Girolamo Bembo was called Lucia, the Daughter of Meffier Gian Francesco Valerio Caualiere, a Gentleman very well learned, and many times sent by the State, Ambaffador into diuers Countreys, and after he had bene Orator wyth the Pope, for his
wifedome in the execution of the fame was in great estimation wyth the whole Citty. The two Gentlewomen after they were maried, and heard of the hatred betwene their Husbandes, were very sorrowfull and penfue, because they thought the Frendship and Loue betwene them twayne, continued from their tender yeares, could not bee, but with greate difficulty kept, or elle altogether disfolued and broken. Notwithstanding beynge discrete and wyse, for auoyding occasio of eche Husbande's offence, determined to cease their accustomed conuerfation and louinge Familiariy, and not to frequent others company, but at Places and Tymes conuenient. To whom Fortune was so fauourable, as not onely theyr Houfes were neere together but alfo adjoyninge, in the Backfides whereof theyr Gardeyns alfo Confined, seperated onely wyth a lyttle Hedge, that euery day they myght fee one another, and many tymes talke together: moreover the Servauntes, and People of eyther houfes were freendly, and familiar, whych didde greately content the two Louynge Gentlewomen, bicaufe they alfo in the abfence of theyr Husbandes, myghte at pleafure in their Gardens difport themfelues. And continuing this order the space of three yeares neyther of them within that terme were with chylde. In which fpace Anfelmo many times viewing and cafting his eyes vpon Madonna Lucia, fell earneftly in loue with hir, and was not that day well at eafe, wherein he had not beholden hir excellent beauty. She that was of Spirite, and Wit subtile, marked the lookes and maner of Anfelmo, who neyther for loue, ne other caufe did render like lookes on him, but to fee to what ende his louing cheere and Countenaunce would tend. Notwithstanding she seemed rather defirous to behold him, than elfwhere to imploye hir lookes. On the other fide the good behauior, the wife order and pleafaunt beauty of Madonna Ifotta was fo excellent and plaufible in the fght of mayfter Girolamo, as no Louer in the World was better pleased with his beloved than he with hir: who not able to lye wythout the sweete fght of Ifotta (that was a crafty and wily Wench) was by hir quickly perceiued. She being right honeft and wife, and louing hir husband very dearely, did beare that countenaunce to Girolamo, that she generally did to any of the Citty, or to other ftraunger that the neuer faw before. But hir
husband more and more inflamed, having loft the liberty of himselfe, wounded and pierced with the amorous arowes of Loue, could not convert his minde to any other but to mistrefse Lucia. These two women wonted to heare service every day ordinarily at the church of Sanfantino, bicause they lay long a bed in the mornings, and commonly service in that church was layd somewhat late: their pewes also somwhat distant one from an other. Whether their 2 amorous husbands continually vfed to follow them a loofe of, and to place themselues where eyther of them might beft view his beloved: by which custome they seemed to the common people to be iealous ouer their Wyues. But they prosecuted the matter in futch wyle, as eyther of them without shipping, fought to send other into Cornouale. It came to passe then, that these 2 beloved gentlewomen one knowing nothing of another's intent, determined to consider better of this loue, because the great good will long time borne, shoulde not be interrupted. Vpon a certayne day when their husbands were abrode, refting together to talk at their Garden hedge according to theyr wonted manner, they began to be pleasaunte and merry: and after louynge salutations, Mistrefse Lucia spake these Woordes vnto hir Companyon: "Ifotta my deare beloved sister, I have a tale to tell you of your husband, that perchaunce will seeme straunger than anye newes that euer you heard." "And I" (anwered mistrefse Ifotta) "I have a story to tel you that wil make you no lesse to wonder than I at that which you have to say, and it may be will put you into some choler and chafe." "What is that?" quod the one and other. In the ende eyther of them told what practizes and loue their husbands went about. Whereat although they were in great rage for theyr husbands follye, yet for the time they laughed out the matter, and thought that they were sufficient (as in very deede they were, a thing not to be doubted) and able to satisfie their husbands hunger and therewithall began to blame them and to say that they deferred to learn to play of the Cornets, if they had no greater feare of God, and care of honestie then their husbands had. Then after mutch talke of this matter, concluded that they shoulde do wel to expect what their husbands would demaund. Having taken order as they thought meete, they agreed dailye to espaye what shoulde
chaunce, and purposed first with sweete and pleasing lookees to bayte and lure eche other feere, to put them in hope thereby that they shold satisfie their desires, which done for that tyme they departed. And when at the Church at Sanfantino or other place in Venice, they chanced to meete their louers, they shewed vnto them cheareful and mery Countenaunce: whych the Louers well notyng, were the gladdest Men of the Worlde: and seeing that it was impos-

sible in Speache to vter their Myndes, they purposed by Letters to signifie the same. And havynge found Purciuants to goe betwene parties (whereof this City was wont to be ful) either of them wrote an Amorous Letter, to his beloved, the content whereof was, that they were verye defyrous secretly to talke with them, thereby to expresse the burnyng afectyons that inwardly they bare them, whych without declaration and vttcrance by Mouthe in theyr owne presence, woulde breede them Torments more bytter than Deathe. And wythyn fewe Dayes after (no greate dyfference of Tyme betweene,) they wrote their Letters. But Girolamo Bembo hauing a pregnant Wit, who coulde well Endite both in profe, and Rime, wrote an excellent sonnet in the prayfe of his Darling in Italian Meeter, and wyth hys Letter fent the same vnto hir, the effect whereof doth follow.

A lively face and pearcing beauty bright
Hath linkt in loue my fely fences all:
A comely porte, a goodly shaped wight
Hath made me slide that neuer thought to fall:
Hir eyes, hir grace, hir deeds and maners milde,
So straines my heart that loue hath Wit begilde.

But not one dart of Cupide did me wounde,
A hundred shaftes lights all on me at ones:
As though dame kind some new deuise had founde,
To teare my flesh, and crafi a two my bones:
And yet I feele futch ioj in these my woes
That as I die my sprite to pleasure goes.

These new found fits futch change in me doe breede,
I hate the day and draw to darknesse, lo!
Yet by the Lampe of beauty doe I feede
In dimmest dayes and darkest nights alfo,
Thus altring State and changing Diet still,
I seele and know the force of Venus will.

The best I finde, is that I doe confesse,
I love you Dame whose beauty doth excell:
But yet a toy doth breed me some distresse,
For that I dread you will not love me well,
Than love youe wot shall rest in me alone:
And fleshly bred, shall beare a heart of stone.

O goddesse mine, yet heare my voyce of ruth,
And pitie him that heart presents to thee:
And if thou want a witnessse for my truth
Let fighes and teares my judge and record be,
Vnto the ende a day may come in haste,
To make me thinke I spend no time in waste.

For nought preuayles in love to serve and sue
If full effect ioyne not with words at neede,
What is desir or any fansses new:
More than the winde? that spreades abroade in deed,
My words and works, shall both in one agree,
To pleasure hir, whose Seruaunt would I bee.

The subtil Dames receuieing those amorous letters and song,
disdanfully at the first seem'd to take them at the bringers hands,
as they had determined, yet afterwardes they shewed better countenaunce.
These letters were tossed from one to an other, whereat
they made great pastime, and thought that the same would come
to very good successe, eyther of them keepinge styll their Husbande's Letter, and agreed without injury done one to an other
trimly to deceyve their husbands. The maner how you shall
perceyue anone. They deuis'd to send word to their Louers, that
they were ready at all times to satiifie their futes, if the same might
be secreety done, and safely might make repayre vnto their houses,
when their Husbandes were absent, which in any wise they sayde,
must be done in the night, for feare leaft in the day tyme they were
discried. Agayne these prouident and subtill Women had taken
order wyth their Maydes, whom they made priuys to their praetyfe
that through their Gardens they should enter into other's houfe,
and bee shut in their Chambers without Lyght, there to tary for
their Husbands, and by any meanes not to bee feene or knowne.
This order prescribed and giuen, Mistrefte Lucia first did hir louver
to vnderstand, that the night infuing at foure of the Clock at
the Pofterne dore, which should be left open, he should come into
hir houfe, where hir Mayde should be ready to bring him vp to hir
Chaumbre, because hir husband Maifter Girolamo woulde that
Night imbarke himfelfe to goe to Padua. The like Mistrefte Isotta
did to Maifter Girolamo, appointing him at fwayne of the clock,
where hir fayd was a very conuenient tyme, bicaufe mayster An-
felmo that night would fup and lye with certayne of his Fryends
at Murano, a place befieldes Venice. Vpon these newes, the 2
Louers thought them felues the moft valiaunt and fortunate of the
World, no Enterprife now there was but seemed easie for them to
bring to paffe, yea if it were to expell the Saracens out of Hieru-
salem, or to deprifie the great Turke of his Kingdome of Constan-
tinople. Their ioy was futch, as they could not tell where they
were, thinking every houre a whole day till night. At length the
tyme was come fo long defired, and the Husbandes accordingly
gau dilignt attendaunce, and let their Wyues to vnderstande,
(or or leaft wyle beleued they had) that they could not come home
that night for matters of great importaunce. The Women that
were very wife, seeing their shipp fayle wyth fo prosperous wynde,
fayned themfelues to credite all that they offered. These young
men tooke eyther of them his Gondola (or as we tearm it theyr
Barge) to disport themfelues, and bauing supped abroade, rowed
in the Canali, which is the Water that paffeth through diuers
Streates of the Citty, expcetng their appoynted houfe. The
Women ready at three of the Clocke, repayred into their Gar-
dens, and after they had Talked, and Laughed together a pretty
whyle, went one into an other's houfe, and were by the maydes
brought vp to the Chaumbers. There eyther of them the Candle
being light, began diligently to view the order and situation of the
Place, and by little and little marked the chieuest things they looked for, committing the fame to memory. Afterwards they put out the Candle, and both in trembling manner expected the comming of their Hufbandes. And iuft at four of the Clocke the Mayden of Madonna Lucia floode at the dore to wayte for the comminge of Maister Anfelmio, who within a while after came, and gladly was let in by the mayde, and by hir conducted vp to hir Bed side. The place there, was so dark as Hel, and impoffible for him to know his Wyfe. The two Wyues were fo like of bignesse and Speach as by darke wythout great difficulty they could be known: when Anfelmio had put of his clothes, he was of his Wyfe amorously intertayned, thinking the Wyfe of Girolamo had receyued him betwene hir armes, who aboue a Thoufande times kiffed hir very sweetely, and fhe for hir parte sweetely rendred agayne to hym fo many: what followed it were Folly to describe. Girolamo lyke-wife at 5 of the clocke appeared, and was by the mayde condueted vp to the Chamber, where he lay with his own Wife, to their great contentations. Now thefe 2 hufbands thinking they had ben imbraced by their beloued Ladies, to feeme braue, and valiant men of Warre, made greater profe of their Manhoode, than they were wont to do. At what time their Wyues (as it pleafed God to manifeft by their deliuerie) were begotten with child of 2 fayre Sons, and they the beft contented Women of the World. This prætife continued betwene them many times, fewe weckes paffing but in this fort they lay together. Neyther of them for all this perceiued themselues to be deluded, or conceyued any fufpition of collusion for that the chamber was fill without light, and in the day the Women commonly fayled not to be together. The time was not longe but their Bellies began to fwell, whereat their Hufbandes were exceeding ioyfull, beleewing verily that eyther of them had fixed Hornes vpon the other's head. Howbeit the poore men for all their falfe Belief had bestowed theire Labour vpon their owne Soyle, watred onely with the courfe of their proper Fountayne. These two Iolly Wenches feeyng themfelues by thys amorous prætize to be with Childe, beganne to deniſe howe they might break of the fame, dounting leafe fome flaunder and ill talke shoulde rife: and thereby the hatred and malice betwene theire huf-
TWO GENTLEWOMEN OF VENICE.

bandes increase to greater fury. And as they were aboute thys
deuile, an occasion chauened vtterly to disfolue theyr accustomed
meetynge, but not in that forte as they soulede haue had it. For
the Women determined as merily they had begun fo iocundlye to
ende: but Fortune determined as merily they had begun fo iocundlye to
ende: but Fortune the guide of Humane Lyfe, dispoeth all enter-
prises after hir owne pleasure, who lyke a puissant Lady caryeth
with hir the fuccesfe of eche atteempte. The beginning the offereth
freely to him that lift, the End the calleth for, as a ranfone or
trybute payable vnto hir. In the same freate, or as they call it
Rio, and Canale, not farre from theyr Houfes, there dwelled a young
Woman very fayre and comely, not fully twenty yeares of age,
which then was a Widow, and a lyttle before the wife of M. Nic-
colo Delphino, and the Daughter of M. Giuoanni Moro, called
Gifmonda: she befides hir Father's Dowrye (which was more than
a Thoufand Pound) had left hir by hir Husband, a great Porcyon
of Money, Jewels, Plate, and houfhold Furnitures. Wyth hir
fell in Loue Aloiifo Foscar, the Nephewe of the Duke, who making
greate fute to have hir to Wyfe, consumed the time in beholding
his Ladye, and at length had brought the matter to fo good
paffe, as one Nighte she was contented, at one of the Wyndowes
of hir Houfe direcly overt aaynefte a little lane, to heare him speake.
Aloiifo maruellous glad of thofe defired Newes, at the appoynted
Nyght, about fyue or fixe of the Clocke, with a Ladder made of
Roapes (bicaufe the Window was very high) went thyther alone.
Beyng at the place and making a figne concluded vpon betweene
them, attended when the gentlewoman should throw down hir cord
to draw vp the Ladder accordingly as was appoynted, which not
longe after was done. Gifmonda when shee had receiued the ende
of the Ladder, tied it faft to the iawme of the wyndow, and gaue a
token to hir Louer to mount. He by force of loue being very ventu-
rous, liuely and luftely fealed the Wyndow: and when he was vpon
the Top of the fame, desirous to cafe himselfe in, to embrace
his Lady, and shee not readye to receive him, or elle vpon other oc-
casion, he fel downe backewarde, thinking as he fell to haue
faued himselfe twice or thryce by catchyng holde vpon the Ladder,
but it would not be. Notwithstanding, as God would haue it, the
poife of his Body fell not vpon the pauement of the freate fully,
but was stayed by some lets in the fall, which had it not bene so, no doubt he had bene slayne out of hande, but yet his bones were fore brused and his heade deeply wounded. The infortunate Louer seeing himselfe fore hurt wyth that pityfull fall, albeit he thought that hee had receiued his Death's Wounde, and imposslyble to liue any longer, yet the loue that he bare to the Widow, did so far furmount hys payne and the gryefe of hys Body fore cruished and broken, that so well as he could, hee rote vp, and with his hands stayed the Bloud that ranne from hys Heade, to the intente yt myghte not rayfe some flaunder vppon the Widow whom hee loued so wel: and went alonges the streate toward the houses of Girolamo and Anfelm mo aforefaid. Being come thither wyth greate difficulty not able to goe anye further for verye payne and gryefe, hee faynted and fell downe as deade, where the Bloude issue in futch abounding, as the Grounde therewith was greatly imbrued, and every one that saw him thought him to be voide of Lyfe. Miftrefe Giftmonda exceeding sorrowful for this mischance, doubted that he had broken his Necke, but when shee saw hym depart, she comforted him so well as she could, and drewe vp the Ladder into hir Chamber. Sutch Chaunces happen to earneft Louers, who when they think they haue sealed the top of theyr Felicity, sodaynly tumble downe into the Pit of extreme despayre, that better it had ben for them leyfurely to expect the grace of their Ladys at conuenient place and houre, than hardly without prouidence to adventure lyke desperat fouldiers to clym the top of the vamare, without meafuring the height of the Wals, or viewynge the subfaunce of theyr Ladders, do receyue in the ende cruel repulse, and fal down headlonge either by present Death or mortall Wounde, to receyue euerlastying reproche and flame. But turne we agayne now to this disgraced Louer, who lay gafping betwene Lyfe and Death. And as he was in this sorrowful stathe, one of the Captaynes, a Noble man appointed to see orders obfuered in the Nighte, wyth hys bande (which they call Zaffi) came thither: and finding hym lying vpnon the ground, knew that it was Aloifo Foscar, and causynge him to be taken vp from the place wher he lay, (thinking he had ben deade) commanded that he should be conveyede into the Church adioynynge whych immediately was done. And when he had wel confi-
dered the place where hee was founde, hee doubted that eyther Girolamo Bembo or Anfelmo Barbadico, before whose Dores hee thought the murder committed, had kylled him, which afterwards he beleued to be true, bycaufe he heard a certayne noyfe of mennes Feete at one of their Doores: wherefore hee deuided his company, placyng some on the one side of their houses, and some on the other, besieging the same so well as he could. And as Fortune woulde he founde by Neglygence of the mayds, the dores of the 11. houses open. It chaunced alfo that Nyght that the two Louers one in other's Houfe were gone to lye with their Ladyes, who hearynge the hurly burly, and sturre made in the house by the Sergeants, sodaynely the Women lept out of their Beds, and bearyng their apparell vppon theyr shoulders, went home to their houses throughe their Gardeins vnfeene of any, and in fearefull wyfe did attende what shou'd be the End of the same. Girolamo, and Anfelmo not knowing what rumor and noife that was, although they made haft in the Darke to cloth themselfes, were by the Offycers without any field fought, apprehended in eech other's Chamber, and remained Prysoners at theyr mercy: whereat the Captayne and hys Band did greatly maruell, knowyng the Hatred betweene them. But when Torches and Lyghts were brought, and the two Gentle\-men caried out of Doores, the wonder was the greater for that they perceyued them almofte Naked, and prysoners taken in eche other's Houfe. And be\-ysdes this admiratyon, futch murmur and flaunder was bruted, as the quality of euerye Vulgar Heade coulde secretlye deuyse or Imagyne, but specially of the inno\-cente Women, who howe faultlesse they were, euery Man by what is fayde before maye conceyue, and yet the cancred Stomackes of that Troupe bare futch Malyce agaynst them, as they iarred and brawlde agaynst them lyke curryfhe Curres at ftraunge Dogges whom they never fawe before. The Gentlemen imme\-diately were caried to pryfon, ignornat vpon what ocasion: afterwards vnderstandinge that they were committed for the mur\-der of Aloifio Foscari, and imprysoned like theenes, albeit they knew themselfes guiltelesse of murder or Theft, yet their gryef and sorro\-we was very greate, beynge certayne that all Venice shoulde vnderstande howe they betweene whome had ben mortall hatred,
were nowe become copartners of that whych none but the true poffeiffours ought to enioye: and although they coude not abyde to speake together, lyke thofe that deadely dyd hate one another, yet both theyr myndes were fyxed vppon one thought. In the ende, conceyuing Fury and despite agaynste theyr Wyues, the place being so darke that no Lyght or Sunne coude pierce into the same, whereby wythout shame or disdayne one of them began to speake to another, and with terrible Othes they gauetheyrr faithe to disclofe the troth in what fort cyther of them was taken in other’s Chamber, and frankly told the way and meane howe eche of them enjoyed his Pleasure of other’s Wyfe: whereupon the whole matter (according to their knowledge) was altogether by little and little manifest and knowne. Then they accompted theyr Wyues to be the most arrant trumpets within the whole City, by disprayfing of whom theyr olde rancor was forgotten, and they agreed together like two Fryends, who thought that for shame they shoule never be able to looke Men in the face, ne yet to thaw themselues openlye within the Citye, for sorrow whereof they deemed Death the greateste good turne and best Benefit that could chance vnto them. To be short, seeing no meane or occasion to comfort and relieue theyr penfyue and heauy fates, they fell into extreeme despayre, who ashamed to lyue any longer, denuied way to rid them selues of Lyfe, concluding to make themselues guilty of the murder of Aloiffo Foscarī: and after mutch talke betwenee them of that cruell determination, stylly approving the same to be theyr best refuge, they expected nothyng else, but when they shoulde be examined before the Magistrates. Foscarī as is before declared was carryed into the Churche for Deade, and the Pryest straightly charged wyth the keepyng of hym, who causēd hym to be conueyed into the myddes of the Church, setting 11. Torches a Light, the one at his heade, and the other at his feete, and when the Company was gone, he determined to goe to bed the remnant of the Nyght to take his rest: but before he went, seeing the Torches were but short, and could not laft paste two or three houres, he lighted two other, and set them in the others place, for that it shoulde seeme to his frends, if any chaunced to come what care and worship he bestowed vpon him. The Pryest
ready to depart, perceived the Body somewhat to move, with that looking vpon his Face, espied his eyes a little to begin to open. Wherewithall somewhat atraide, he crying out, ran awaye: notwithstanding his Courage began to come to him again, and laying his hand vpon his breast, perceived his heart to beate, and then twas out of doubt that he was not dead, although by reason of losse of his bloud he thought little life to remaine in him: wherefore he with one of his fellow priests which was a bed, and the Clerck of the Parish, caried maister Fofcari so tenderly as they could into the Priests Chamber, which adioined next the Church. Then he sente for a surgeon that dwelt hard by, and required him diligently to search the Wounde, who so well as he could purged the same from the corrupt Bloud, and perceiuyng it not to be mortall, to dragged it wyth Oyles and other precious ointments, as Aloifio came agayn to hymselfe: and when he had anoynted that recovered body wyth certayne Precious and comfortable Oyles, he suffred him to take his rest: the Priest also went to bed and sleepe till it was Daye, who so soone as he was vp, went to seeke the Captayne to tel him that Maiter Aloifio was recovered. The Captaine at that tyme was gone to the pallace at San. Marco, to giue the Duke aduertifement of thys Chaunce, after whom the Priest went and was let in to the Duke's Chamber: to whom he declared what he had done to Aloifio. The Duke very glad to heare tell of his Nephewe's lyfe, although then very penfiue for the newes brougthe vnto hym by the Captayne, intreated one of the Signor de notte, to take with him two of the best surgions, and to call him that had already dressed his Nephew, to goe to visithe the wounded Gentleman, that hee might be certified of the truth of that Chaunce. All which together repaired to the Pryefte's Chamber, where fyndinge hym not a sleepe, and the Woundefayre inougbte to heale, dyd therevnto what their cunning thoughte meete: and then they began to inquire of hym, that was not yet full recovered to perfecte speache, howe that chaunce happened, telling hym that he might frankelye confeffe vnto them the trouthe. The more diligent they were in this demaunde, bicaufe the Surgeon that dressed him fyrst, alleaged, that the Wounde was not made with Swordo, but receiued by some greate fall or blowe with Mace or
Clubbe, or rather seemed to come of some high fall from a Wyndowe, by reason his Head was so grievously bruised. Aloisio hearynge the Surgeons fodayne demande, prefently he aunswered, that he fell downe from a Wyndowe, and named also the House. And he had no sooner spoken those Wordes, but he was very angry wyth him felse and forrye: and wherewithall his difmayde Spyrtes began to reuyue in futch wyfe, as fodaynlye he choyfe rather to dye than to speake any thynge to the dyhonoure of myfrefle Gifmonda. Then the Signior di notte, asked hym what he dyd there aboute that Tyne of the Nyght, and wherfore he dyd clymb vp to the Wyndowe, beynge fo hyghe: whych hee could not keeperecrete, confyderyng the Authoritye of the Magystrate that demaunted the quefylon, albeyt hee thoughte that ye his Tongue hadde runne at large, and commytted a Faulte by rafye speakynge, hys Bodye shoulde therefore suffer the fmart: wherefore before hee woulde in any wyfe gyue occasion to flaunder hir, whome hee loued better than hys owne Lyfe, determined to hazarde hys Lyfe and Honoure, to the mercy of Iustice, and sayde: "I declared euyn nowe, whych I cannot denye, that I fell downe from the wyndowe of Myfrefle Gifmonda Mora. The caufe thereof (beeynge now at state, wherein I knowe not whether I shalbe Lyue or Dye) I will truelye dyfclofe: Myfrefle Gifmonda beynge a Wydowe and a younge Woman, wythoute anye Man in hir Houfe, bycaufe by reporte shee is very rych of Iewels and Money, I purposed to robbe and dyfpoyle: wherefore I deuyfed a ladder to clymb vp to hir Wyndowe, with Mynde full bent to kill all thoshe that shoulde refite me: but my mishappe was futch as the Ladder being not well faftened fell downe, and I my felse therwithall, and thinking to reconuer home to my lodging with my cored Ladder, my Spirites beganne to fayle, and tomble downe I wotte not where." The Signor de notte, whose name was Domenico Mari-perto hearing him say fo, maruelled greatly, and was very orrie, that all theye in the Chamber, which were a great number, (as at futch chaunces commonly be) dyd heare those Wordes: and bicaufe they were spoken so openly, he was forced to faye vnto hym: "Aloisio, it doth not a little grieue me that thou haft com-mitted futch follye, but for so mutch as sorrowe now will not
ferue to remedye the Trespaße, I muste needes shew my selfe both faithfull to my countrey, and alfo carefull of nine honor, without respect of persons: wherefore thou shalt remaine here in sute safe custody as I shal appoint, and when thou art better amended, thou must according to defect be referred to the Gaole." Leaing him there under sure keeping, he went to the counsell of the Dieci, (which magistrates in that City be of greatest authority) and finding the Lords in Counsell, he opened the whole matter vnto them: the presidentes of the Counsell which had hearde a great numbre of complaynts of many Theftes don in the Nyght within the Citye, tooke order that one of the Captaynes that were appoynted to the dilygente Watche and keepyng of Aloifio, remayning in the Pryfete's Houfe, shoold cause him to be examyned, and with tormentes forced to tel the truth, for that they did verely beleue that hee had committed many Robberies besides, or at the leaft was pryuy and acceffarie to the fame, and knew where the Theues were become. Afterwandes the sayd Counsell did fitte vpon the matter of Girolamo Bembo and Anfello Barbadico, found at myde Night naked in eche other's Chambre, and committed to Pryifon as is before remembred: and bicause they had many matters besides of greater importaunce, to consult vpon, amongs which the warres betwene them and Philippo Maria Vifconte, Duke of Milane, the aforefaide causses were deferred tyll an other tyme, notwythstandyng in the meane while they were examyned. The Duke himselfe that tyme being in Counsell, spake moft feuerely against his Nephew: neuerthelesse he did hardly beleue that his Nephew being very rich, and indued with great honelty, would abafe himselfe to a vice so vile and abominable as theft is, wherevpon he began to consider of many thinges, and in the ende talked with his Nephew secretly alone, and by that meanes learned the truth of the whole matter. In like maner Anfello and Girolamo were Examined by Commissioners appoynted by the state, what one of them did in an other's chamber, at that houre of the night, who confessed that many tymes they had seene Aloifio Focari, to passe vp and down before their houses at times inconuenient, and that night by chaunce one of them not knowing of another, espied Aloifio, thinking that he lingered about their
houses to abuse one of their Wyues, for which cause they went out, and with their Weapons fodenly killed him: which confession they openly declared accordingly, as whereupon before they were agreed. Afterwardes with further circumstaunce being examined vpon the Article of being one in another's Chaumber, it appeared that their first tale was ytterly vntrue: of all which contradictions the Duke was aduertised, and was driuen into extreme admiration, for that the truth of those disorders could not be to the full underftanded and knowne. Whereupon the Dieci, and the affiftauntes were agayne assembled in counsell according to the maner, at what time after all things throughly were debated and ended, the Duke being a very graue man, of excellent Witte, advauanced to the Dukedom by the consent of the whole State, as euery of them were about to rife vp, bee sayde vnto them: "My Lordes, there refeth one thinge yet to be moued, which peraduen-
ture hitherto hath not bene thought vpon: there are before vs two complaynts, the effect whereof in my judgement is not throughly conseyed in the Opinions of diuers. Anfelm Barbadico, and Girolamo Bembo, betwene whom there hath bene euer continuall hatred, left vnto them as a man may fay euen by Fathers Inheritance both of them in eyther of their Chaumbers, were apprehended in a manner naked by our Sergeaunts, and without Tor-
mants, or for feare to bee racked vpon the onely interrogatories of our ministers, they have voluntarily confessed that before their houses they killed Aloisio our Nephew: and albeit that our sayde Nephew yet liueth, and was not striken by them or any other as should appeare, yet they confesse themselues guilty of murder. What shal be sayd then to the matter, doth it not seeme doubtfull? Our Nephew again hath declared, that in going about to rob the hous of Miutreffle Gifmonda Mora, whom he ment to haue flayne, he fel downe to the Ground from the top of a window, wherefore by reasong so many robberies have bene discovered within the Citty, it may be presumed that hee was the theefe and malefactor, who ought to be put to the torments, that the truth may be knowne, and being found guilty, to feele the seuere punifhment that he hath deferred. Moreover when he was found lying vpon the ground, he had neither Ladder nor Weapon, whereupon may bee
thought that the fact was otherwise done, than hitherto is confessed. And because amongst moral virtues, temperance is the chiefest and worthy of greatest commendation, and that injustice not righteously executed, is injustice and wrong, it is meete and convenient for us in these strange accidents, rather to use temperance than the rigor of injustice: and that it may appeare that I do not speake these words without good grounde, marke what I shall saye vnto you. These two most mortall enemies doe confess that which is impossible to be true, for that our Nephew (as is before declared) is a liue, and his wounde was not made by Sworde, as hee himselfe hath confessed. Now who can tell or saye the contrary, but that shame for being taken in their seuerall Chambers, and the dishonesty of both their Wyues, hath causd them to despise life, and to desire death? we shall finde if the matter be diligently inquired and searched, that it will fall out otherwise than is already supposd by common opinion. For the contrariety of examinations, unlikelihood of circumstances, and the impossibility of the cause, rendreth the matter doubtfull: wherefore it is very needful diligently to examine these attempts, and thereof to use more aduised consideration. On the other side, our Nephew accuseth himselfe to be a theffe and which is more, that hee ment to kill Mistrefle Mora when hee brake into hir house. Vnder this Graffe, my Lords, as I supposeth, some other Serpent lieth hiden, that is not yet thought of. The Gentleman yee know before this time was never defamed of such outrage, ne suspedt of the least offence that may be obesct: besides that, all yee doe know, (thanks therefore be geuen to almighty God) that he is a man of great richesse, and possessions, and hath no neede to rob: for what necessitie should drive him to rob a widowe, that hath of his owne liberally to bestow vpon the succour of Widowes? Were there none els of substance in the Citty for him to geue attempt but to a Wyddowe, a comfortlesse creature, contented with quiet lyfe to lyue amonges hir family within the boundes of hir owne house? What if hir richesse, Iewels and plate be great, hath not Aloifio of his owne to redouble the same? but truly this Robbery was done after some other manner than hee hath confessed: to vs then my Lords it appertayneth, if it so stande with your plea-
fures, to make further inquiry of the fame, promising unto you
upon our Fayth, that wee shall imploy our whole diligence in the
true examination of this matter, and hope to bring the fame to
fuch good ende, as none shall haue caufe to blame vs, the finall
sentence whereof shall bee referred to youre judgement." Thys
graue request and wise talke of the Duke pleased greatly the Lordes
of the Counfayle, who referred not onely the examination, but also
the finall sentence vnto hym. Whereupon the wyfe Prynce
beinge fully enformed of the chaunce happened to his Nephewe,
attended onely to make search, if he could vnderstand the occa-
ftion why Bembo and Barbadico fo foolishly had accused them-
ftelves of that which they neuer did. And fo after mutch coun-
fayle, and great tyme continued in their feueral examinations, his
Nephew then was well recovered, and able to goe abroade, being
fet at liberty. The Duke then hauinge bestowed hys travaile
with the other two prisoners, communicated to the Lords of the
aforefayd councel called Dici the whole trouth of the matter.
Then he caufed with great discretion, proclamation to be made
throughout Venice, that Anfelmno and Girolamo hold be beheded
betwene the two Pyllers, and Aloifio hanged, whereby he thought
to know what fute the women would make, eyther with or against
their Hufbandes, and what evidence mistrefle Gifmonda woulde
gue against Aloifio. The brute hereof diuerfed, divers talke
thereupon was rayfed, and no communication of any thing els in
open ftreets, and priuate houses, but of the putting to death of
thofe men. And bicaufe all three were of honorable houses, their
kinsmen, and Friendes made fute by all poiffible meanes for theyr
pardon. But their Confeffions publifhed, the rumor was made
worfe, (as it dayly chaunceth in like cafes) than the matter was in
deede, and the fame was noyfed how Focari had confefled fo many
theftes done by him at divers tymes, as none of his freends or Kin
durf speake for him. Mistrefle Gifmonda which bitterly lamented
the mischaunce of hir Louer, after she vnderstoode the confeffion
hee had made, and euidently knew that becaufe hee woulde not
bleamish hir honour, he had rather willingly forgo his owne, and
therewithall his lyfe, felt hir felie fo oppreffed with fereuent loue,
as hhee was ready presently to furrender hir ghoft. Wherefore
fhee fent him woord that he shoulde comfort himsfelfe, because fhee was determined to manifeft the very trouth of the matter, and hoped vpon hir declaration of true evidence, sentence shoulde bee revoked, for testimony whereof, fhee had his louinge letters yet to shewe, written to hir with his owne handes, and would bring forth in the judgement place, the corded ladder, which she had kept stil in her chamber. Aloiffo hearinge these louing newes, and of the evidence which his Lady woulde giue for his defence, was the gladdest man of the world, and caused infinite thankes to be renderd vnto hir, wyth promife that if hee might bee rid and discharged out of prifon, he woulde take hir for his louing spouse and wyfe. Whereof the gentlewoman conceyued singuler solace, louing hir deere frende with more entier affection then hir owne soule. Miftr esse Lucia, and miftr esse Ifotta, hearinge the dispersed voyce of the death of their husbands, and understandinge the cafe of mis- tr esse Gismonda by an other woman, layd their heads together likwise to devise meanes for sauing their husbandes liues: and entring into their Barge, or Gondola, wente to seeke miftr esse Gis- monda and when they had debated vpon the trouthe of these euents, concluded with one assent to provide for the safegarde and deliuerye of theyr husbandes, wherein they shewed themselues both wife and honest. For what estate is more honorable and of greater Comforte then the married Lyfe, if in deede they that haue yoaked themselues therein be conformable to those Delightes, and contentation which the fame conduceth? Wealth and Riches maketh the true vnyted couple to rejoyce in the Benefits of Fortune, graunted by the fender of the same, either of them prouiding for disposing thereof, againft the decrpiet time of olde age, and for the beftowing of the same vpon the Fruiti e accrued of theyr Bodies. Pouerty in any wife dothe not offend them, both of them glad to laboure and travaile like one Body, to sustaine theyr poore and neady Lyfe, eyther of them Comfortably doth Minyster com- forte in the cruel tymes of Aduerfity, rendring humble thankes to God for hys sharp Rodde and Punishment enflicted vpon them for their manyfoldes finnes commytted againfte hys maiestye, travaillinge by night and Daye by sweatinge Browes to get browne Breade, and drynke ful thin to ceafe the Cryes and pytiful crau-
inges of their tender Babes, wrapt in Cradle and inst ant on their mother to fill their hungry mouthes. Aduerfe fortune maketh not one to forfake the other. The louing Wyfe ceaseth not by paynfull fute to trot and go by Night and day in heate and colde to relieue the miferye of hir husband. He likewise spareth not his payne to get and gayne the liuyng of them both. He abrode and at home according to his called state, she at home to faue the Lucre of that Labor, and to doe futch necessary travayle incident to the married kinde. He carefull for to get, the heedeful for to faue, he by trasique and Arte, thee by diligence and houfholde toile. O the happy state of married folke: O furpassing delights of mariage bed: which maketh these II. poore Gentlewomen, that by honorable pollicy faued the honor of themselfes and honefty of theyr hufbandes, to make humble fute for their preferuation, who were like to be berieued of their greatest comforts. But come we again to declare the laft act of this Comical discouerfe. These married Women, after this chaunces befell, vpon their hufbandes impryfon ment, began to be abhorred of their Friendes and Parentes, for that they were suspefed to be difhonesfte, by reafon whereof doefullly lamenting their Misfortune, notwithstanding thei owne conscience voyde of faulte, dyd byd them to be of good cheere and comfort. And when the daye of execution came, they dyd theyr Friendes and Parentes to vnderstand that their conceiued opinyon was vntrues, and prayed them to forbear their disfain and malice, till the truth shoule be throughly manfest, affuring them that in the End their owne innocencie and the guiltlesse cryme of their Hufbands shoule openly be revealed to the Worlde. In the meane time they made request vnto their Friendes, that one of the Lordes called Auogadori might be admitted to vnderstande their cafe, the rest to be re ferred to themselfes, wherein they had no neede either of Proctor or Aduocate. This request feemed verye straunge to their friends, deeming their cafe to be shamefull and abominable: nevertheles diligently they accomplifhed their request and vnderstanding that the Counfell of the Dieci had commytted the matter wholly to the Duke, they made a supplicatyon vnto hym in the name of the three Gentlewomen, wherein they craued nothing elfe but theyr matter might be hearde. The Duke perceiuing hys aduise like to take
effect, assigned them a Day, commandeinge them at that tymne before hym and the Lords of the Councell and all the College of the etate to appeare. The Day being come, all the Lordes assembled, desirous to see to what issue this matter would grow. On the morning the three Gentlewomen honestly accompanied with other Dames, went to the Palace, and goyne along the streate of San Marco the people began to utter many rayling words against them: some cried out (as we see by vnstable order the vulgare people in like cafes vfe to do) and doinge a certain curtify by way of disdain and mockery: "Behold the honest women, that without sending their husbands out of Venice, haue placed them in the Caftell of Cornetto, and yet the arrante Whoores bee not ashamed to sewe them felues abrode, as though they hadde done a thynge that were Honeste and prayfe worthye." Other shot forth theyr Boltes, and wyth theyr Proverbes proceedyng from their malicious Mouthes thwited the pore Women at their pleasure. Other also seeyng Mystreffe Gifmonda in their Company, thought that she went to declame against maifter Aloifio Foscarie, and none of them all hapned on the trouth. Arryued at the pallace, ascending the marble ftaires or steps of the fame, they were brought into the great hal, wher the Duke appointed the matter to be heard. Thither repaired the friends and those of nearest kin to the three Gentlewomen, and before the matter did begin, the Duke caufed also the thre prifoners to be brought thither. Thither also came many other Gentlemen, with great desire to see the end of thofe euents. Silence being made the Duke turning his face to the women, sayd vnto them: "Ye Gentlewomen haue made requeste by supplycating to graunt you publike audyence accordyng to Iustice, for that you do allege that Law and order doth fo require; and that euer wel ordred common wealth condemmeth no subiecte withoute due anfwer by order of lawe. Beholde therefore, that we desirous to do Iustice, bee ready in Place to heare what ye can say." The two husbands were very angrie and wrathfull against their wiues, and the more their stomackes did fret with choler and disdayne, by how much they saw their impudente and shameleffe wiues wyth sutch audacity to appeare before the maiesty of a counfel fo honourable and dreadfull, as though they had ben the
moft honest and chaff Women of the World. The two honest
wifes perceyued the anger and displeasure of their husbands, and
for all that were not afrayde ne yet dismayde, but smyling to them-
selues and somewhat moning their heads in decente wyfe seemed
vynto them as though they had mocked them. Anfello more
angry and impatient then Girolamo, brake out into futch furie,
as had it not ben for the maiesty of the place, and the Companye of
People to haue flayed him, would haue kyled them: and feyng he
was not able to hurt them, he began to vutter the vyleft Woords,
that he possibly could deuise agaynst them. Miftrefe Ifotta
hearing hir husband fo fpytefully to spyt forth his poyfon in the
presence of that honourable assemblye, conceiued courage, and
crauinge licence of the Duke to fpeake, with merrie countenance
and good vtrrance began thus to fay her mind: "Mofl ex-
cellent Prince, and yee right honourable Lordes, I doe perceyue
how my deare hubande vncomely and very dishonestly doth
vyfe himfelfe agaynf me in this noble company, thincking alfo
that mayfter Girolamo Bembo is affected with like rage and
minde agaynst this Gentlewoman miftrefe Lucia hys wyfe, al-
though more temperate in words, he do not exprefse the fame.
Agaynf whom if no reply be made, it may feeme that he doth well
and hath spoken a truth, and that we by silence do condemne our
felues to be thofe moft wicke women whom hee alleageth vs to be.
Wherefore by your gratious pardon and licence (moft honourable)
in the behalfe of miftrefe Lucia and my felfe, for our defence
I purpofe to declare the effect of my mynde, although my purpofe
be cleane altered from that I had thought to fay, being now iufty
prouked by the vukinde behauior of him whom I love better
than my felfe, and whose difloyalty, had hee beene silent and not fo
raffly runne to the overthrow of me and my good name, coulde I
haue concealed, and onely touched that which had concerned the
Purgation and fauegard of them both, which was the onely intent
and meaning of vs, by making our humble supplication to your
Maiefties. Neuertheffe, fo farre as my feeble force fhall stretch,
I will affe to do both the one and the other, although it be not
appropriate to our kinde in publike place to declayme, nor yet to
open futch bold attempts, but that neceffity of matter and opor-
tunity of time, and place doth the bolder vs to enter into these
termes, whereof we crave a thousand pardons for our vnkindely
dealings, and render double thanks to your honours, for admitting
vs to speake. Be it knowne therefore vnto you, that our hus-
bands agaynft duety of loue, lawes of marriage, and against all
reason, do make their heavy complaynts, which by and by I will
make playne and evident. I am right well assured, that their ex-
treme rage and bitter hearts sorrow do proccede of 2 occasions:
The one, of the murder whereof they haue falsely accused them-
velues: the other of iealousie, which grievously doth gnawe their
hearts, thinking vs to be vile, and abominable Women, because
they were surprized in ech other's Chaumber. Concerning the
murder, if they haue soyled their handes therein, it appertayneth
vnto you my Lords to render their desert. But how can the fame
be layd to our charge, for somuch as they (if it were done by
them) committed the same without our knowledge, our help and
counsel? And truly I see noe cause why any of vs ought to be
burdened with the outrage, and mutch leffe cause haue they to laye
the same to our charge: for meete it is that he that doth any un-
lawful act, or is accesseary to the same, should suffer the due penal-
ty and seuer chaitifement accordingly as the sacred lawes do pre-
scribe, to be an example for other to abftayne from wicked facts.
But hereof what neede I to dispute, wherein the blind may see to
bee none offence, becaufe (thankes bee to God) Mayster Aloifio
liueth, which declareth the fonde Confeffion of our vngentil hus-
bandes to bee contrary to trouth? And if so be our husbands in
deede had done fuch an abominable enterprize, reason and duety
had moued vs to sorrowe and lament them, because they be borne
of noble bloud, and be gentlemen of this noble Citty, which like
a pure virgin inuiolably doth conferue hir lawes and customes.
Great cause I say, had we to lament them, if lyke homicides, and
murderers they had spotted their bloud with fuch fowle blemish
thereby defering death, to leaue vs yong Women Widowes in
wofull plight. Nowe it behoueth me to speake of the Jealousie
they haue conceyued of vs, for that they were in ech other's Cham-
ber, which truly is the doubtfull knot and scruple that forceth all
their difdaine and grieue. This I knowe well is the Nayle that
pierceth their heart: other cause of offence they haue not: who like men not well aduised, without examination of vs and our demeanour, bee fallen into despayre, and like men desperate, haue wrongfully accused themselues: but because I may not confume words in vayne, to flay you by my long discourse from matters of greater importaunce, I humbly befeech you (right excellent prince) to commande them to tell what thing it is, which so bitterly doth torment them." Then the Duke caused one of the noble men affistaunt there, to demand of them the question: Who annswered that the chiefest occaion was, because they knew their Wyues to be Harlots, whom they supped to be very honest: and forfomuch as they knew them to be futch, they conceived sorrow and griefe, which with futch extremity did gripe them at the heart, as not able to suftayne that great Infamy, ashamed to be fene of men, were induced through defire of death to confesse that they never did. Mistrefse Ifotta hearing them say so, began to fpeak agayne, turning hir felle vnto them: "Were you offended then at a thynge which yee thought inconuenient and not meete to be done? Wee then haue greatest caufe to complayne. Why then sweete Hufband went you to the Chaumber of mistrefse Lucia at that time of the night? What had you to do there? What thing thought you to finde there more than was in your owne houfe? And you Mayster Girolamo, what conftrayned you to forfaie your Wyue's Bed to come to my Hufband's, where no man euer had, or at this present hath to do but himfelfe? Were not the Sheetes of the one fo white, so fine, neate, and sweete as the other? I am (most noble Prince) for to declare my Hufbande's folly, and ashamed that hee shoulde forfaie my Bed to go to an other, that did accompt myfelfe fo well worthy to entretyne hym in myne owne, as the best Wyfe in Venice, and now through his abuse, I abftayne to fhewe my felfe amongst the Beautifull, and noble Dames of this Citty. The lyke misliking of hirfelfe is in mistrefse Lucia, who (as you fee) may be numbred amongs the fayreft. Eyther of you ought to haue bene contented with your Wyues, and not (as wickedly you haue done) to forfaie them, to seeke for better breade than is made of Wheate, or for purer Golde than whereof the Angell is made: O worthy deede of yours, that haue the Face to leave your
owne Wyues, that be comely, fayre, and honest, to seeke after strange Carrion. O beftly order of Men that cannot conteyne their luft within the boundes of their owne Houfe, but must goe hunt after other Women as Beaftes do after the nexte of their kinde that they chaunce vpon. What vile affection posfeffed your hearts to luft after others Wyfe? You make complaynte of vs, but wee with you haue right good caufe to be offended, you ought to bee grieved with your owne disorder, and not with others offence, and thys your affliction patientely to beare, bycaufe you went about to beguile one an other's Loue, lyke them that be weary, and Glutted with their owne fare, seekinge after other daynties more delicate if they were to be founde. But prayed be God and our prudent discretion, if any hurt or shame hath chaunced, the same doth light on you. Moreouer I know no caufe why men shoulde have more liberty to doe euill than we Women haue: albeit through the weaknes and cowardise of our Sexe, yee men will doe what ye lift. But ye be now no Lords, nor we Seruaunts, and husbands we do you call, bycaufe the holy Lawes of Matrimony (which was the first Sacrament giuen by God to Men after the creation of the Worlde) doe require equall fayth, and fo well is the husband bound to the Wyfe as the vnto him. Go to then and make your complaynt: the next Asfe or Beaf ye meete take hir to be your Wyfe. Why do yee not know that the balance of iustice is equall, and wayeth downe no more of one site than of other? But let vs nowe leaue of to reafon of this matter, and come to that for which we be come hither. Two things (moft ryghteous Prynce) haue moued vs to come before your maiesty, and all this honourable assembly, which had they not bene, we would have bene ashamed to shewe our Faces, and leffe prefumed to speake or once to open our Lippes in this Noble audience, which is a place only meete for them that be moft Expert, and eloquent Orators, and not for vs, to whom the Needle, and Diffafe be more requisite. The first caufe that forced vs to come forth of our owne house, was to let you understand that our Husbands be no murderers, as is supposéd, neyther of this Gentleman prefent maister Alofio, ne yet of any man els: and thereof we haue sufficient and worthy testimony. But herein we neede
not to travaile mutch, or to vse many wordes: for neyther maister Alofio is slayne, ne any other murdred that is known or manifeft hitherto. One thyng refteth, which is that Madonna Lucia and I do humbly beseech youre excellente Maieftye, that youre grace and the authoritye of the right honourable Lords here prefent, will vouchsafe to reconcile vs to our husbands, that we may obtayne pardon and favor at their handes, because we haue so manifeftly made their acts to appeare, and for that we be the offence, and they the Offendours, and yet by their owne occasions, we haue committed the Error (if it may be so termned.) And now to come to the conclusion, I doe remember, fithens I was a Chylde, that I haue heard the Gentlewoman my mother faye (whose foule God pardon) many times vnto me, and other my fifters, and to mistrefse Lucia, that was brought vp with vs, being by hir intrusted in diuers good and vertuous Leffons, that all the honor a woman can doe vnto hir hufband, whereby she beautifieth him and his whole race and family, confiſte in hir honeft, chaſt, and vertuous lyfe, without which, she oughte rather to die than liue. And that a Gentleman’s Wyfe when she hath giuen hir body to the vſe of an other man, is the common marke for every man to point at in the streate where she goeth, hir hufband therby incurring reproche and shame, whych no doubt is the greatest injury and feorne that an honeft Gentleman can receiue, and the moſſe shamefull reproche that can deface his houſe. Which Leſſon we fo well remembrance, defirous not touffer the careleſſe and vnbrided appetites of our hufbands to be vntrained, and runne at large to some diſhonest Ende, by a faithfull and commendable pollicy, did prouide for the mistreyſe that myghte ensue. I neede not heere rehearſe the enimytye and debate that manye yeares did raigne betwene our hufbands Fathers, bicaſe it is knowne to the whole City. Wee too therefore here preſente, the Wiues of thofe noble Gentlemen, brought vp together from our Cradle, perceiuing the malyce betwene our hufbands, made a vertue of Neceſſity, deemyng it better for vs to lofe our fweete and aunſcient converſation, than to mynifter caufe of diſquietneſſe. But the neareneſſe of our houſes would not that naturall hatred shoulde deſfraude and take away olde ingrafted amity. Wherefore many times
when our Husbands were gone forth, we met together, and talked in our Gardens, betwene whych there is but a slender hedge befit with Primm and Rofes, which commoditye in their absence we did dieretly vfe. And as sometimes for pleasure we walked with our husbands there, ye (thée turninge vnto them) did cast your eyes vpon ech other’s wyfe, and were strayghte way in loue, or else perchance you fained your selues to bee, whych espied by vs, many times betwene our selues did deute vpon the fame, and red your amorous letters, and sonnet sent vnto vs. For which di•loyalty and treafon toward vs your Wyues, we foughjt no di•honour to youre perfons, wee were content touffer you to bee abused with your fond loue, we blabbed it not abroade to our Goffips, as many leude and fantaficall women bee wont to doe, thereby to rayfe flaundr to our husbands, and to flurre vp ill reporte vpon them, whose infirmities it becommeth vs to conceale and hide. We deuised meanes by some other way to let you understand your fault, and did caft vpon you many times right louinge lookes. Which although it were agaynste our owne defire, yet the caufe, and full conclusion of the fame, was to pra•tife, if it were po•sible, to make you frendes: But consideringe that this loue, and allurementes of eyther parts, could not tend to other end, as wee conie•tured, but to increafe di•pleasure, and to put the swords into your handes, we therefore consulted, and vniformely in one minde agreed for the appeafinge, and sat•sfa•tion of all partes, at futch nightes as ye fayned to go into diuers places about earneﬆ affayres as yee alleaged, Mitreffe Lucia with the help of Caffandra my mayde, through the Gardeine came into my chamber, and I by meanes of Iane hir maide by like way repayred vnto hirs. And yee poore men guided by our maydes were brought vnto your chambers where ye lay with your owne Wyues, and fo by tilth of others land in ftraunge foyle (as yee beleueed) yee loft no labour. And becaufe your embracements then, were like to those atchieued by amorous Gentlemen, vﬁng vs with more earneﬆ defire than you were wont to do, both wee were begotten with childe: which ought to be very gladsome, and gratefull vnto you, if yee were fo fayne to have children as yee shewed your selues to bee. If then none other offence doth grieue you, if remorfe of Conscience for other caufe doeth not
offend you, if none other forowe doeth displease you: giue over your grieue. Remit your displeasure. Be glad, and joyfull. Thanke vs for our pollicy and pleauenta disport that wee made you. If hitherto yee haue ben enimies, henceforth be frends, put of that auncent mallice fo long continued, mitigate your hatefull moode, and liue yee from henceforth like friendly Gentlemen, yeilde vp your rancor into the lap of your Countrey, that shee may put him in exile for euere, who like a pitifull, and lousing mother woulde gladly see all hir children of one accorde and minde. Which if yee doe, (ye shall do singulare pleasure to your friendes), ye shall doe great difcomfort to your foes, yee shall do singular good to the commonwealth, yee shall doe greatest benefit to your felues, ye shall make vs humble Wyues, yee shall encreafe your posterity, yee shall be prayfed of all men, and finally shall depart the best contented that euere the World brought forth. And now becaufe yee shall not thinke that wee haue picked out thys Tale at our fingers ends, thereby to seeke your faueguard and our owne Fame, and prayle, beholde the letters which you sent vs, beholde you owne handes subscibed to the fame, beholde your seales assigned thereunto, which shall render true testimony of that which vnfaynedly we haue affirmed."

Then both deliuered their letters, which viewed and scene, were well knowne to be their owne husbandes handes, and the same so well approued hir tale, as their husbands were the gladdest men of the world and the Duke and Seignory maruaylously satis- fied and contented. In so mutch as the whole assemblie with one voyce, cried out for their husbands deliuerance. And so with the content of the Duke and the whole seignory they were clearely discharged. The Parents, Cofins, and Friends of the husbands and wyues were wonderfullu amazed to heere this long hystory, and greatly prayfed the maner of their delivery, accompting the women to be very wife, and mistresse Ifotta to be an eloquent gentlewoman, for that shee had so well defended the caufe of their husbands and of themselues. Anfelmo and Girolamo openly in the presence of all the people embraced, and kisst their Wyues with great reioysing. And then the husbands shaked one an other by the hands, betwene whom began a Brotherly accorde, and from that time forth liued in perfect amity, and
Friendship, exchaunging the wanton loue that eyther of them bare to other's wyfe into Brotherly Friendship, to the great delight of the whole Citty. When the multitude assembled, to heare this matter throughly was satisfied, the Duke with cheerefull Countenaunce lookinge toward Gifmonda, sayde thus vnto hir: "And you fayre Gentlewoman, what haue you to say: Bee bolde to vttre your minde, and wee wil gladly heare you." Miftresse Gifmonda bashfull to speake, began wonderfully to blu:sh, into whose cheekes entred an orient rud, intermixed with an alabafter white, which made her countenaunce more amiable than it was wont to be. After she had ftole still a while with hir eyes declined towards the ground, in comly wise lifting them vp againe with shamefaft audacity she began thus to speake: "If I most Noble Prince, in open audience shou'd attempt to discouer of Loue, whereof I neuer had experience, or knew what thing it was, I shou'd be doubtfull what to say thereof, and peraduenture durft not open my mouth at al. But hearing my father (of worthy memory) many times to tel that your majesty in the time of your youth disdained not to open your heart to receiue the amorous flames of loue, and being affured that there is none but that doth loue little or mutch, I do not doubt but for the words which I shal speake, to obtaine both pity and pardon. To come then to the matter: God I thanke him of his goodnesse, hath not permitted me to bee one of thofe women, that like hipocrites do mumble their Paternofter to fainets: appearing outwardly to be devout and holy and in Fruift doe bring forth Deuils, and al kinds of vices, specially ingratitude, which is a vice that doth suck and dry vp the fountaine of godly Piety. Life is deare to mee (as naturally it is to all) next which I esteeme myne honor, which is to be preferred before life, bicaufe without honor life is of no regard. And where man and woman do liue in shame notorious to the world, the fame may be termed a liuing death rather than a life. But the loue that I beare to mine onely beloued Aloisfo here prefent, I do esteeme aboue al the Jewels and treaures of the world, whose personage I do regard more than mine owne Lyfe. The reafon that moueth me thereto is very great, for before that I loued him or euer ment to fixe my mind that way, he dearely regarded me, continually duetifing which way he might win and obtain my
loue, sparing no trauel by Night and Day to seeke the same. For which tender affection should I shew myself vnhind and froward? God forbid. And to be playn with your honors, he is more deare and acceptable vnto me, than the balles of mine own eyes, being the chiefeft things that appertain to the furniture of the body of man, without which no earthly thing can be gladsome and joyful to the fense, and feelinge. Last of all his amorous, and affectionate demonstration of his loue towards me, by declaringe himselfe to be carefull of mine honor, rather more willinge to beflow his owne, than to suffer the same to be touched with the leaft suspicion of dishonesty, I can not choose, but so faythfully imbrace, as I am ready to guage my life for his fake, rather than his finger shoulde ake for offence. And where hath there bene euer found futch liberality in any louer? What is he that hath bene euer fo prodigall, to employ his life (the moft speciall pledge in this worlde,) rather than hee would suffer his beloued to incurre dishoneste? Many hyftoryes haue I red, and Chronicles of our time, and yet I haue found few or none comparable vnto thys Gentleman, the like of whom be so rare and seldome as white Crowes, or Swannes of colour blacke. O finguler liberality, never hearde of before. O fact that can neuer be sufficiently prayfed. O true loue moft vnfayned. Maister Aloifio rather than he would haue my fame any one iote to be impayred, or to suffer any shadow of suspicion to blemishe the fame, frankly hath confessed himselfe to be a theefe, and murdrer, regardinge mee and mine honor more than himselfe, and life. And albeit that he might a thousand wayses haue faued himselfe without the imprisonement and aduerity which he hath fauyned: neuertheleffe after he had sayd, beinge then paft remembrance through the fall, that he fell downe from my window, and perceyued how much that confession would prejudice and hurt my good name, and hurt the known honesty of the fame, of his good wyll did chose to dye rather than to speake any words that might breede yll opinion of mee, or the leaft thinge of the worlde that might ingender infamy and flaunder. And therefore not able to revoke the words hee had spoken of the fall, nor by any meanes could hee colour the fame, hee thought to faue the good name of another by his owne hurt. If he then thus redily and liberally hath protruded his life into manifest daunger
for my benefit and sauguard, preferring mine honour aboue the
care of himselfe, shall not I abandon all that I have, yea and
therewithall hazard mine honor for his saluation? But what?
Shall I didayne bountifully to imploie my selfe and all the
endeavor of my Frendes for his deliuerie? No, no (my Lords) if
I had a thousand liues, and so many honors at my commannde-
ment, I woulde give them all for his releuye and comfort, yea
if it were possible for me to recouer a fresh x.c.m. lyues, I
woulde so frankly befolw them all, as euer I desird to liue, that
I might enjoy mine owne Aloifio. But I am forry, and euer
shal be forry, for that it is not lawful for me to do more for him,
than that which my power and possibillity is able. For if he
should die, truely my life could not endure: if he were depreied
of life, what pleasure shoulde I haue to liue in this world after him:
whereby (moffe honorable and righteous iudge,) I beleue before
the honest, not to loose any one iote of myne honor, bicaufe I
being (as you may see) a yonge Woman and a Widow defirous
to marry againe, it is lawful for me to loue and to bee beloued, for
none other intent (whereof God is the onely iudge) but to attaine
a husbande according to my degre. But if I shoulde lose my
reputation and honor, why shoulde not I adventure the fame for
hym, that hath not spared hys own for me? Now to come to the
effect of the matter, I do say wyth al dutifull reverence, that it
is an accusation altogether falfe and vntrue, that euer mayster
Aloifio came to my house as a Theefe against my wil. For what
neede he to be a thefe, or what neede had he of my goodes, that is
a Lorde and owner of twenty times so muche as I haue? Alas
good Gentleman, I dare depoie and guage my lyfe, that he neuer
thoughte muche leffe dyd any robbery or thing vnlaueful, where-
with iustly he may be charged, but he repayred to my hous
with my content, as a louing and afectionate Louer, the circum-
stance whereof, if it be duly marked, muft aduouch the fame to
be of trouth infallible. For if I had not gien him licence to
come, how was it possible for him to conuey his ladder so high,
that was made but of Ropes, and to fasten the fame to the iaume
of the window, if none within did helpe hym? Againe, howe could
the Window of the Chaumber be open at that time of the night,
which is still kept shut, if it had not bene by my content? But
I with the helpe of my mayde threwe downe to him a little Rope, whereunto he tyed his Ladder and drewe the same vp, and making it fo fast, as it could not vndo, gaue a signe for him to Mounte. But as both our ill Fortune would haue it, before I could catch any hold of him, to mine inefimable griefe and hart's forrow he fell downe to the ground. Wherefore (my Lords) I befeech your honours to reuoke the confession wherein he hath made hymselfe to be a theefe. And you maister Aloifio declare the truth as it was, fith I am not afhamed in this honourable assemblie to tel the fame. Beholde the letters (my Lordes) which fo many tymes he wrote vnto me, wherein hee made suite to come to my speache, and continually in the fame doth call me Wyfe. Beholde the Ladder, which till nowe, did still remayne in my chaumber. Beholde my maide, whych in all mine afferayres, is as it were myne owne hande and helper." Aloifio being hereupon demanded by the Lordes of the articles, which he in hir tale had recited, confesed them al to be true: who alfo at the same inftant was discharged. The Duke greatly commended them both, hir for hir founte audacity, in defence of an innocent Gentleman, and him for his honour, and modesty, by seeking to prefere the Fame and good reporte of a vertuoufe Gentlewoman. Whych done, the Counsell diifassembled and brake up. And the friendes of both the parties accompanied them home to the house of mistrefse Gifmonda, where to the great reioyce, and pleature of all men, they were folemneely maried in fumptuous and honourable wife, and Aloifio with hys Wyfe lyued in great prosperity long time after. Mistrefse Lucia, and mistrefse Ifotta, at the expyred tyme were deliuered of two goodly fonnes, in whom the Fathers tooke great Ioy, and delight. Who wyth their Wyues after that tyme liued very quietly, and well, one louing an other like naturall Brethren, many times sporting among themselves discretely at the deceipts of their Wyues. The wifedom of the Duke alfo was wonderfullly extolled and commended of all men, the fame whereof was increased and bruted throughout the Region of Italy. And not without caufe. For by hys prudence and aduife, the Dominion of the State, and Common wealth was amplified and dilated. And yet in th'ende being old and impotent, they vnkindly depofed him from his Dukedom.
THE TWENTY-SEVENTH NOUELL.

The Lorde of Virle, by the commandement of a fayre younge Wydow called Zilia, for hys promise made, the better to attaine hir loue, was contented to remayne dumbe the space of three yeares, and by what means he was reuenged, and obtayned hys suite.

They that haue spent their youth in humayne follies, and haue followed the Vanities of loue, not addicted to the contemplation of high secrets, nor haue made entry here on Earth, to inlarge and amplyfy the boundes of their honor and Estimation. Thofe Worldlings (I say) and embracers of transitory pleasures, shall witnæf with me, and confirme, this olde and auncient Theme and proposition to be true which is: that the Beauty, and comely grace of a Woman, is the very true and naturall adamant (for the attræctive power, and agreeable quality there inclosed,) to draw vnto it the hearts, and affections of men: which hath made man beleue, that the same onely effence, was sent downe from aboue to serue both for joy and torment together. For the amplyfyinge of which proposition, I will not bring forth, the immoderate loue of Paris by forfaking his owne Natiue country of Troy, to visite fayre Helena in Greece, nor yet tell how Hercules gaue ouer his mace to handle the Diftafæ, vpon the commandement of Omphale, nor yet how Sampfon and Salomon were fotted in the flaueries of Dalida and other concubines. But my discourse here folowing shall ring out a loud Peale, of a meane Gentlewoman, of Piedmount, that shewed no favor or Curtesy at all to her supplicant, a Gentleman not inferior to Paris for his actiuitie and prowess: which for her seruice and atchyeues of her loue, refused not to bee dombe the space of many yeares, and to giue ouer the best porcion of his fences wherewith the Almighty, made Man differente from brute and sauage Beastes. If this thing declare not sufficiently the force and power of that attræctive and drawing power in woman, no other example is worthy to be preferred. Thofe aforefayd and many other haue voluntarily yoaked themselves in the chains of loue's obedience, rendreth the maffe of
their mirye corps to the flauery thereof, but that any haue franckely tyed vp their Tongue, the chieuest Instrument of the bodies furniture: in honorable assembly or where dexterity of service shoulde make him glorious, the like of that subiection was never feene or founde. And yet our fathers dayes did see this miracle wrought by a Woman, vpon a Gentleman very wife, and well trained vp in all good exercise. This example, and what this Malapert Dame did gaine, by the penance of this louing knight, shal in this discoursye be manifestly pronounced. The City of Thurin (as is well knowne to them that haue travelled Piedmont) is the ornament and bulwark of al the Countrey, fo well for the natural fite of the place, as for the artificial and industrious worke of man’s hande, which hath instauerd and furnisht with great magnificence, that which nature had indifferently enryched, for the rudeneffe and little knowledg of the time past. Now besides this stately and strong city, there standeth a little towne named Montcall, a place no leffe strong, and of good defence, than wel planted in a faire and rich foyle. In this Towne there dwelt a Gentlewoman a widow called Zilia, beautiful amongst the most excellent fayre Gentlewomen of the countrey, which country (besides other happy and heauenly influences) seemeth to be specially fauored, for hauing the most fairest and curteous Gentlewomen, aboue any other within the compasse of Europa. Notwithstanding this faire Silia, degenerating from the nature of hir climate was fo haggard and cruel, as it might haue ben thought, she had ben rather nourished and brought vp amid the most defert mountaines of Sauoy, than in the plefant and rich Cham-pian Countreye, watred and moystened with Eridanus, the father of Riuers, at this Day called the Pau, the largenelle whereof doth make men to maruel, and the fertility allureth eoch man to be desirous to inhabit vpon the same. This fayre rebellious Widow, albeit, that she was not aboue xxiv. or xxv. yeres of age, yet protested neuer more to be subieect to man, by mariage, or other-wife, thinking her selfe wel able to live in single life: a Minde truly very holy and commendable, if the pricks of the flesh do obey the firt motions and adhortations of the spirit, but where youth, pleasure, and multitude of futers do address their endeuour
against that chastity (which is lightly enterpryfed) the Apostels counsel oughte to be followed, who willeth yong widows to marry in Christ, to avoid the temptations of the flesh, and to flye offens-sive launder and dishonour before men. This mistresse Zilia (hir husband being dead) only bent hir felfe to enrich hir house, and to amplify the possession of a little infant which she had by hir late departed Husband. After whose death she became so couetous, as hauing remoued, and almost cut of quite the woundt port she vsed in hir husband’s dayes, imploied hir maids in houfhold affaires, thinking nothing to be wel done that pased not through hir owne Hands. A thinge truely more praysfe worthy, than to see a forte of effeminate, fine and daynty fyngred Dames, that thinke their honor diminisht yf they holde but their Nose ouer their Housholde Matters, where theyr Hande and Dylygence were more requisite, for so much as the mystresse of a House is not placed the Cheyfe to heare onely the reacons of them that Labor, but thereunto to put hir hands, for hir presente eye seemeth to gie a certyn perfection to the worke that the Seruauentes doe by hir commandement. Which caufed the Hystoryans in tymes past, to describe vnto the Posterity a Gentlewoman called Lucretia, not babbling amongs young girles, or running to feaftes and Maigames, or Masking in the night, withoute any regard of the honor and dygnitye of hir race and house, but in hir Chaumber Sowing, Spinning and Carding, amids the Troup of hir Mayden Seruauents: wherein our mystresse Zilia paffed the most part of hir time, spending no minute of the day, without some honest exercife, for that she the rather did for that she liked not to be seene at Feaftes, or Bankets, or to be gadding vp and downe the freetes, wandring to Gardeyns or places of pleasure, although to fetch places youth sometimes may have their honest repayre to refresh their wearied bodies with vertuous recreation, and thereby rejoyce the heauineffe of their mynde. But this Gentlewoman was so seuer in following the rigorous, and contrayned maners of our auncients, as impossible it was, to see hir abroade: except it were when she went to the Church to heare deuine servise. This Gentlewoman seemed to have stuid the divinity of the Ægyptians which paynt Venus holding a key before hir mouth, and setting
hir Fote vpon a Tortus, signifying vnto us thereby the duety of a chaffe Woman, whose tongue ought to bee locked, that shee speake not but in tyme and place, and her feete not straying or wandering, but to kepe hir selfe within the limits of hir owne houfe, except it be to serue God, and sometimes to render bounden duety to them which brought them into light. Moreouer Zilia was so religious (I will not say superstitious) and rigorous to obserue customes, as shee made it very squeueish and straung to kiffe a Gentleman that met hir, a ciuility which of long time hath bene obferued, and yet remayneth in the greatest parte of the Worlde, that Gentlewomen do welcome straungers and Guests into their houfes with an honest and chaffe kiffe. Notwithstandinge the institution and profession of this Wyddow had wiped away this poynete of hir youth: whether it were for that she esteemed hirselfe so fayre as all men were vnworthy to touch the vtrter partes of so rare and pretious a vefell, or that hir great, and inimitable chastity made hir so straunge, to refue that which hir duety and honour woulde haue permitted hir to graunt. There chaunced about this time that a Gentleman of the Countrey, called Sir Philiberto of Virle, esteemed to be one of the moft valiant gentlemen in those parts, repayred vpon an holy day to Montcall, (whose houfe was not very farre of the Towne) and being at diuine seruice, in place of occupying his Sence and Mynde in heavenly things, and attending the holy words of a Preacher, which that day declared the worde of God vnto the people, hee gaue himselfe to contemplate the excellent beauty of Zilia, who had put of for a while hir mourninge vayle, that she might the better beholde the good father that preached, and receyue a little ayre, becaufe the day was extreme hot. The Gentleman at the first blushe, when hee sawe that sweete temptation before his eyes, thought himselfe rapt aboue the thirde heauen, and not able to withdraw his looke, he fed himselfe with the Venome which by little, and little, so seased vpon the foundest parts of bys mynde, as afterwards being rooted in heart, he was in daunger still to remayne there for a Guage, wythout any hope of eafe or comforte, as more amply this followinge discourse, shall glue you to vnderstannde. Thus all the morning hee behelde the Gentlewoman, who made no more
account of them, that wyth great admiration did behold hir, than they themselues did of their life, by committing the fame to the handes of a Woman fo cruell. This Gentleman being come home to his lodging enquired what sayre Wyddow that was, of what calling, and behauior, but hew heard tell of more truely than he would of good will haue known or desired to haue ben in hir, whom he did presently chose to be the only mistrefse of his moft secret thoughts. Now vnderstandyng well the stubburne Nature, and vnciule Manner of that Wyddowe, hew coulde not tell what parte to take, nor to what Sainct to vow his Deuotion, to make fitte vnto hir hew thought it tyme loft, to bee hir Servaunt, it was not in his power, hauing already ingaued his Lyberty into the handes of that beauty, whych once holding captiue the hearte of men, will not infrachize them fo soone as Thought and Wyll desire. Wherefore baytinge hymself with hope, and tickled wyth lour, he determined whatsoever chaunced, to loue hir, and to affay if by long seruice he could lenifie that harde hearte, and make tender that vnpliaunt wyll, to haue pitty vpon the Payne which shew saw him to endure, and to recompence hys labourfome Trauayles, which hew thought were vertuously imploied for ganyng of hir good grace. And vpon this fettled deliberation, he retired agayne to Virle (fo was his house named) where dipofinge hys thinges in order, he returned agayne to Montcall to make his long refaunce there, to put in readines his furniture, and to welde his artillary with futch industrie, as in the ende he might make a reaasonable breach to force and take the place: for furprising whereof, hew hazarded great daungers, the rather that himselfe might first be taken. And where his affaults and pollicies could not preuayle, hew minded to content his Fancy wyth the pleasure and paffythe that hew was to receyue in the contemplation of a thing fo sayre, and of an image fo excellent. The memory of whom rather increaed his paine than yelded comfort, did rather minifter corrosiue poyfon, than glie remedy of eafe, a cause of more cruell and fodayne death, than of prolonged lyfe. Philiberto then being become a citizen of Montcal, vfed to frequent the Church more than hew was wont to doe, or his devotion serued hym, and that bycauе he was not able elfwhere to enjoy

VOL. III.
the presence of hys Saynct, but in places and Temples of Deuotion: which no doubt was a very holy and worthyDisposition, but yet not meete or requisite to obserue such holy places for those intents, which ought not to bee prophaned in things so fonde and foolifhe, and Actes so contrary to the Institution, and mynde of thofe, whych in tymes past were the fircle Founders and Erectours of Temples. Seignior Philiberto then mouued wyth that Religious Superftition, made no Conscience at al to speake vnfo hir wythin the Church. And true it is, when she went out of the fame, he (mouued wyth a certayne familiar curtefie, naturall to eche Gentleman of good bringing vp) many tymes conducted hir home to hir houfe, not able for all that (what fo euer hir sayd) to win the thing that was able to ingender any little folace, which greeued him very much: for the cruel woman fained as though she vnderfloode nothing of that he fayde, and turning the Wayne agaynft the Oxen, by contrary talke fhee began to tell hym a tale of a Tubbe, of matters of hir Houfeholde, whereunto hir gaue fo good heede, as fhee did to the hearing of his complaynts. Thus thefe two, of divers Affections, and mouued wyth contrary thoughtes, spake one to another, without apt aunfwer, to eyther’s talke. Whereby the Gentleman conceived an assured argument of hys Ruine, who voyde of all hope, and meanes, practifed with certayne Dames of the City, that had familiar accessfe vnfo hir houfe, and vfed frequent conuerfation wyth hys rebellious Lady Zilia. To one of them, then hir determined to communicate hys secrets, and to doe hir to vnderstand in deede the only caufe that made him to foiforne at Montcall, and the grieve which he suffered, for that he was not able to discover his torment vnfo hir, that had giuen him the wounde. Thys Gentleman therefore, repayred to one of his neigbour, a Woman of good corage, which at other tymes had experimented what meates they feede on that fit at Venus Table, and what bitterneffe is intermingled amid thofe drinkes that Cupido quaffeth vnfo hys Guefles. Vnto whom (hauing before conjured hir to kepe close that whych hir woulde declare) he discovered the secrets of hys mynde, expressinge hys loue wythout naming hys Lady before he heard the aunfwer of hys Neigbour, who vnderstanding almost to what purpose the
affections of the Pacient were directed, sayd vnto hym: "Sir, needful it is not to vfe longe orations, the loue that I beare you for the honest qualities whych hytherto I have knowne to be in you, shal make me to keepe silent, that whereof as yet I do not know the matter, and the assurance you haue, not to bee abused by mee, contrayneth me to warrant you, that I wyll not spare to do you all the pleasure and honest seruice I can." "Ah mistrefse," (aunswered sir Philiberto) "so long as I lyue, I will not sayle to acknowledge the Liberality of your endeour by offeringe your selfe paciently to heare, and secretly, to keepe the Words I speake accordingly as they deferue: and that (whych is more than I require) you doe assure me that I shall finde fuch one of you as wil not spare to giue your ayde. Alas, I refemble the good and wyfe Captayne, who to take a forte doeth not only ayde himselfe with the forwardnesse, and valiaunce of his Souldiers, but to spare them, and to auoyde slaughter for makinge of way, planteth his cannon, and battereth the Walle of the fort, which hee would affaile, to the intent that both the Souldier, and the ordinaunce may perfourme and suffifie the perfection of the plat, which hee hath framed and deuísed within his pollitike heade. I haue already encouraged my souldiers, and haue loft the better part truely in the skirmish which hath deliuered vnto mee my sweete cruell Ennimy. Now I am druen to make ready the fire, which refeth in the kindled match of your conceiptes, to batter the fort hytherto inexpugnable, for any assaullt that I can make." "I vnderstand not" (sayd she fmylyng) "these labyrinths of your complaunts, except you speake more playn. I neuer haunted the Warres, ne knewe what thynde it is to handle weapons, improper and not feemely for myne estate and kynde." "The Warre" (quod he) whereof I speake, is so naturall and common, as I doubt not, but you haue sometymes affayed, with what sleigthes and camisados men vfe to surpryse their enemies, howe they plant their ambushes, and what meanes both the affaylant and defendant ought to vfe." "So far as I see" (sayd shee) "there refeth nothing for vs, but the assurance of the field, fith wee bee ready to enter in combat: and doe thinke that the fort shall not bee harde to winne, by reason of the Walles, dikes, rampers, bulwarks,
platformes, counterforts, curtines, vamewres and engins which you have prepared, besides a numbre of falfe brayes and flanks, placed in good order, and the whole defended from the thundringer Cannons and Bombardes, which do amaze the wandring enemy in the field. But I pray you leavynge these warlike Tumults, to speake more boldly without these extrauagantes and digreffions, for I take pitye to fee you thus troubled: ready to exceede the boundes of your modesty and wonded wyfedomne." "Do not maruell at all mistrefle" (quad he) "fith accordyng to new occurrentes and alterations, the purpose, talke, and counfel ordinarily do change I am become the seruaunt of one which maketh me altogethre lyke vnto those that bee madde, and bound in Chains, not able to speake or fay any thing, but what the fpyrites that be in them, do force them to vtter. For neither will I thynke, or speake any thing, but that which the Enchaunter Lonne doth commaunde and suffer to exprefse, who so rygorously doth vexe my hearte, as in place wher bouldeneffe is most requyfite, bee deprueth me of force, and leaueth mee without any Courte-nance. And being alone, God knoweth how frankly I doe wander in the place, where myne enemy may commaunde, and with what hardineffe I do inuade hir prouince. Alas, is it not pity then to fee these diversities in one felfe matter, and vpon one very thing? Truely I would endure wyllingly all these travailes, if I wyft in the end, my seruice woulde be accepted, and hoped that my Martyrdom shoule fynde reliefe: but liuing in this vncertainty, I must needes norysh the hunger and solace of the vnhappy, which are wifhes and vaine hopes, truffing that some God wyll gayne me a faythful friend that will affaye to rid me from the hell, into the which I am throwne, or else to shorten thys Miserable lyfe, which is a hundred tymes more paynfull then Death." In fayinge so, he began to fighe so strangely as a man would haue thought that two Smithes fledges working at the forge, had gyuen two blowes at his fomake, so vehement was the inclosed winde within his heart, that made him to fetche forth those terrible sifhes, the Eyes not forgetting to yeld forth a Riuer of Teares, which gushynge forthe at the centre of hys Hearte, mounted into his Braynes, at lengthe to make issue through the Spoute, proper to the Chanell
of futch a Fountayne. Which the Gentlewoman seyng, moved with compassion, coulde not contain also from Weepyng, and therewythall fayde vnto him: “Although mine etate and reputation, which to this day I have kept vnspotted, defend the use of my good wyl in al things that may defame mine honor, yet sir, feign the extremity which you suffer to be vnfained, I wil somewhat stretch my conscience, and assay to succor you with so good heart, as frankly you truft me with the secrets of your thought. It refeth then now for me to know what she is, to whome your deucions be inclined whose heart and mind I wil so relief with the taffe of your good wil, as I dare giue warrant, her appetit shal accept your profred seruice, and truly that woman may count her self happy that shal intertain the offer of a gentleman that is so honest and curteous, who meaneth with al fidelitie to aduance and honor, not onely the superficial ornament of hir beauty, but the inward vertues of hir constant mind. And truly the earth seldom yeldeth those frutes in the harts of men in these our barren days, they being ouer grown with the shrubbes of disloialty the fame choke vp the plantes of true Fidelity, the fedes whereof are sownen and replanted in the foyle of womens hartes, who not able to depart and use the force and effects thereof will put vpon them conditions that bee cruell, to punifh the Foolyfhi indifcretion of tryflying Louers, who disguised with the vizard of fained friend-ship, and paynted with coloured Amity, languishing in sighes and sorrowes, goe aboute to assay to deceiue the flexible Nature of them that prodigially employ their honor into the hands of futch cruel, inconstante and foolyfhi futers.” “Ah Miftrefse” answered the Gentleman: “howe may I bee able to recompence that onely benefite which you promyfe me now? But be sure that you fee heere a Souldier and Gentleman presente which shall no leffe bee prodigall of hys Lyfe to doe you seruyce, than you bee lyberall of your reputation, to eafe his Paines. Now whith it pleaseth you to shew futch favour to offer me your helpe and support in that which payneth me, I require no more at your hands, but to beare a letter which I shal wryte to myftrfes Zilia, with whome I am so farre in loue, as if I do receiue no solace of my grieue, I know not howe I shal auoyde the cuttyng of the Threed, whych the
fpynnyn g syfts haue twisted to prolonge my lyfe, that henceforth can receiue no succor if by your meanes I do not attcheue the thing that holdeth me in bondage." The Gentlewoman was very sorrowful, when she vnderstoode that Seignior Philiberto had bent his Loue vpon futch one, as would not contente to that requeste, and mutch leffe would render rest vnto hys myfferyes, and therefore enforced hir felfe to moue that Foolyshe Fantafye out of his head. But he beyng already resolued in thys myffyape, and the fame perceyued by her in the ende she sayde: "To the intente ftr that you may not thinke that I doe meane to excufe the Satyffactyon of my promyse, make youre Letters, and of my Fayth I wil delyuer them. And albeyt I knowe verye well what bee the Honoures and Glorye of that Pylgryme, yet I wyll render to you agayne the true aunfwer of hir fpeache whereby you maye confider the gayne you are lyke to make, by purfuing a Woman (although faire) of so small desert." The Gentleman sayled not to gyue her heartye Thankes, prayinge hir to tarry vntyll hee had written his letters: whereunto she moft willingly obeyed. He then in his chaumber, began to fantafie a hundred hundred matters to write vnto his Mistrefle, and after he had fixed them in minde tooke Incke and Paper writing as followeth.

The Letters of Seignior Philiberto of Virle, to Mistrefle Zelia of Monteall.

"The passion extreeme which I endure, (Madame) through the fercuent loue I beare you, is futch, as besides that I am assuered of the little affection that refeth in you towards me agayne, in respeft of that incredible seruitude which my desire is ready to employ, I haue no power to commaunde my force, ne yet to rid my felfe from my vowed devotion and will to your incomparable beauty, although euen from the beginning I felt the pricks of the mortal shot which now torments my mynde. Alas, I do not know vnder what influence I am borne, nor what Fate doth guide my yeares, fith I doe perceyue that heauen, and loue, and hir whom alone I honor, doe confirme themselues with one affent to fecke myne ouerthrow. Alas, I thinke that all the powers aboue conspired together, to make me be the faythfull man, and perpetuall
feruaunt of you my mistrefse deare, to whom alone, I yeilde my heart afflicted as it is, and the ioy of hidden thoughts nourfed in my minde, by the contemplation and remembraunce of your excellent and perfect graces, whereof, if I be not fauored, I waif for death, from whych euyn now I fly: not for feare of that whych the can doe, or of the ugly shape which I conceyue to be in hir, but rather to confirme my life, this Body for instrumet to excercife the myndes conceypts for doinge your Commanudements, which Body I greatly feare shal proue the vnworthy crueltie, both of your gentle nouriture, and of those graces which Dame Nature moift abundantly hath powred in you. Be sure Madame that you shal shortlye see the Ende of him, whiche attendeth yet to beare fo mutch as in him doeth lye, the vehement loue into an other world, which maketh me to pray you to have pity on him, who (attending the rest and final sentence of his Death or Lyfe) doth humbly kiffe your white and delicate handes, befeecching God to giue to you like ioy as his is, who defireth to be, 

Wholy yours or not to be at all

Philiberto of Virle.

The Letter written, clofed and sealed, he deliuered to his neighbour, who promyfed hym agayne to bryng him answere at Night. Thus this Messenger went hir way, leauing this pore languiſhyng Gentlemen hoping against hope, and fayning by and by some ioy and pleafure, wherein he bained himſelf with great contented minde. Then fodayly he called againe vnto remembraunce, the crueltie and inciulity of Zilia, which fhewed before his eyes fo many kindes of Death, as tymes he thought vpon the fame, thinking that he saw the choler wherewith his little curteous mistrefe furiously did intertaine the messenger, who findinge Zilia coming forth of a garden adjoyninge to her house, and hauing faluted her, and receiued like curteous falutation would haue framed hir talke, by honest excuse in the vnfeemly charge and meffeage: to hir vnto whom she was fent, and for fome eafe to the pore gentleman which approched nearer death than life. But Zilia break of hir talke faying: "I maruell mutch Gentle neighbor to fee you heere at this time of the day, knowing your honest cuſtome is to let paffe no minute of the tyme, except it be employed in some vertu-
ous exercise." "Mistresse" answered the messenger, "I thank you for the good opinion you have of me, and do pray you to continue the fame. For I do assure you that nothing vayne or of lyttle effect hath made me slacke my businesse at this time, which me think I do not forlow, when I inforce my selfe to take pitye and mercy vpon the afflicted and the substance thereof I woulde disclose, if I feared not to offend you, and break the love which of long tyme betweene vs two hath ben frequented." "I know not" (said Zilia) "whereunto your words do tend, although my Heart doth throbbe, and minde doth move to make mee thinke your purposed talke to bee of none other effecte, than to say a thing which may redound to the prejudice of myne honour. Wherefore I pray you do not disclose what shalbe contrary, (be it neuer so little) to the duety of Dames of our Degree." "Mistresse" sayd the Neighbour, "I suppose that the lyttle Lykelihoode touchynge in you the thinge for the helpe whereof I come, hath made you feele some passion, contrary to the greefe of him that indures so mutch for your sake. Unto whome without feare of your dypleasure, I gaue my Faithe in Pledge to beare this Letter." In saying so, she drew the fame out of hir Bosome, and presentyng it to cruell Silia, she sayde: "I befeeche you to thinke that I am not ignoraunt of the evyll wherewith the Lorde of Virle is affected, who wrote these letters. I promyfed him the duety of a Messenger towards you: and so constrayned by promyfe I could doe no leffe, than to deluyer you that which hee doeth sende, with Seruycie futch as shall endure for euer, or if it shall pleafe you to accept him for futch a one as hee desyreth to be. For my parte I onely praye you to reade the Contentes, and accordynglye to gyue mee Aunfwere: for my Fayth is no further bounde, but truftelye to report to hym the thinge whereuppon you shalbee resolued." Zilia which was not wonte to receyue very ofte futch Ambassades, at the firste was in mind to breake the Letters, and to retoure the Messenger wythout aunfwere to hir shame. But in the Ende takynge Heart, and chaunging hir affectyon, she red the Letters not without shewing some very great alteration outwardely, which declared the meanynge of hir thought that diversely did stryue wythin hir mynde: for todayuly shee
chaunged her Coloure twyce or thrice, nowe waxing pale lyke the increafynge Moone Eclypfed by the Sunne, when shee feeleth a certayne darkenyng of hir borowed Lyghte, then the Vermilyon and coloured Taynte came into hir Face agayne, wyth no leffe hewe than the blomed Rofe newelye budded forthe, whych Encreased halfe fo mutch agayne, the excellencye of that wherewyth Nature had indued hir. And then she paused a whyle. Notwythstandynge, after that shee had red, and red agayne hir Louer's letter, not able to diffeembe hir foolifhe anger which vexed hir heart, shee sayde vnto the mistreffe messanger: "I would not haue thought that you, being a woman of good fame would (by abufinge your duety,) haue bene the ambaffador of a thing fo vncomely for your Eflate, and the house where of you come, and towards me which neuer was futch one (ne yet pretend to be.) And truft me it is the loue I beare you, which shal for this tyme make me diffeembe what I thinke, referuinge in silence, that whych (had it come from an other) I would haue publisshed to the great difhonor of hir that maketh fo little accompnt of my chaftity. Let it suffife therefore in tyme to come for you to thinke and beleue, that I am chaft and honest: and to aduertife the Lord of Virle to proceede no further in his fute: for rather will I dy, than agree to the leaft poynct of that which hir desieres of mee. And that he maie knowe the fame, be well affured that hir shal take his leave of that priuate talke which sometymes I vfed with him to my great dishonor, as far as I can fee. Get you home therefore, and if you loue your credit fo mutch, as you fee me curious of my chaftity, I befeech you vse no further talke of hym, whom I hate fo mutch, as his folly is excesșive, for I do little esteeme the amorous Toyes and fayned passions, whereunto futch louinge fooles doe fuffer themselues to be caried headlong." The messenger ashamed to heare hir selfe thus pinched to the quicke, aunswered hir very quietly without mowing of hir pacience: "I pray to God (mistreffe) that he may recouer the different diseafe al moft incurable in eyther of you twayne, the fame being fo vehement, as altered into a phrenesie, maketh you in this wyle, incapable of reafon." Finishing these wordes shee tooke hir leave of Zilia, and arriviied to the Louer's house, she founde him
lying upon his bed, rather dead than a live: who seeing his
neighbour returned backe agayne, with Face so sadde, not tarying
for the aunfwer which he was about to make, he began to say:
"Ah infortunate Gentleman; thou payest weel the v fury of thy
pleasures paft when thou diddest lyue at lyberty, free from those
trauayles which now do put thee to death, without suffering thee
to dy. Oh happy, and more than happy had I ben, if inconstant
Fortune had not denised this treason, wherein I am surprized and
cought, and yet no raunfome can redeeme from prifon, but the
moft miserable death that euer poore louver suffred. Ah Mistrefse,
I knowe well that Zilia esteemeth not my Letters, ne yet regardeth
my loue, I confesse that I haue done you wrong by thus abufing
your honest amity, for the folace of my payne. Ah fickle loue,
what foole is hee which doth commit hymselfe to the rage and
fury of the Waues of thy foming and tempestuous Seas? Alas I
am entred in, with great, and gladsome cheere, through the glister-
ing fhew before myne eyes of the faynt fhining Sunne beames,
whereunto as foone as I made fayle, the fame denied me light of
purpofe to thrust me forth into a thousand winds, tempefts, and
raging tempefts of Rayne. By meanes whereof I fee no meane at
all to hope for end of my mifhaps: and mutche leffe the shipwracke
that fodainely may rid me from this daunger more intollerable,
than if I were ouerwhelmed wythin the bottomleffe depth of the
mayne Ocean. Ah deceyuer and wily Souldiour, why haft thou
made me enterprife the voyage farre of from thy folitudes and
Wildernefse, to geue me ouer in the middeft of my necffity? Is
this thy maner towards them which franckly followe thy tract,
and pleaunty subdue themselfes to thy trayerous follies? At
leaff wyfe if I fawe fome hope of health I would endure without
complaynt thereof: yea, and it were a more daungerous tempeft.
But O good God, what is he of whom I speake? Of whom do I
attend for folace and releefe? Of him truely which is borne for
the ouerthrow of men. Of whom hope I for health? Of the moft
noyfome poysen that euer was mingled with the fubtileft druggs
that euer were. Whom fhall I take to be my Patron? He which
is in ambush trayerously to catch me, that he may martir me
worfe than he hath done before. Ah cruel Dame, that meaureft
fo euill, the good will of him that neuer purposed to trespasse the least of thy commandements. Ah, that thy beauty should finde a Subiect fo stubborne in thee, to torment them that loue and honor thee. O maigre and vukinde recompence, to expell good seruaunts that be affectionate to a seruice so iust and honeft. Ah Basiliske, coloured ouer with pleasure and swetnesse, how bath thy fight diffperdes his poyson throughout mine heart? At least wise if I had some drugge to repell thy force, I should live at ease, and that without this fute and trouble. But I feele and prowe that this sentence is more than true:

No phyficke hearbes the griefe of loue can cure,
Ne yet no drugge that Payne can well assure.

Alas, the feare cloath will not serue, to tent the wound the time shall be but loft, to launch the fore, and to value the fame it breeds myne overthow. To be short, any dressing can not auayle, except the hand of hir alone which gau the wounde. I woulde to God shee sawe the bottome of my heart, and viewed the Clozet of my mynde, that shee might iudge of my firme sayth and know the wrong she doth me by hir rigor and froward will. But O unhappy man, I feele that she is fo resolued in obstinate mynde, as hir rest seemeth only to depend vpon my Payne, hir eafe vpon my griefe, and hir ioy vpon my sadnesse." And saying so, began straungly to weepe, and sighing betwene, lamented, in so mutch as, the mistrefse meflaunger not able to abide the griefe and paynefull trauaiyle wherein shee saw the poore gentleman wrapped, went home to hir houfe: notwithstanding shee told afterward the whole succeffe of his loue to a Gentleman, the friend of Philiberto. Now this Gentleman was a companion in armes to the Lorde of Virle, and a very familar Freend of his, that went about by all meanes to put away those foolifie, and Frantick conceynts out of his sanfie, but hee profited as mutch by his endeuour, as the passionate gayned by his heauines: who determining to dye, yelded so mutch to care and grief, as he fell into a greenous sicknes, which both hindred him from sleepe, and also his Appetite to eate and drinke, gessing himselfe to mufe vpon his follies, and fansied dreames, without hearing or admitting any man to speake
vtnto hym. And if percaunce hee hearkened to the persuasions of his frends, he ceafted not his complaynt, bewayling the cruelty of one, whom he named not. The Phisitians round about were fought for, and they coulde none no judgement of his malady (neyther for all the Signes they saw, or any inspection of his Vrine, or touching of his pulse) but sayd that it was melancholie humor distilling from the Brayne, that caufed the alteration of his fente: howbeit their Arte and knowledge were void of skil to evacuate the groffe Bloud that was congeled of his difeafe. And therefore dispayrying of his health, with hands full of Money, they gauve him ouer. Which his friend and Companion perceiuing, maruellous sorry for his affliction he ceafted not to practife all that he could by Letters, gifts, promifes and complaynts to procure Zilia to visite her pacient. For hee was affured that her onely presence was able to recouer him. But the cruell woman excused her self that she was a Widow and that it shoulde bee vnseemely for one of hir degree (of intente) to visite a Gentleman, whose Parentage and Alliance she knew not. The soliciter of the Lord of Virle his health, seeing how lyttle hys prayers auailed to his implacable gryefe could not tell to what Sainct he might vow himselfe for Counfell, in the ende refolued to sollicite hir again that hadde done the first Message, that the myght eftfons devise some meanes to bryng them to speake togethier. And fynding hir for hys purpofe, thus he sayd vnto hir: "Mystrefse I maruell much that you make fo little accompt of the pore lorde of Virle who lyeth in his Bedde attending for Death. Alas, if euer pitty had place in Woman's heart, I befeech you to gyue your ayde to help him, the meane of whose recovery, is not ignoraunt vnto you." "God is my witneffe" (quod she) "what travaile my heart is willing to undertake to helpe that Gentleman, but in things imposible, it is not in man to determine, or rest assured judgement. I wil go vnto him and comfort hym fo well as I can, that peraduenture my Promymes may eafe some part of his payne: and afterward we wil at leyfure better confider, what is best for vs to do." Herevpon they wente together to see the Pacient, that beganne to looke more chearefull than he dyd before: who seeing the Gentlewoman, laied vnto hir: "Ah mistres, I would to God I had neuer
proued your fidelity, then had I not felt the paffing cruel Heart of hir, that esteemeth more hir honour to praftife rigour and tyranny than with gentlenesse to maintaine the Lyfe of a pore feeble knight.” “Sir,” (faid fie,) “be of good cheare, doe not thus torment your felfe: for I truft to gyue you remedy betwene thys and to morrowe, and wyll doe myne endeuer to caufe you to fpeak with hir, yppon whome wrongfully perchaunce you doe complayne, and who dare not come vnfo you, leaft ill fpeakers conceiue occafion of fupficion, who wil make the report more flaunderous, then remedie for the caufe of your difeafe.” “Ah” (fayd the pacient) “howe joyefull and pleafaunt is your talke? I fee wel that you defire my health, and for that purpose would haue me drinke those liquors, which superflciallay appeare to bee fweete, which afterwardes may make my lyfe a hundred tymes more faint and feeble than now it is.” “Be you there,” fayd fie? “And I fware vnfo you by my faith not to faile to keepe my promyfe, to caufe you fpeak alone with miftrife Zilia.” “Alas, miftrife” fayd the louver, “I afke no more at your handes, that I may heare with myne own eares the laft fentence of hope or defiance.” “Well put your truft in me,” fayd fie, “and take no thought but for your health. For I am assured ere it be longe, to caufe hir to come vnfo you, and then you hall fee whether, my diligence fhall aunfwere the effect of myne attempt.” “Me thinke already” (quod he) “that fickneffe is not able to fay me from going to hir that is the caufe, fith her onely remembrance hath no leffe force in mee, than the clearneffe of the Sun beames to euaporate the thickneffe of the morning miftes.” With that the Gentlewoman tooke her leaue of hym, and went home attendyng opportunity to fpeak to Zilia, whome two or three Dayes after she mette at Church, and they two beyng alone togither in a Chapell, fhe fayd vnfo hir with fayned Teares, forced from her Eyes, and fending forth a Cloud of fighes, these woordes: “Madame, I nothing doubt at al, but the laft Letters which I brought you, made you conceiue fome il opinion of me, which I do gueffe by the frownyng countenance that euer fithens you haue borne me. But when you fhall knowe the hurte which it hath done, I thinke you wyll not be fo harde, and voyde of pitye,
but with pacyence hearken that whych I shall faye, and therythall bee moved to pitye the state of a pore Gentleman, who by your meanes is in the pangs of death.” Zilia, which til then neuer regarded the payne and sicknesse of the pacient, began to sorrow, with futch passion, as not to graunt him further fauor than he had already receiued, but to finde some means to eafe him of his greefe, and then to gyue hym ouer for euer. And therefore she sayd vnto hir neyghbor: “My good frend, I thought that all these futes had beene forgotten, vntill the other day a certen Gentleman praied me to go fee the Lord of Virle, who told me as you do now, that he was in great daunger. And now understanding by you that he waxeth worsse, and worsse, I will be ruled, being well affured of your honesty and vertue, and that you will not aduife me to any thing that shall be hurtfull to myne honour. And when you have done what you can, you shal winne of me so much as nothinge, and geeue no eafe to him at all that wrongfully playneth of my crueltie. For I purpose not to do any proue fact with him, but that which shal be meete for an honeft Gentlewoman, and futch as a faythfull tutor of hir chaflity, may graunt to an honeft and vertuous Gentleman.” “His desire is none other” (sayd the gentlewoman) “for he craueth but your presence, to let you wit by word, that he is ready to do the thing you shal commaund him.” “Alas” sayde Zilia, “it is impossible for me to go to hym without fulpition, which the common people will lightly conceiue of futch light and familiar Behauiour. And rather would I dy than adventure mine honor hitherto conferued wyth great feuerity and diligence. And yet sith you say, that he is in extremes of death, for your sake, I wil not stick to heare him speake.” “I thanke you” (sayd the Messanger) “for the good wil you beare me and for the help you promise vnto the poore passionate Gentleman, whom these newes wil bring on foote againe, and who al the dayes of his life wil do you honor for that good turne.” “Sith it is so (sayd Zilia) to morrow at noone let him come vnto my house, wherein a low chamber, he shal haue leysyre to say to mee his mind. But I purpose by God’s help, to suffer him no further than that which I haue already graunted.” “As it shall please you” (sayd hir neighbour) “for
I craue no more of you but that only fauour, which as a Meffan-
ger of good Newes, I go to shew hym, recommending my selfe in
the meane tyme to your commaunde.” And then she went vnto
the pacient, whom she found walkinge vp and downe the Chaum-
ber, indifferent lufty of his perfon, and of colour meetely frefhe
for the tyme hee left his Bed.” Now when Sir Philiberto saw the
Meffanger, she sayne vnto hir: “And how now myftrefle, what
Newes? Is Zilia fo stubborn as shee was wont to be?” “You
may fee hir.” (fyde she) “if to morrowe at Noone you haue the
heart to aduenture to goe vnto hir house.” “Is it possibile” (fyde
hee embracing hir) “that you haue procured my delayrance
from the misery, wherewith I haue fo long tyme beene affected?
Ah trufty and affured frende, all the dayes of my lyfe I wil
remember that pleafure, and benefit, and by acknowledging
of the fame, shall be ready to render like, when you please
to commaunde, or els let me be counted the moft vncurteuous
Gentleman that ever made profeffion of loue: I will go by God’s
help to see myftrefle Zilia, with intent to endure all vexation,
wherewith Dame Fortune shall afflict me, protesting to vex my
selfe no more, although I fee my wasted hap otherwise to ende
than my defert requireth. But yet agaynst Fortune to contend,
is to warre agaynst my selfe, whereof the Victory can be but
daengerous.” Thus he passed all the day, which seemed to laft
a thousand years to hym, that thought to receyue some good in-
tertainment of hys Lady, in whose Bonds hee was catched before he
thought that Woman’s malice could fo farre exceede, or dispayne
hir venomous Sting. And truly that man is voyde of Sense, whych
suffreth hym selfe fo fondly to bee charmed, fith the pearill of
others before time abused, ought to serve hym for exaumple.
Women be vnto mankinde a greate confusion, and vnwares for
want of hys due foresight, it doth suffer it selfe to bee bounde and
taken captiue by the very thing which hath no being to worke
effect, but by free will. Which Inchauntment of woman’s beauty,
being to men a pleasaunt displeaure, I thinke to bee decked with
that drawinge vertue, and allurement, for chastifieng of their
finnes who once fed and bayted with their fading fauour and
poisoned sweetneffe, forget their owne perfection, and noufled in
their foolifhe Fanfies, they fecke Felicity, and soueraygne delight, in the matter wherein doth lie the summe of their vnhaps. Sem- blaly the vertuous and shamefaile dames, haue not the eyes of their minde so blindfolde, but that they fee whereunto thofe francke seruices, thofe disloyal Faythes and Vyes coloured and fluffed with exterior vertue, doe tende; Who doubt not alfo but fuch louers do imitate the Scorpion, whose Venome lieth in his Tayle, the ende of which is loue beinge the ruine of good Renoume, and the Decay of former vertues. For which caufe the heavens, the Frenede of their sexe, haue giuen them a prouidence, which thofe Gentle, vnfauoured louers terme to be rigor, thereby to proue the deferts of Suters, afwell for their great contenation and prayfe, as for the rest of them that do them seruice. Howbeit this iuft and modest prouidence, that cruell Gentlewoman practified not in hir lover, the Lord of Virle, who was fo humble a feraunant of his vnkinde mistrefle, as his obedience redounded to his great mishap, and folly, as manifeftly may appeare by that whych followeth. Sir Philiberto then thinking to haue gayned mutch by hauing made promise, liberally to speake to his Lady, went vnto hir at the appoynted hour, fo well contented truely of that grace, as all the vnkindnesse past was quite forgot. Now being come to the Lodging of Mistrefle Zilia, he found hir in the deuised place with one of hir maydes attending vpon hir. When she faw him, after a little cold enterentaynment, she began to fay vnto him with fayned ioy, that neuer mouned hir heart, these woordes: “Now sir, I fee that your late ficknesse was not fo strange as I was geeuen to vnderstand, for the good state wherein I fee you prentently to be, which from henceforth shall make mee beleue, that the affections of Men endure fo long as the caufe of their affections continue within their fanfies, mutch like vnto looking Glaffes, which albeit they make the equality or exceffe of things reprented to appeare, yet when the thing feene doth paffe, and vanifhe away, the formes also do voyde out of remembr ance, refembling the wynde that lightly whorleth to and fro through the plane of some deepe valley.” “Ah madame” aunswered he, “how easie a matter it is for the grieffeffe perfon to counterfayt both ioy and diffimulation in one very thing, which not onely
may forget the conceipt that mooueth his affecti0ns, but the obiect must continually remayne in him, as paynted, and grauen in his minde. Which truely as you say is a looking Glasfe, not futch one for all that, as the counterfayted apparaunce of represented formes hath like vigor in it, that the first and true ideas and shapes can so soone vanifh without leaving most perfect impression of futch formes within the minde of him, that liueth vpon their onely remembrance. In this mirror then (which by reason of the hidden force I may well say to bee ardent and burning) haue I looked so well as I can, thereby to form the fustentation of my good hap. But the imagined Shape not able to support futch perfection, hath made the rest of the body to sayle (weakned through the mindes passions) in futch wise as if the hope to recouer this better parte halfe loft, had not cured both, the whole decay of the one had followed, by thinking to give some accomplisment in the other. And if you see me Madame, attayne to some good state, impute the fame I befeech you, to the good will and fauor which I receiue by seeing you in a private place, wherein I conceyue greater joy than euuer I did, to say vnto you the thing which you would not beleue, by words at other times proceeding from my mouth, ne yet by aduertisement signified in my written letters. Notwithstanding I think that my Martirdome is known to bee futch as euery man may perceyue that the Summe of my desiré is onely to ferue and obey you, for so much as I can receyue no greater comforte, than to be commaunded to make repayre to you, to let you know that I am whole (although giuen ouer by Phistians) when you vouchsafe to employ me in your servise, and thinke of my selfe rayfed vp agayne from one hundred thouland deathes at once, when it shall pleafe you to haue pitty vpon the griefe and passion, that I endure. Alas, what causeth my mishap, that the heavenly beauty of yours should make profe of a crueltie so great? Haue you decreed Madame thus to torment mee poore Gentleman that am ready to sacrifise my selfe in your servise, when you shall impart some fauour of your good grace? Do you thinke that my passions be difemblde? Alacke, alacke, the teares which I haue shed, the loffe of luft to eate and drinke, the weary pafted nights, the longe contriued sleepelesse tyme the
restless turmoyle of my confumed corps may wel assure that my loyll heart is of better merite than you esteeme." Then seeing hir to fixe hir eyes vpon the ground, and thinkinge that hee had already wonne hir, he reinforced his humble Speache, and Sighing at thats betwene, not sparinge the Teares, which trickled downe alongs hys Face, he proected his Tale as followeth: "Ah sayre amongs the fayref, woulde you blot that furpaffing Beauty with a crueltie fo furious, as to cause the death of him which loueth you better than himselfe? Ah my withered eyes, which hitherto have bene ferued with two linely fprings to expresse the hidden griefs within the heart, if your vnhap be futch that the only Mistrefle of your contemplations, and cause of your dryrie teares, doe force the Humor to encreafe, which hitherto in futch wife hath emptied my Brayne, as there is no more in mee to moisten your drouth, I am content to endure al extremity, vntil my heart shal feele the laft Pangue, that depriueth yee of nourishment, and me of mine affected Ioy." The Gentlewoman, whether shee was weary of that Oration, or rather doubted that in the end hir chastity would receue some affault through the dismeasured passion which she saw to continue in him, anwered with rigorous words: "You haue talked, and written inough, you haue indifferently well solicited hir, which is throughly resolued in former minde, to keepe hir honor in that worthy reputation of degree, wherein she maynetayneth the fame amongs the best. I haue hitherto suffered you to abuse my patience, and haue shewed that familiarity which they desere not that go about leudly to affayle the chastity of those Women that patiently gieue them care, for the opinion they have conceieved of the shadowing vertues of like foolish Suters. I now doe fee that all your woordes doe tend to beguile mee, and to deprive mee of that you cannot give mee: Which shal bee a warning for me henceforth, more wifely to looke about my busineffe, and more warely to shunne the Charmes of futch as you bee, to the ende that I by bending mine open eares, be not furprised, and overcome wyth your enchaunted Speaches. I pray you then for conclusion, that I heare no more hereof, neyther from you, nor yet from the Ambaffadour that commeth from you. For I neyther will, ne yet pretend to depart to you any
other favour than that which I have enlarged for your comfort: but rather doe protest, that so longe as you abide in this Countrey, I will neyther goe forth in strete, nor suffer any Gentleman to have access into this place except he be my neare Kinfman. Thus for your importunat sute, I will chastife my light content, for harkeninge vnto you in those requestes, which duty and Woman-hoode ought not to suffre. And if you do procede in these your follies, I will seeke redresse according to your desrt, which till now I have deferred, thinking that time would haue put out the ardent heate of your rafh, and wanton youth." The infortunate Lord of Virle, hearing this sharpe sentence, remayned long time without speach, so afromed as if he had bene falne from the Clouds. In the ende for al his despayre he replied to Zilia with Countenance indifferent merry: "Sith it is so madame, that you take from mee all hope to be your perpetuall Seruaunt, and that without other comfort or contention I must nedes depart your presence, neuer (perchaunce) hereafter to speake vnto you againe, be not yet so fqueimith of your beauty, and so cruell towards your languishing louer, as to deny him a kisse for pledge of his laft farewell. I demaund nothing here in secret, but that honestly you may openly performe. It is al that I doe craye at your handes in recompence of the trauayles, paynes, and afflictions suffred for your fake." The malicious dame full of rancor, and spitefull rage sayd vnto him: "I shall by by and by sir, if the loue which you vaunt to beare mee, be so vehement as you seeme to make it." "Ah Madam" (sayd the vnaduised Louer) "commaunde only, and you shall see with what deuotion I will performe your will, were it that it should cost me the price of my proper life." "You shall haue" (quod she) "the kisse which you require of me if you will make promise, and sweare by the fayth of a Gentleman, to do the thinges that I shall commaund, without fraude, couin or other delay." "Madame" (sayd the ouer wilful louer) "I take God to witnesse that of the thing which you shall commaunde I will not leaue one iote vndone, but it shall bee executed to the uttermost of your request and will." She hearing him sweare with so good affection, sayd vnto him smiling: "Now then vpon your oth which I beleue, and being assurred of your Vertue and Noble
nature, I will also performe and keepe my promife.” And saying so, she Embraced and kissed him very lovingly. The poor Gentleman not knowing how dearly hee had bought that dis-favorable curtesie, and bitter sweetenesse, helde hir a while betweene his armes, doubling kisse vppon kisse, with fuch Pleasure, as his foule thought to fly vp to the heauens being inspired with that impoysioned Baulme which hee sucked in the sweete and fugred breath of his cruel mistresse: who vndoing hir selfe out of his armes, sayde vnto hir: “Sith that I haue made the firft disclose-ure both of the promife and of the effect, it behooueth that you performe the reft, for the full accomplishement of the fame.” “Come on hardly” (sayeth hee) “and God knoweth how fpedily you shal be obeyed.” “I wil then” (quod shee) “and commaund you vpon your promyfed faith that from this present time, vntyl the space of three yeres be expyred, you speake to no lyuing person for any thing that shal happen vnto you, nor yet expresse by tongue, by found of word or speache what thing you wante or els desyre, whych requiete if you do breake, I wil neuer trufte liuing man for youre fake, but wil publyshe your fame to bee villaneous, and your person periured, and a promyfe breaker.” I leaue for you to think whether this vnhappy louver were amazed or not, to heare a Commandment so vniu, and therewithall the difficulty for the performance. Notwithstanding he was so floute of hearte, and so religious an obseruer of his Othe as even at that very instant he began to do the part which she had commaundned, playing at Mumchaunce, and vning other signes, for doing of his duetye, accordyng to hir demaund. Thus after his ryghte humble reuereence made vnto hir, he went home, where faining that hee had lost his speach by meanes of a Catarre or reume which distilled from his brayne, he determined to forfake his Countrey vntill his tyme of penance was rude out. Wherfore setting flaye in hys affayres, and prouydyng for his trayne, he made him ready to depart. Notwithstanding, he wrot a Letter vnto Zilia, before he toke hys iourney into Fraunce, that in olde tyme hadde ben the Solace and refuge of the miserable, as wel for the pleafantnes and temperature of the ayre, the great wealth and the abundance of al thynge, as for the curtesye, gentlenes and
familyarity of the people: wherein that region may compare with any other nation upon the earth. Now the Letter of Philiberto, fell into the hands of lady Zilia, by means of hys Page instructed for that purpose: who aduertised hir of the departure of his mayfter, and of the despaire wherein hee was. Whereof shee was somewhat fory, and offended: But yet puttinge on hir Aunciente feuerytie, tooke the Letters, and breakinge the Seale, found that which followeth.

The very euill that caufeth mine anoy
The matter is that breedes to me my ioy,
Which doth my woeful heart full fore displease,
And yet my hap and hard yll lucke doth eafe.
I hope one day when I am franke and free,
To make thee do the thing that pleafeth mee,
Whereby gayne I shal, some pleasaunt gladneffe,
To supply mine vndeferued fadneffe,
The like whereof no mortall Dame can giue
To louing man that heere on earth doth luye.
This great good turne which I on thee pretende,
Of my Conceites the full defired ende,
Proceedes from thee (O cruell myftreffe myne)
Whose froward heart hath made mee to refigne
The full effeft of all my liberty,
(To pleaše and eafe thy fonde fickle fanfy)
My vs of speache in silence to remayne:
To every wight a double hellifhe payne.
Whose fayth hadft thou not wickedly abufde
No ftreffe of payne for thee had bene refufe,
Who was to thee a trufty feraunt fure,
And for thy fake all daungers would endure.
For which thou haft defaced thy good name,
And thereunto procurde eternall fham.
% That roaring tempeft huge which thou haft made me felt,
The raging formes whereof, well neere my heart hath fwhel
By paineful pangs: whose waltering waues by troubled Skies,
And thousand blasts of winde that in thofe Seas do ryle.
Do promife shipwracke sure of that thy fayling Barke,
When after weather cleare doth rife fome Tempeft darke.
For eyther I or thou which art of Tyger's kinde,
In that great raging gulfe fome daunger sure fhalt finde,
Of that thy nature rude the def't'nies en'mies bee,
And thy great ouerthrow full well they do foresee.
The heauens vnto my eflate no doubt great friendship fho, 
And do fееke wayes to ende, and finifh all my woe.
This penance which I beare by yelding to thy heft 
Great ftore of ioyes fhall heape, and bring my mynde to reft.
And when I am at eafe amids my pleaufant happes,
Then fhall I fee thee fall, and fnarld in Fortune's trappes.
Then fhall I fee thee ban and curfe the wicked time,
Wherin thou madeft me gulp fuch draught of poyfoned wine.
Of which thy mortall cup, I am the offerd wight,
A vowed Sacrifice to that thy cruell fpiht.
Wherefore my hoping heart doth hope to fee the day,
That thou for silence now to me fhalt be the pry.

O Blessed God moft iuft, whose worthy laude and prayfe 
With uttered fpeach in Skies a loft I dare not once to rayfe,
And may not well pronounce and fpeak what Sufferance I fustain,
Ne yet what death I do indure, whiles I in lyfe remayne,
Take vengeance on that traytrefe rude, affliff hir corps with woe 
Thy holy arme redreffe hir fault, that fhe no more do foe:
My rea폰 hath not fo farre strayed but I may hope and truft 
To fee hir for hir wickednes, be whipt with plague moft iuft.
In the meane while great heauines my fencce and foule doth bite, 
And fliaking feuer vex my corps for griece of hir despiht.
My mynde now let at liberty from thee (O cruell Dame) 
Doth giue defiaunce to thy wrath, and to thy curfed name,
Proclayming mortal warre on thee vntill my tongue vntide,
Shall ioy to fpeak to Zilia faft weping by my fide.
The heauens forbid that caufeffe wrong abroad fhould make his vaunt,
Or that an vndeferued death forgetfull tombe fhould haunt:
But that in written booke and verfe their names fhold euer liue 
And eke their wicked deedes fhold dy, and vertues fiil reuiue.
So shall the pride and glory both, of hir be punisht right,
By length of yeares, and tract of time. And I by vertues might,
Full recompence thereby shal haue and stand still in good Fame,
And she like caitif wretch shal lye, to hir long lasting shame.
Whose fond regard of beautie's grace, contemned hath the force
Of my true loue full fixt in hir: hir heart voide of remorse,
Esteemed it selfe right foolishly and me abused still,
Vfurping my good honest sayth and credite at hir will.
Whose loyall faith doth rest in soule, and therein shal bide,
Vntill in filthy stinking graue the earth my corps shal hide.
Then shal that soule fraught with that faith, to heuens make his repaire
And rest among the heuens rout, bedest with sacred aire.
And thou for thy great cruelty, as God aboue doth know,
With ruful voice shalt wepe and wayle for thy gret ouerthrow,
And when thou woldst sayn purge thyself for that thy wretched dede
No kindnes shal to the be done, extreme shal be thy mede:
And where my tongue doth want his wil, thy mischiefe to display,
My hand and penne supplies the place, and shall do so alway.
For so thou haft contraynd the same by force of thy behest:
In silence still my tongue to kepe, t'accomplishe thy request.
Adieu, farewell my tormenter, thy frend that is full mute,
Doth bid thee farewell once agayne, and so hee ends his sute.
He that liueth only to be renenged of thy cruelty,

Philiberto of Virle.

Zilia lyke a disdaynefull Dame, made but a Iest at theese Letters
and Complayntes of the infortunate Louer, saying that she was
very well content with his Service: and that when he shouled
performe the tyme of his probation, shee shoulde see if he were
worthy to bee admitted into the Felowship of theym which had
made sufficient proffe of the Order, and Rule of Loue. In the
meane tyme Philiberto rode by great Journeys (as we haue sayde
before) towards the goodly, and pleasaunte countrey of Fraunce,
wherein Charles the Seuenth that tyme did raygne, who miracu-
ously (But gieue the Frencheman leave to flatter, and speake well
of hys owne Countrey, accordinge to the flatteringe, and vaunt-
inge Nature of that Nation) chafed the Englisshemen out of hys
Landes, and Auncient Patrimony in the yeare of our Lord 1451. This Kyng had hyse Campe then Warrefaringe in Gafcoine, whose Lucke was fo Fortunat as hee expelled hyse Ennymies, and left no Place for theym to Fortyfye there, whych Incouraged the Kyng to followe that good Occasion, and by Profecutinge hyse Victoryous Fortune, to Profliate out of Normandie, and to dispatch himselfe of that Ennymy, into whose Handes, and feruitude the Countrey of Guyene was ryghtly deliuered, and Victoryously wonne, and gotten by the Englishmen. The kyng then beeinge in hyse Campe in Normandie, the Piedmount Gentleman the Lorde of Virle aforesayde, Repayred thereunto to Serue hym in hyse Perfon, where hee was well knowne of some Captaynes whych had feene hym at other tymes, and in place where worthy Gentlemen are wonte to Frequent, and in the Duke of Sauoyes Courte, whych the Frenchmen dyd very mucht Haunte, because the Earle of Piedmont that then was Duke of Sauoy had Marryed Iolanta, the seconde daughter of Charles the Seuenth. Theefe Gentlemen of Francuere were very mucht sory for the Myffortune of the Lord of Virle, and knowinge hym to be one of the Brauést, and Luftyest Men of Armes that was in his tyme within the Country of Piedmont, presented him before the King, commendinge vnvo hyse grace the vertue, gentlenesse, and valiaunce of the man of Warre: who after hee had done his reuerence accordinge to hyse duety, whych hee knew ful wel to doe, declared vnvo him by signes that he was come for none other intent, but in those Warres to serue hyse Auisfyte: whom the King heard and thankfully receyued assuring himselfe and promising very mucht of the dumbe Gentleman for respecke of his perfonage which was comely and wel proportioned, and therefore reprefented some Force and greate Dexterity: and that whych made the king the better to fantafie the Gentleman, was the reporte of fo many worthy men which extolled euyn to the heauens the prowesse of the Piedmont knight. Whereof he gauue assurred testimony in the affault which the king made to deliuer Roane, the Chyefe Citye and defence of all Normandie, in the year of our Lord 1451. where Philiberto behaued himselfe so valiantly as he was the first that mounted upon the Wals, and by his Dexterity and inuincyble force, made way to the
fouldiers in the breche, whereby a little while after they entred and sacked the Enemies, drying them out of the Citye, and wherein not long before, that is to say 1430. the duke of Somerset caused Ioane the Pucelle to be burnt. The king advertised of the Service of the Dumbe Gentleman, to recompence him according to his desert, and bycause he knew he to bee of a good house, he made him a Gentleman of his Chambre, and gaue him a good pension, promysing him moreouer to continue his liberality, when he should see him profecute in time to come, the towardnesse of seruice which he had so haply begun. The dumbe Gentleman thanking the King very humbly, both for the present pryneely reward, and for promife in time to come, lifted vp his hand to heaven as taking God to witnesse of the faith, which inuiolable he promysed to kepe vnto his Prynce: which he did so earnestly, as hardly he had promysed, as well appeared in a Skirmifhe betweene the Frrench, and their auncient Enimies the Englyfh-Men, on whose fide was the valiaunt and hardy Captayne the Lord Talbot, who hath eternized his memory in the victories obtained vpon that People, which sometimes made Europa and Asia to tremble, and appalled the monftruous and Warlike Countrey of Africa. In this confluyte the Piedmont Knightes combated with the Lorde Talbot, agaynfte whome he had so happy successe, as vpon the shock and encounter he ouerthrew both man and Horfe, which caufed the difcomfiture of the Englyfhe Men: who after they had horfed agayne their Captain fled amaine, leaving the field befpread with dead Bodyes and bludshed of their Companions. This victorie recovered futch corage and boldnes to the French, as from that tyme forth the Englyfhemen began with their places and forts to lofe also theire hertes to defend themselues. The king exceedingly wel contented wyth the prowefte and valianee of the dumbe Gentleman, gaue him for seruice past the Charge of v. c. men of armes, and indued him with some posfeffions, attending better fortune to make him vnderstand howe much the vertue of valianee ought to be rewarded and cheryshed by Prynces that be aided in their Neceffity with the Dylygence of futch a vertuous and noble Gentleman. In lyke manner when a Prynce hath something good in himself, he can do no leff but loue and favor that
resembleth himself by Pryncely Conditions, fith the Vertue in what foever place it taketh roote, can not chose but produce good fruicté, the vfe whereof far surmounts them all which approche the place, where these first seedes of Nobility were thrown. Certaine dayes after the kinge desirous to rejoyce his Knights and Captaines that were in his trayne, and desirons to extinguish quite the woe-full time which fo long space held Fraunce in fearefull silence, caufed a triumph of Turney to bee proclaimed within the City of Roane, wherein the Lord of Virle was deemed and esteemed one of the beft, which further did increase in him the good wyl of the kyng, in futch wyfe as he determined to procure his health, and to make him haue his speache againe. For he was verye forry that a Gentleman fo valiant was not able to expresse his minde, which if it might be had in counfel it would ferue the state of a commonwealth, fo wel as the force and valor of his body had til then serued for defence and recovery of his country. And for that purpofe he made Proclamation by found of Trumpet through-out the provinces as wel within his owne kingdome, as the regions adjoyning vpon the fame, that who fo euer could heale that dumb Gentleman, shoulde haue ten thousand Frankes for recompence. A Man myght then haue feene thousands of Physitians assemble in feldes, not to skirmifh with the Englyfhe men, but to combat for reward in recovery of the pacient's speache, who began to make futch Warre againft those ten thousand Frankes, as the kyng was afrayde that the cure of that difeafe could take no effect: and for that caufe ordained furthermore, that whofoeuer would take in hand to heale the dumbe, and did not keepe promyfe within a certaine prefixed time, should pay the sayd summe, or for default thereof shoule pledge his head in gage. A Man myght then haue feene tho Phificke Maysters, aswell beyonde the Mountaynes, as in Fraunce it selfe, retire home againe, bleeding at the Nofe, curfing with great impiety their Patrones, Galen, Hypocrates, and Auicen, and blamed with more than reprochful Woordes, the Arte wherewith they fished for honor and richesse. This brute was fpred fo far, and babblyng Fame had already by mouth of her Trump pubflyshed the fame throughout the moft part of the Provinces, Townes, and Cities neare and farre off to Fraunce, in futch
wyfe as a Man woulde haue thought that the two young men (which once in the tyme of the Macedonian Warres brought Tydings to Varinius that the king of Macedon was taken by the Conful Paulus Emilius) had ben vagrant and wandering abrode to carry Newes of the king's edict for the healing of the Lord of Virle. Which caused that not only the brute of the Proclamation, but also the Credyte and reputatyon wherein the sayd Lord was with the French king arriued even at Montcal and passed from mouth to mouth, til at length Zilia the principal cause thereof vnderfode the newes, which rejoyced hir very must, feing the firme Amitie of the dumbe Lord, and the syncre faith of hym in a promise vnworthy to be kept, for so much as where Fraude and feare doe rule in Heartes of Men, relygion of promise, specially the Place of the gyuen Fayth, surrendreth hys force and renolteth, and is no more bound but to that which by good wyll he woulde obferue. Nowe thoughte sée, thoughte? may rather sée assured hir selp, that the Gentleman for all hys wrytten Letter was stil so surpryfed wyth hir Loue, and kindled wyth her fire in so ample wyfe, as when hewas at Montcall: and therefore determyned to goe to Paris, not for desire hew had to see hir pacient and pene-tenciarie, but rather for couetise of the ten thousand Francks, wherof already hew thought hir selp assured, making good accompt that the dumbe Gentleman when he should see himself discharged of his promise, for gratifying of hir, would make no stay to speak to the intent sée myght bear away both the prayfe and Money, wherof all others had failed till that tyme. Thus you see that sée, whome honest Amitye and long service could lytle induce to compaffion and defire to give some eafe vnto hir mofte earnest louer, yielded hir selp to couetous gaine and greadinesse for to encræafe hir Rychesse. O cursed hunger of Money, how long wilt thou thus blinde the reacon and Sprytes of men? Ah perilous gulfe, how many haft thou ouerwhelmed within thy bottomlesse Throte, whose glory, had it not bene for thee, had surpassed the Clouds, and bene equall with the bryghtnesse of the Sunne, where now they bee obscurd wyth the thicknesse of thy fogges and Palpable darkenesse. Alas, the fruiëts whych thou bryngest forth for all thine outewarde appearance, conduce no felicity to them
that bee thy poffeſſors, for the dropſey that is hydden in their
Mynde, whych maketh them so mutch the more drye, as they
drynke ofte in that thirſty Fountaine, is caufe of their alteration:
and moſte miferable is that infaciable desire the Couetous haue to
glut their appetite, whych can receiue no contentment. Thys
onely Couetouſneſſe sometimes procured the Death of the great and
Rych Romane Craſſus who through God's puniſhment fell into
the Handes of the Persians, for violating and facking the Temple
of God that was in Ieruſalem. Sextimuleus burnyng with Avarice
and greedyneſſe of money, dyd once cut of the head of hys Patron
and defender Caius Gracchus the Tribune of the People, incyted
by the Tirant, which tormenteth the hearts of the couetous. I wil
not speake of a good number of other Examples of people of all
kyndes, and divers nations, to come again to Zilia. Who forget-
ting hir virtue, the firſt ornament and ſhining quality of hir honest
beauiour, feaied not the wearines and trouaile of way, to commit
hir felſe to that danger of losſe of honor, and to yeld to the mercy
of one, whome hirſſe had don fo great injury, as hir confeyence
(if hirſſe hadde not loſt hir ryghte fence) oughte to haue made hir
thinke that hir was not without defire to reuenge the wrong
vniuſtly don vnto hir, and ſpecialy being in place where she
was not known, and he greatly honoured and ſteemed, for whose
loue that Proclamation and ſearch of Phyſicke was made and
ordained. Zilia then hauing put in order hir affaires at home
departed from Montcall, and paſſyng the Mounts, arrived at Paris,
in that time when greatest defpayre was of the dumbe Knight's
recovery. Beynge arryued, wythin fewe Dayes after hir inquyred
for them that had the charge to entertayne futch as came, for the
cure of the pacient. "For (fayd she) if ther be any in the world,
by whom the kniſt may recouer his health, I hope in God that I
am she that shal haue the praye." Heereof the Commiſſaries de-
puted hereunto, were aduertyfed, who cauſed the fayre Phyſitian
to come before them, and asked her if it were she, that would take
vyppon hir to couer this dumbe Gentleman. To whom shee auns-
ſweraed. "My mayſters it hath pleafeſd God to reucale vnto me a
certayne secret very proper and meete for the healyng of hys
Malady, wherewithal if the pacient wyll, I hope to make hym
fpeake fo well, as he dyd these two yeares past and more."
"I sup-
pofe, sayd one of the Commiffaries, that you be not ignoraunte of
the Circumstances of the Kynges Proclamation." "I knowe ful
wel" (quod flr) "the Edicte therefore, and therefore doe say vnto
you, that I wyll loole my life yf I doe not accomplysh that which
I doe promyse so that I may haue Lycence, to tarry wyth hym
alone, bycaufe it is of no leffe importaunce than hys Health." "It
is no maruell," sayde the Commiffary, "consideryng your Beauty,
which is sufficient to frame a Newe Tongue in the mofte dumbe
Perfon that is vnder the Heauens. And therefore doe your En-
deuor, affuring you that you shall doe a great pleafure vnto the
King, and besides the prayle you shall gette the good wyll of the
dumbe Gentleman, which is the moft excellent man of the World
and therefore fo well recompensed as you shall haue good caufe
to be contented wyth the kynges Lyberalitye. But (to the intente
you be not deceyued) the meanynge of the Edicte is, that within
fiftene daies after you begin the cure, you muʃte make hym whole,
or elfe to fatifie the Paynes ordayned in the same." Where-
unto she submitted hir felfe, blinded by Auarice and presumption,
thinking that she had like power nowe ouer the Lord of Virle, as
when she gaue him that sharpe and cruell penance. These Con-
ditions promyfed, the Commiffaries went to aduerſe the Knight,
how a gentlewoman of Piedmont was of purpofe come into Fraunce
to helpe him: whereof he was maruelously aſtonned. Now he
would never haue thoughte that Zilia had borne hym fo great
good wil, as by abafing the pryde of hir Corage, would haue come
fo farre to eafe the griefe of hir, whom by fuch greatt tormentes
she had fo wonderfully perfecuted. He thought againe that it
was the Gentlewoman his Neighboure, whych sometymes had done
hir endeuer to helpe him, and that nowe she had prouoked Zilia to
absole him of his faith, and requite him of hys promife. Musing
upon the diuerſitie of these things, and not knowing whereupon
to settle hys judgment, the deputies commaundded that the Woman
Phyfitian shoule be admitted to fpeake with the patient. Which
was done and brought in place, the Commiffaries presentely with-
drew themſelves. The Lord of Virle seeinge hys Ennemye come
before him, whom sometymes he loued very dearely, judged by
and by the cause wherefore she came, that onely Auaryce and greedy desire of gaine had rather procured hir to passe the mountaines travaile, than due and honest Amitye, wherewith she was double bound through his perseuerance and humble servise, with whose fight hee was so appalled, as he fared like a shadowe and Image of a deade man. Wherefore callying to mynd the rigour of his lady, hir inciunity and fonde Commandement, so longe time to forbidde hys Speach, the Loue which once hee bare hir, with vehement desire to obey hir, sodainly was so cooled and qualifyed, that loue was turned into hatred, and will to ferue hir, into an appetite of reuenge: whereupon he determined to vfe that presente Fortune, and to playe his partie wyth hir, vpon whom hee had fo foolyfly doted, and to pay hir with that Money wherewith she made him feele the Fruiets of vnspakeable crueltie, to giue example to fonde and presumptuous dames, how they abuse Gentlemen of futch Degree whereof the Knyghte was, and that by hauing regarde to the merite of futch personages, they be not fo prodigall of themselues, as to set their honour in fale for vyle reward and filthy mucke: whych was so constantly conferued and defended by this Gentlewoman, agaynft the assaults of the good grace, beauty, valour, and gentleneffe, of that vertuous and honest suter. And notwithstanding, in these dayes wee see some to reftie the amity of thofe that loue, for an opynyon of a certayne vertue, which they thinke to be hydden within the corps of excellent beauty, who afterwards do set themselues to fale to hym that giueth moft, and ofrith greatest reward. Sutch do not deferue to be placed in rank of chaft Gentlewomen, of whom they haue no smacke at al, but amongs the throng of strumpets kynde, that haue some sparke and outward shew of loue: for the which loueth money and hunteth after gayne, wyl make no bones, by treafon's trap to betray that vnhappy man, which shall yelde himselfe to hir: hir loue tending to vnсенible things, and futch in dede, as make the wifesst forte to falsifie their fayth, and fel the ryghte and Equity of their Judgment. The Lorde of Virle, seeing Zilia then in his company, and almoft at his commaundement, sayned as though hee knew hir not, by reaason of his small regard and leffe intertaynment shewed vnto hir at hir first comming. Which
greatly made the poore Gentlewoman to mufe. Neuerthelesse she making a vertue of necessitie, and seeing hir selfe to bee in that place, from whence shee could not depart, without the loss of hir honor and Lyfe, purposed to proue Fortuue, and to committ hir selfe vnto his mercy, for all the mobilytie whych the auncients attribute vnto Fortune. Wherefore shutting fast the doore, shee went vnto the Knight, to whom she spake these words: "And what is the matter (fir knight) that now you make so little accomplte of your owne Zilia, who in times paft you sayd, had great power and Authorytye ouer you? what is the caufe that moueth you hereunto? have you so soone forgotten hir? Beholde me better, and you shal fee hir before you that is able to acquyte you of youre promyfe, and therefore prayeth you to pardon hir committed faultes done in tymes paft by abusing so cruelly the honeft and fyrme loue which you bare hir. I am she, which through follye and temerytie did ftoppe your mouth, and tyed vp your Tongue. Giue, me leave, I befeche you, to open the fame agayne, and to breake the Lyne, whych letteth the liberty of your Speache." She seeyng that the dumbe Gentleman would make no aunfwere at all, but mumme, and shewed by signes, that he was not able to vndoe his Tongue, weepyng began to kyffe hym, imbrace hym and make mutch of hym, in futch wyfe, as he whych once studyed to make Eloquent Orations before hys Ladye, to induce hir to pity, forgat then thofe Ceremonyes, and spared his talke, to shewe hymselfe to be futch one as shee had made at hir Commandement, mufed and deuyfed altogether vpon the execution of that, which fometyme shee hadde fo paynefully purfued, both by Woords and contynuall Seruyce, and coulde profite nothing. Thus waked agayne by hir, whych once had Mortyfied hys Mynde, affayed to reuen in hir that, whych long tyme before seemed to be a sleepe. She more for feare of losse of Lyfe, and the pryce of the reward, than for any true or earnest loue suffred hym to receyue that of hir, whych the long Suter defireth to obtaine of his mistrefse. They liued in this joy and Pleasure the space of fiftene Dayes ordained for the aigned Term of his Cure, wherein the poore Gentlewoman was not able to converte hir offended Fryende to speake, although she humbly prayed him to shewe so
mutch favour as at leaft she might goe free, from either losse: telling hym howe lyttle regard shee hadde to hir honour, to come so farre to doe him pleasure, and to discharge him of his promife. Mutch other gay and lowlye talke shee hadde. But the knyghte nothing moued with what she sayde determined to brynge hir in futch feare, as he had bene vexed with heauineffe, which came to passe at the expyred tyme. For the Commissaries seeing that their pacient spake not at all, summoned the Gentlewoman to pay the Penaltye pronounced in the Edict, or else to loose hir lyfe. Alas, howe bytter seemed thys drynke to thys poore gentlewoman who not able to difsemble the gryef that preft on every fyde, beganne to faye: "Ah, I Wretched and Caytyfe Woman, by thinking to deceuie an other, haue sharpened the Swordes to finifh myne owne lyfe. Was it not enough for me to vse futch cruelltye towards this myne Enemye, which moft cruellly in double wyfe taketh Reuenge, but I must come to bee thus tangled in his Snares, and in the Handes of him, who injoying the Spoyles of myne Honour, will with my Lyfe, depryue me of my Fame, by making mee a Common Fable, to all Pofterity in tyme to come? O what hap had I, that I was not rather devoured by some Furious and cruell beaft, when I paffed the mountaines, or else that I brake not my Necke, downe some steepe and headlong hil, of those high and hideous mountains, rather than to bee set heare in stage, a Pageant to the whole Citye to gaze vpon, for enterpyfing a thing so vayne, done of purpole by hym, whome I haue offended. Ah, Signior Philiberto, what Euill rwardes thou for pleasures receiued, and fauors fett in hir whom thou didft loue fo much, as to make hir dye futch shamefull, and dreadfull death. But O God, I know that it is for worthy guerdon of my follysh and wycked Lyfe. Ah disloyaltye and fickle truf, is it poſsible that thou be harbored in the hearte of hym which hadde the Brute to bee the moft Loyall and Curteous Gentleman of bys Countrey? Alas, I see well nowe that I must die through myne onelye simplicitie, and that I mufte sacrifie mine Honour to the rygour of hym, which with two advauntages, taketh ouer cruell reuenge of the lyttle wrong, wherewith my chaſtity touched him before." As she thus had finifhed hir complainte, one came in to carrie
hir to Pryfon, whether willinglye she wente for that she was already resolued in desyre, to lyue no longer in that miserie. The Gentleman contented wyth that payne, and not able for to dissemble the gryefe, which shee conceyued for the passion whych shee fawe hys Welbeloued to endure, the enioyinge of whome renued the heate of the flames forepast, repayred to the Kyng, vnto whome to the great pleazure of the Standers by, and exceding rejoyce of hys Maiestye (to heare hym speake) he told the whole discourse of the Loue betwene hym and cruell Zilia, the cause of the losse of his speach, and theonne of hys reuenue." By the fayth of a Gentleman (fayd the king) but here is so straunge an hyftorye as euer I heard: and verely your fayth and loyaltye is no losse to be praifed and commended than the cruelty and couetousnes of the Woman worthy of reproch and blame, which truly devserueth some greeuous and notable iustice, if so be she were not able to render some apparant caufe for the couerture and hiding of hir folly." "Alas sir," (fayd the Gentleman) "pleafeth your maiestye to deliver hir (although shee be worthy of punishment) and discharge the rest that be in prifon for not recovery of my speach, with my onely help did rest, eyther at hir Commaundemente whych had bounde me to that wrong, or else in the expired time, for which I had pleaded my fayth." To which requeft, the Kinge very willinglye agreed, greatly praying the Wisedome, Curtefie, and aboue all the fidelity of the Lord of Virle, who causyng his penitencie to be fet at liberty, kept hir company certayne dayes, as well to Feaste, and banket hir, in those Landes and Possessions which the kinges maiestye had liberally bestowed vpon him, as to faciate his Appetite with some fruictes whereof he had fauoured his taste when he was voluntaryly Dumbe. Zilia founde that fauour so pleafaunt, as in maner shee counted hir imprifonment happy, and hir trauell rest, by reaason that distresse made hir then feele more liuely the force and pleasure of Liberty, which shee had not founde to bee so delicate, had shee not receyued the experience and payne thereof. Marke heere how Fortune dealeth with them which truftinge in their force, despire (in respect of that which they doe themselues) the little portion that they judge to bee in others. If the Vayneeglory, and arrogante

VOL. III.
Prefumption of a Chastity Impregnable had not deceived this Gentlewoman, if the sacred hunger of gold had not blinded hir, it could not have bene knowne, wherein hir incontinency consisted, not in the Mynion delights, and alluring Toyes of a passionate Louer, but in the couetous desire of filling hir Purfe, and Hypocritically call glory of praise among men. And notwithstanding yee see hir gaine to ferue hir turne nothing at all but to the perpetuall reproch of hir name, and the flauder futch as ill speakers and enemies of womankind, do burden the Sexe withall. But the fault of one Woman, which by hir owne presumption deceyued hir selfe, ought not to obscure the glory of so many vertuous, Fayre, and Honest dames, who by their Chastity, Liberality, and Curtefey, be able to deface the blot of Folly, Couetoufnes and cruelty of this Gentlewoman here, and of all other that do resemble hir. Who taking leaue of hir Louer, went home agayne to Piedmount, not without an ordinary griefe of heart, which serued hir for a spur to hir Conscience, and continually forced hir to thinke, that the force of man is leffe than nothing, where God worketh not by his grace, which faying in vs, oure worckes can fauor but of the flench and corruption of our nature, wherein it tumbleth and tofleth lyke the Sow that walloweth in the puddle of filth and dirt. And becaufe yee shall not thinke in generall termes of Woman’s chastity, and discretion, that I am not able to vouche some particular example of later years, I meane to tell you of one, that is not onely to bee prayed for hir Chastity in the absence of hir husband, but alfo of hir Courage and Pollicy in chastifinge the vaunting natures of two Hungarian Lords that made their braggs they would win hir to their Willes, and not only hir, but all other, whateuer they were of Woman-kynde.
A LADY OF BOEME.

THE TWENTY-EIGHTH NOUELL.

Two Barons of Hungarie affuring themselves to obtaine their suit to a fayre Lady of Boeme, receyued of hir a strang and mar-velous repulfe, to their great shame and Infamy, curfinge the tyme that euer they adventured an Enterprife fo foolish.

Penelope, the woful Wife of absent Vlifles, in hir tedious longing for the home retourne of that hir adventurous knight, affayled wyth Carefull heart amid the troupe of amorous Suters, and within the Bowels of hir royall Pallace, desperued no greater fame for hir valiaunt encountries and stoute defence of the invincible, and Adamant fort of hir chaftity than this Boeme Lady doth by refisting two mighty Barrens, that canoned the Walles, and well mured rampart of hir pudicity. For being threatned in his Princes Court, whether al the well trayned crew of eche science and profession, dyd make repayre, beyng menaced by Venus’ band, which not onely summoned hir fort and gaue hir a camifado by thick Al’ Armes, but also forced the place by fierce assault, she like a couragious and politike capayne, gaue those braue and lufty Souldiers, a fowle repulfe, and in end taking them captiues, urged them for their victuals to fall to woman’s toyle, more shamefull than shamelesse Sardanapalus amid his amorous troupe. I neede not amplifie by length of preamble, the fame of this Boeme Lady, nor yet briefly recompt the Triumph of hir Victory: vayne it were also by glorious hymnes to chaunte the wisedome of hir beleuing maake, who not carelesse of hir Lyfe, employed hys care to seure hys Prynce, and by service atchieued the cause that draue him to a fouldier’s state. But yet for truelesse faith in the pryme conference of his future porte, hee consulted wyth a Pollaco, for a compounded drugge, to eafe his suspect mind, whych medicine so eafeed his maladie, as it not onely preferred hym from the infected humour, but also made hir happy for euer. Such fall the euents of valiaunt mindes, though many tymes mother iapeles that can-cred Wytkh steppeth in hir foote to anoy the well dispoed heart. For had he ioyned to his valyaunce credite of his louyge wife,
without the blynde aduyfe of futch as profeffe that blacke and
lying fcyence, double glorye hee had gayned: once for enduen-
yng by fervice to feeke honour: the feconde, for absolute trufe
in hir, that neuer ment to beguyle him, as by his firfte aunfwered
to his firft motion appeareth. But what is to be objected against
the Barons? Let them anfwere for their fault, in this discourse
ensuing: whych fo leffoneth all Noble Myndes, as warely they
ought to beware how they adventure upon the honour of Ladies,
who bee not altogether of one felfe and yelding trampe, but wel
f forged and fteeled in the flamefaft shoppe of Loyaltie, which
armure defendeth them againft the fond skirmifhes and vnconfi-
dred conflicts of Venus’ wanton band. The maifties alfo of the
king and Queene, are to be aduaunced aboue theftarres for their
wife diffufion of those Noblemen from their hot and heddlefe
enterpryfe, and then their Iuflice for due execution of their forfeit,
the particularity of whych discouerfe in this wyfe doth beginne.
Mathie Coruine, sometime king of Hungarie, aboute the yeare of
oure Lorde 1458, was a valiaunt man of Warre, and of goodly
perfonage. Hee was the firft that was Famous, or feared of the
Turks, of any Prync that gouerned that kingdome. And amongs
other his vertues, fo well in Armes and Letters, as in Lyberallyty
and Curtefye he excelled al the Prynces that raygned in his time.
He had to Wyfe Queene Beatrice of Arragon, the Daughter of olde
Ferdinando kyng of Naples, and fister to the mother of Alphonfus,
Duke of Ferrara, who in learnynge, good conditions, and all other
vertues generally dispersed in hir, was a surpaffing prynceffe, and
fheed hir felf not onely a curteous and Liberall Gentlewman to
king Mathie hir hufband, but to all other, that for vertue seemed
worthy of honour and reward: in futch wyfe as to the Court
of thefe two noble Princes, repayed the moft notable Men of al
Nations that were gien to any kind of good exercife, and euer
of them according to theyr defert and degree welcomed and
entertained. It chaunced in this time, that a knight of Boeme
the vafall of Kinge Mathie, for that he was likewyfe kyng of that
country, born of a noble houfe, very valiant and wel exercized in
armes, fell in loue with a paffing faire Gentlewman of like nobility,
and reputed to be the faireft of al the country, and had a brother
that was but a pore Gentleman, not lucky to the goods of fortune. This Boemian knight was also not very rich, hauing onely a Castle, wyth certain revenues thervnto, which was scarce able to yeild vnto him any great maintenance of liuing. Fallyng in loue then with this faire Gentlewoman, he demaunded hir in mariage of hir brother, and with hir had but a very little dowrie. And this knight not wel forseeing his poore estate, brought his wyfe home to his house, and there, at more leisire considering the fame, began to fele his lacke and penury, and how hardly and fcart his revenues were able to maintaine his port. He was a very honest and gentle perfon, and one that delighted not by any meanees to burden and fine his tenants, contenting himself with that revenue which his ancefters left him, the fame amounting to no great yerely rent. When this gentleman perceived that he flode in neede of extraordinary relye, after many and diuers confiderations with himself, he purpozed to follow the Court, and to serve king Mathie his fouerain lord and master, there by his diligence and experience, to feke meanees for ability to sustaine his wife and himfelf. But fo great and fervent was the loue that he bare vnto his Lady, as he thought it impossible for him to liue one houre without hir, and yet judged it not best to haue hir with him to the court, for auoidinge of further Charges incedente to Courtyng Ladyes, whose Delight and Pleasure refeth in the toyes and tryckes of the fame, that cannot be wel auoyded in poore Gentlemen, without their Names in the Mercer's or Draper's jornals, a heauy thynge for them to confider if for their diport they lyke to walke the firetes. The daily thynkynge thereupon, brought the poore Gentleman to great sorrow and heauinesse. The Lady that was young, wife and discreete, marking the maner of hir husband, feared that he had some misliking of hir. Wherefore vpon a day she thus fayd vnto hym: "Dere husband, willingly would I defire a good turne at your hand, if I wift I shoule not displease you." "Demauend what you will," (faid the knighte) "if I can, I shall gladly performe it, because I do esteeme your satisfaccion, as I do mine owne lyfe." Then the Lady very sobrely praied him, that he would open vnto hir the caufe of that discontentment, which hee shewed outwardly to haue, for that his mynd and behauioure seemed to bee
contrary to ordinary Custome, and contriued Daye and Nyghte in
fighes, auoydinge the Company of them that were wont specially
to deyght him. The Knight hearing his Ladyes request, panfed a
whyle, and then sayd vnto hir: "My wel beloued Wyfe, for so
mutch as you defyre to vnderstand my thoughte and mynde, and
whereof it commeth that I am lad and penifte, I wyll tell you:
all the Heauinesse wherewith you fee me to be affected, doth
tend to this end. Fayne would I deuyse that you and I may in
honour lyue together, according to our calling. For in respect of
our Parentage, our Liuelode is very slender, the occasion whereof
were our Parents, who morgaged theyr Lands, and confumed a
great part of their goods that our Auncesfors lefte them. I dayly
thynking hereupon, and conceiuyng in my head dyuers Imagina-
tions, can deuife no meanes but one, that in my fanie feemeth
beft, which is, that I go to the Court of our foueraine lord Mathie
who at this prefent is inferring Warres vpon the Turk, at whose
hands I do not misfruft to receyue good intertainment, beyng a
moif Lyberal Prynce, and one that esteemeth al futch as be valiant
and actiue. And I for my parte wyll fo governe my selfe (by
God's grace) that by deverte I wyll procure futch lyuing and
favour as hereafter we may lyue in oure Olde Dayes a quyet Lyfe
to oure great flay and comforte: For althonghe Fortune hitherto
hath not favoured that state of Parentage, whereof we be, I doubt
not wyth Noble Courage to win that in despyte of Fortune's Teeth,
which obstinately hitherto she hath denied. And the more affured
am I of thys determination, bycaufe at other tymes, I haue ferued
vnder the Vauioda in Transiluania, agaynft the Turke, where
many tymes I haue bene requyred to ferue alio in the Courte, by
that honourable Gentleman, the Counte of Cilia. But when I dyd
consider the beloued Company of you (deare Wyfe) the sweteste
Companyon that euer Wyght possefied, I thought it vnpoffible
for me to forbeare your preence, whych yf I shoule doe, I were
worthy to suffayne that diſhonour, which a great number of care-
leffe Gentlemen doe, who following their pryuate gayne and Wyll,
abandon theyr young and fayre Wyues, negleſtinge the fyre which
Nature hath infilled to the delycate bodies of futch tender Crea-
tures. Fearing therewithall, that fo foue as I shoulde depart
the lufty yong Barons and Gentlemen of the Countrey would pursue the gaine of that loue, the pryce whereof I do eseeeme aboue the crowne of the greatest Emporour in all the World, and woulde not forgoe for all the Riches and Precious Jewels in the fertyle Soyle of Arabie, who no doubte would swarme togyther in greater heapes then euer dyd the wowers of Penelope, within the famous graunge of Ithaca, the house of Wandering Vliffes. Whych pur-sue if they dyd attayne, I shoulde for euer hereafter be ashamed to shewe my face before thosse that he of valour and regard. And this is the whole effect of the scruple (sweete wyfe) that hyndreth me, to seeke for our better estate and fortune." When he had spoken these words, he held his peace. The Gentlewoman which was wyfe and stout, perceyuing the great loue that her husband bare hir, when hee had stayed himselfe from talke, with good and merry Countenance answered hym in thys wyfe: "Sir Vlrico," (which was the name of the Gentleman) "I in lyke manner as you haue done, haue deuyfed and thoughte vpon the Nobilitye and Byrth of our Aunceftors, from whose state and port (and that wythout our faulte and cryme) we be far wyde and deuyded. Not-wythstanding I determined to set a good face vpon the matter, and to make so much of our paynted sheath as I could. In deede I confesse my selfe to be a Woman, and you Men doe say that Womens heartes be faynt and feeble: but to bee playne wyth you, the contrary is in me, my hearte is so stoute and ambitious as peraduenture not meete and consonant to power and ability, although we Women will finde no lacke if our Hartes haue pith and strength enouogh to beare it out. And faine woulde I support the state wherein my mother maintayned me. Howe be it for mine owne part (to God I yeld the thanks) I can so moderate and stay my little great heart, that contented and satysfied I can be, with that which your abilitye can beare, and pleasure commaund. But to come to the point, I say that debating with my selfe of our state as you full wisely do, I do verily think that you being a yong Gentleman, lufty and valiaunt, no better remedy or deuyde can be found then for you to aspyre and seeke the Kyng's fauor and ser-vice. And it must needes ryse and redounde to your gaine and preferment, for that I heare you say the King's Maiefteye doth
already knowe you. Wherefore I do suppose that hys grace (a skilfull Gentleman to way and esteeue the vertue and valor of ech man) cannot chose but reward and recompence the well doer to his singuler contentation and comfort. Of this myne Opinion I durst not before thyss time vtter Word or signe for feare of your displeasure. But nowe fith your felfe hath opened the way and meanes, I haue presuemed to discouer the fame, do what shal feeme best vnto your good pleasure. And I for my parte, although that I am a woman (accordingly as I faied euen now) that by Nature am defirsous of honor, and to shew my felfe abrode more rich and fumptuous then other, yet in resepct of our fortune, I shal be contented so long as I lyue to continue with you in this our Castell, where by the grace of God I will not fayle to ferue, loue and obey you, and to keepe your Hous in that moderate forte, as the reu- nues shal be able to maintayne the fame. And no doubt but that poore lyuing we haue orderly vndertaken, shal be sufficient to finde vs two, and fiue or fiue seruaunts with a couple of horsse, and so to lyue a quyet and merry Lyfe. If God doe send vs any Children, tyl they come to lawfull age, we will with our poore lyuing bryng them vp so well as wee can and then to prefer them to some Noble mens seruices, with whome by God’s grace they may acquire honoure and lyuing, to keepe them in their aged dayes. And I doe trufty that wee two shal vse futch mutuell loue and rejoyce, that so long as our Lyfe doth laft in wealth and woe, our contented minde shall rest satisfied. But I waying the fquotnese of your minde, doe know that you esteeeme more an Ounce of honor, than all the Golde that is in the world. For as your birth is Noble, so is your heart and stomacke. And therefore many tymes seeing your great beautineffe, and manyfolde mufes and studys, I haue wondred with my felfe whereof they shoule procede, and amongst other my conceipts, I thought that either my behauor and order of dealyng, or my personage did not lyke you: or elfe that your woned gentle minde and disposition had ben altered and transformed into some other Nature: many times also I was contenete to thynke that the caufe of your disquiet minde, dyd ryfe vpon the difufe of Armes, wherein you were wonte dailie to accuizome youre felfe amonges the Troupes of the honourable, a company in
A LADY OF BOEME.

dede moft worthy of your presence. Revoluing many times these and futch lyke cogitations, I haue fought meanes by futch allure-
mentes as I could deuyfe, to eafe and mitigate your troubled
minde, and to withdraw the great vnquiet and care wherewith I
fawe you to be affected. Bycause I do esteeme you aboue all the
Worlde deemyng your onely grye to be my double Payne, your
aking Fynger, a furent Feuer fit, and the leaft Woe you can fus-
tayne mofte bytter Death to me, that loueth you more dearelye
than my felfe. And for that I doe perceyue you are determyned
to ferue our Noble King, the forrowe which without doubte wyll
affayle mee by reafon of your abfence, I wyll sweeten and lenifie
wyth Contentatyon, to fee your Commendable defyre appeased and
quiet. And the pleafaunt Memory of your valyaut facts beguyle
my penfife thoughts, hopyng our neste meetinge shal bee more
joyfull than thys our dysfumctyon and departure heauy. And where
you doubt of the Confluence and repaye of the dyshoneste whych
shall attempt the wynnyng and subduing of myne heart and vn-
spotted bodye, hytherto inuyolably kepte from the touch of any
perfon, caft from you that feare, expel from your minde that fonde
concept: for death shal sooner close these mortall Eyes, than my
Chaffitye shal bee defyled. For pledge whereof I haue none other
thyng to gyue but my true and fymple fayth, whych if you dare
truft it shal hereafter appeare fo firme and inuiolable as no sparke
of fufpition shal enter your careful minde, which I may wel terme
to be carefull, bicaufe fome care before hand doth rife of my
beauior in your abfence. The tryall wherefore shal yelde fure
evidence and testimony, by faffing my careful life which I may
with better caufe fo terme in your abfence, that God knoweth
wil be right penfife and carefull vnto mee, who ioyeth in nothinge
elze but in your welfare. Neuertheless all meanes and wayes
shall bee agreeable vnto my minde for your affurance, and shall
breede in me a wonderful contention, which lusteth after
nothing but your fatisfacon. And if you lift to clofe me vp in
one of the Caftell towers til your return, right glad I am there to
continue an Ankreffe life: fo that the fame may eafe your defired
mind.” The knight with great deelyght gaue ear to the aunfware
of his Wife, and when he had ended hir talke, he began to reply
unto hir: "My welbeloued, I doe lyke wel and greatly commended the stoutnesse of your heart, it pleaseth me greatly to see the fame agreeable unto mine. You haue lightned the same from inestimable woe by understanding your conceiued purpose and determination to gard and preferue your honor, praying you therein to perfeuere, still remembring that when a Woman hath loft hir honor, she hath forgone the chiefeft Iewel she hath in this Life, and deferueth no longer to be called woman. And touching my talke propofed unto you although it be of great importaunce, yet I meane not to depart so soone. But if it do come to effect I affure thee Wife, I will leaue thee Lady and mistrefse of all that I haue. In the meane time I will consider better of my businesse, and consult with my fyrendes and kinsmen, and then determine what is best to be done. 'Til when let vs lyue and spend our tyme so merely as we can." To bee shorte there was nothing that so much molestted the knight, as the doubt he had of his wife, for that she was a very fine and faire yong Gentlewoman: And therefore he stil deuised and imagined what assurance he myght finde of hir behauior in his absence. And resting in this imagination, not long after it cam to paffe that the knight being in company of diuers Gentleman, and talking of sundry matters, a tale was tolde what chaunced to a gentleman of the Countrey which had obtained the fauoure and good wyl of a Woman, by meanes of an olde man called Pollacco, which had the name to be a famous enchauter and Phyfitian, dwelling at Cutiano a Citie of Boeme, where plenty of filuer mines and other metals is. The knight whose Castle was not far from Cutiano, had occasion to repaire unto that Citye, and according to his desire found out this Pollacco, which was a very old man, and talking with him of diuers things, percieued him to be of great skil. In end he entreated him, that for so mutch as he had don pleasure to many for apprehenfion of their loue, he wold also instruct him, how he might be assuured that hys wife did keepe hir self honest all the time of his absence, and that by certaine signes hee might have sure knowledge whether she brake hir faith, by sending his honesty into Cornwall. Sutch vaine truft this knight repofed in the lying Science of Sorcery, which although to many other is found deceit-
ful, yet to him sferued for fure evidence of his wiuе's fidelity. This Pollacco which was a very cunning enchaunter as you haue heard sayd vnto him: "Sir you demaund a very straunge matter, sutch as wherwyt neuer hitherto I haue bene acquainted, ne yet searched the depthe of thofe hydden secrets, a thyng not com-
monly sued for, ne yet practized by me. For who is able to make assurance of a woman's chastity, or tel by signes except he were at the deede doing, that she had don amisse? Or who can gaine by profctors wryt, to summon or sue at spirital Courte, peremptorily to affirme by neuer so good euydence or testimony, that a woman hath hazarded hir honesty, except he sweare Rem to be in Re, which the greatest Ciuilian that ever Padua bred neuer fawe by proceffe duely tried? Shall I then warrante you the honesty of such slippery Catell, prone and ready to luft, easy to be vanquished by the fuites of earneft pursuers? But blame-
worthy surely I am, thus generally to speake: for some I know, although not many, for whose poore honeties I dare adventure mine owne. And yet that number how small so euer it be, is worthy all due Reuereence and Honoure. Notwythstandyng (by-
canfe you seeme to bee an Honest Gentleman) of that Knowledge which I haue, I will not bee greatelye fqueimyfhe, a certayne secreete experiment in deede I haue, wherewith perchaunce I may satifly your demaund. And this is it: I can by mine Arte in fimal time, by certaine composicions, frame a Woman's Image, which you continually in a lyttle Boxe may carry about you, and so ofte as you lift behold the fame. If the wife doe not breake hir maryage faith, you shal still see the fame so fayre and wel coloured as it was at the first making, and seeme as though it newly came from the painter's shop, but if perchaunce she meane to abufe hir honesty the fame wil waxe pale, and in deede committing that filthy Fact, sondainly the colour will bee blacke, as arayed with Cole or other filth, and the smel thereof wyl not be very pleaaut, but at al times when she is attempted or pursued, the colour will be so yealow as Gold." This maruellous secreete dueyf greatly pleased the Knyght verely beleuing the fame to be true, specially mutch moued and assured by the fame bruted abrode of his fcience, whereof the Cytyzens of Cutiano, tolde very
straunge and incredible things. When the pryce was paiued for this precious jewel, hee received the Image, and joyfully returned home to his Castell, where tarryinge certain dayes, he determined to repayre to the Court of the glorious king Mathie, making his wife priuy of hys intent. Afterwards when he had disposed his household matters in order, he committed the government therof to his Wife, and hauinge prepared all Neceffaries for his voyage, to the great forrow and grief of his beloued, he departed and arryued at Alba Regale, where that time the king lay with Beatrix his Wife, of whom hee was joyfully receiued and entertauned. He had not long continued in the Court, but he had obtained and won the favor and good wyll of all men. The king which knew him full well very honorably placed him in his Courte, and by him accomplished divers and many wafty affairs, which very wifely and trustely he brought to paffe according to the king's mind and pleasure. Afterwards he was made Colonell of a certain number of footmen sent by the king against the Turks to defende a holde which the enemies of God began to affaile vnder the conduct of Muftapha Bafca, which conduct he so wel directed and therin stoutly behaued himself, as he chafed al the infidels oute of those coasts, winning therby the name of a most valiaunt soldier and prudent Captaine, whereby he merueylously gayned the favor and grace of the king, who (ouer and besides his dayly entertaynment) gaue vnto him a Castle, and the Revenue in fee farme for euer. Sutch rewards deferue all valiaunt men, which for the honour of theyr Prince and countrey do willingly imploy their feruice, worthy no doubt of great regard and chearifhinge, vpon their home returne, becaufe they hate idlenes to win Glory, deuifinge rather to fpende whole dayes in fielde, than houres in Courte, which this worthy knight deferued, who not able to sustayne his poore Estate; by politick wisdome and prowess of armes endeuored to serue his Lord and countrey, wherein surely hee made a very good choyfe. Then he devoutly prayed God, for that he put into his minde futch a noble enterprife, trufting dayly to atchieue greater Fame and Glory: but the greater was his joy and contention, bicaufe the Image of hys Wyfe inclosed wythin a Boxe, whych still hee caried about him in hys purffe, continued freshe of colour with-
out alteration. It was noysed in the Court how thys valiant
Knight Vlrico, had in Boeme the fayreste and goodliest Lady to his
Wife that liued eyther in Boeme, or Hungary. It chaunced as a
certaine company of young Gentlemen in the Courte were together
(amongs whom was this Knight) that a Hungarian Baron fayd vnto
him: "How is it poffible, fyr Vlrico, being a yeare and a halfe
since you departed out of Boeme, that you have no minde to re-
turne to fee your Wife, who, as the common fame reporteth, is
one of the goodliest Women of all the Countrey: truely it feemeth
to me, that you care not for hir, which were great pitty if hir
beauty be correp Aldent to hir Fame." "Syr," (quod Vlrico)
"what hir beauty is I referre vnto the World, but how fo euuer you
esteeme me to care of hir, you shall vnderstand that I doe loue
hir, and wil do fo duringe my lyfe. And the caufe why I haue
not visited hir of long time, is no little profe of the great auff-
rance I haue of her vertue and honest lyfe. The argument of hir
vertue I proue, for that she is contented that I shoulde ferve my
Lord and king, and sufficient it is for me to gire hir intelligence
of my flate and welfare, whych many tymes by Letters at oppor-
tunity I fayle not to do: The profe of my Fayth is euident by
reasone of my bounden duety to our Soueraigne Lord of whom I haue
receyued fo great, and ample Benefites, and the Warrefare which I
vfe in his grace's feruice vpon the Frontiers of his Realme agaynft
the enimies of Chrifte, whereunto I bear more good will than I
doe to Wedlocke Loue, preferring duety to Prince before mariage:
albeit my Wiue's fayth, and conffancy is fuch, as freely I may
fpend my lyfe without care of hir defoyr, being affured that
besides hir Beauty shee is wife, vertuous and honest, and loueth
me aboue al worldly things, tending me fo dearly as she doth the
Balles of hir owne eyes." "You have floutly fayd," (anfwered the
Baron) "in defence of your Wiue's chaffity, whereof she can
make vnto hir felfe no great warrantice, because a woman fome
tymes will bee in minde not to be moued at the requets, and
gifts offred by the greatest Prince of the World who afterwards
within a day vpon the onely fight, and view of fome lufty youth,
at one fimple worde vtttered with a few Teares, and shorter fueite,
yeldeth to his reques. And what is she then that can conceyue
is the secrete of heartes which be impenetrable? Surely none as I suppose, except God him selue. A Woman of hir owne nature is mounetable and plyant, and is the moiste ambitious creature of the Worlde. And (by God) no Woman doe I know but that she lufteth and desireth to be beloued, required, sued vnto, honored and cherished? And oftentimes it commeth to passe that the moift crafty Dames which thincke with fayned Lookes to feede their diuers Louers, be the first that thrust their heads into the amorous Nets, and lyke little Birdes in hard distresse of weather be caught in Louer's Limetwigges. Whereby, sir Vlrico, I do not see that your Wyfe (aboue all other Women compact of flesh and bone) hath futch pruiledge from God, but that she may be soone entized and corrupted."

"Well sir," (sayd the Boeme Knight) "I am persuaded of that which I haue spoked, and verily doe beleue the effect of my belefe moost true. Every man knoweth his owne affayres, and the Foole knoweth better what she hath, than hys neighbors, do, be they other so wife. Beleue you what you thincke for good. I meane not to disgress from that which I conceyue. And suffer me (I pray you) to beleue what I lift, fith belefe cannot hurt me, nor yet your dishoneste can hinder my belefe, being free for eche man in semblable chaunces to thinke, and beleue what his mynde lufteth and liketh." There were many other Lordes and Gentlemen of the court present at there talke, and as we commonly see (at futch like meetinges) euery man uttereth his minde: whereupon fundry opinions were produced touching that question. And because diuers men be of diuers natures, and many presupuming vpon the pregnancy of their wife heads there rose some flur about that talke, each man obstinate in hys allledged reason, more forward peraduenture than reason, more rightly required: the communication grew so hot and talke brake forth so loude, as the same was reported to the Queene. The good Lady fory to heare tell of futch strife within hir Court, abhorring naturally all controuerse and contention, fent for the parties, and required them from poynct to poynct to make recitall of the beginning, and circumstancc of their reasons, and arguments. And when she understood the effect of al their talke, she sayd, that euery man at his
A LADY OF BOEME.

owne pleasure might beleewe what he lift, affirming it to be pre-
fumptuous and extreme folly, to judge all women to be of one dis-
position, in like fort as it were a great errour to say that all men bee
of one quality and condicion: the contrary by dayly experience
manifestly appearing. For both in men and women, there is so
great difference and variety of natures, as there bee heads, and
wits. And how it is commonly seene that two Brothers, and
Sisters, borne at one Byrth, bee yet of contrary Natures and
Complexions, of Manners, and Conditions fo diuers, as the thinge
which shall please the one, is altogether displeasaunt to the other.
Whereupon the Queene concluded, that the Boeme knight had
good reafon to continue that good and honest credit of his Wyfe,
as hauing proued hir fidelity of long time, wherein she shewed
herselfe to be very wife and discreet. Now because (as many times
we see) the natures and appetites of diuers men be infaciable, and
one man sometimes more foolish hardy than another, even so (to
say the truth) were those two Hungarian Barons, who seeming
wife in their owne conceiptes, one of them sayd to the Queene in
this manner: "Madame, your grace doth wel maintaine the fexe
of womankind, because you be a Woman. For by nature it is
gieuen to that kinde, stoutly to stand in defence of themselues,
be-cause their imbecillity, and weakenes otherwise would bewray
them: and although good reasons might be alledged to open the
causes of their debility, and why they be not able to attayne the
hault excellency of man, yet for this tyme I doe not meane to be
tedious vnto your grace, leaff the little heart of Woman shoule ryfe
and diplay that conceit which is wrapt within that little Mould.
But to retourne to this chaste Lady, through whom our talke
began, if we might craue licence of your Maiestie, and faulfe Con-
duct of thy Gentleman to knowe hir dwelling place, and haue
leave to speake to hir, we doubt not but to breake with our
batteringe talke the Adamant Walles of hir Chaffity that is so
famous, and cary away that Spoile which victoriously we shall
achieve." "I know not," aunswered the Boeme Knight, "what yee
can, or will doe, but fure I am, that hitherto I am not deceyued."
Many things were spoken there, and sundry opinions of eyther
partes alledged, in ende the two Hungarian Barons perfued
them felues, and made their vaunts that they were able to climbe the Skyes, and both would attempt and alfo bring to paffe any enterprife were it neuer fo great, afferming their former offer by othe, and offering to Guage all the Landes, and goods they had, that within the fpace of 5 moneths they woule eyther of them obtayne the Gentlewoman's good will to do what they lift, fo that the knight were bound, neyther to returne home, ne yet to aduer-tisfe hir of their determination. The Queene, and all the flanders by, laughed heartely at this their offer, mocking and iefting at their foorifh, and youthly conceites. Whych the Barons perceiu-ing, fayde: "You thinke Madame that we fpeake trifflingly, and be not able to accomplifh this our propofed enterprife, but Madame, may it pleafe you to gieue vs leave, wee meane by earneft attempt to gieue profe thereof." And as they were thus in reafoning and debating the matter, the kinge (hearinge tell of this large offer made by the Barons) came into the place where the queene was, at fuch time as she was about to difluade them from the frantik deceife. Before whom he being entred the chamber, the two Barons fell downe vpon their Knees, and humbly befought his Grace, that the compact made betwene fir Vlrico and them might proceede, disclosing vnto him in few worde the effect of all their talke, which franckly was granted by the king. But the Barons added a Prouifio, that when they had won their Wager, the Knight by no meanes shoule hurt his Wyfe, and from that tyme forth shoule gieue over hys falfe Opinion, that women were not naturally gieuen to the futes and requets of amorous perfons. The Boeme Knight, who was affuirt of hys Wyue's great Honesty, and Loyall fayth, beleuued fo true as the Gofpell, the proportion and quality of the Image, who in all the tyme that hee was farre of, neuer perceuyed the fame to bee eyther Pale or Black, but at that tyme lookinge vpon the Image, hee perceuied a certayne Yealow colour to rife, as hee thought his Wyfe was by fome loue purfued, but yet fodeynly it returned agayne to his naturall Hewe, which boldned him to fay thefe words to the Hungarian Barons: "Yee be a couple of pleafaunt, and vnbeleeuing Gentlemen, and haue conceuyed fo fantaffical opinion, as euer men of your calling did: but fith you proceede in your obftinate folly, and
wil needes guage all the Lands, and goods you haue, that you bee able to vanquifhe my Wyue's Honest, and Chafle heart, I am contented, for the singuler credite which I repose in hir, to ioyne with you, and will pledge the poore lyuinge I haue for prooфе of mine Opinion, and shall accomplifhe al other your requestes made here, before the maieties of the Kinge and Queene. And therefore may it pleafe your highnesse, sith this fond deuice can not be beaten out of their heads, to giue Licence vnto those Noble-men, the Lords Vladisflao and Alberto, (fo were they called) to put in prooфе the mery conceipt of their disposed mindes (whereof they do fo greatly bragge) and I by your good grace and favoure, am content to agree to their demaundes: and wee, anwered the Hungarians, do once agayne affirme the fame which wee haue spoken.” The king willing to haue them gyue ouer that strife, was intreated to the contrary by the Barons: whereupon the kinge perceyuinge their Follies, caufed a decree of the bargayne to be put in writing, eyther Parties interchaungeably subcribing the fame. Which done, they tooke their leaues. Afterwards, the two Hungarians began to put their enterprife in order and agreed betweene themselues, Alberto to bee the firfte that shoulde aduenture vpon the Lady. And that within fixe Weekes after vpon his returne, the lord Vladisflao shoulde proceede. These things concluded, and all Furnitures for their several Jorneys disposed, the lord Alberto departed in good order, with two seruaunts direcfly trauayling to the caffe of the Boeme Knight, where being arrinied, hee lighted at an Inne of the towne adioynge to the Caſtle, and deamaunding of the hoſte, the Conditions of the lady, hee vnderfloode that shee was a very fayre Woman, and that hir honeſty, and loue towards hir hufbande farre excelled hir beauty. Which wordes nothing difmayede the Amorous Baron, but when hee had pulled of his Bootes, and richely arayed hymſelſe, he repayred to the Caſtle, and knockinge at the Gates, gaue the Lady to vnderſtannd that he was come to fee hir. She which was a curteous Gentlemen, caufed him to be brought in, and gently gaue him honourable intertaunment. The Baron greatly muſed vpon the beauty, and goodlineſſe of the Lady, singularly commending hir honeſt orde and Behauiour. And beinge fet down, the young
Gentleman sayd vnto hir: "Madame, mooed with the fame of your furpassing Beauty, which now I see to bee more excellent than Fame with hir swiftest Wyngs is able to cary: I am come from the Court to view and see if that were true, or whether lyinge Brutes had scattered their Vulgar talke in vayne: but finding the fame farre more fine and pure than erft I did expecft, I craue Lycence of your Ladyship, to conceyue none offence of this my bouldr, and rude attempt." And herewithall hee began to ioyne many tribling and vayne words, whych dalyinge Suters by heate of Luftie bloude bee wont to shooe forth, to declare theym felues not to be Speachleffe, or Tongue tied. Which the Lady well espying speedily imagined into what Porte hys rotten Barke would arriue: wherefore in the ende when shee fawe his Shippe at Roade, began to enter in pretie louinge talke, by little, and little to encourage his fond attempt. The Baron thinkinge hee had caught the Ele by the Tayle, not well practised in Cicero his schoole, ceased: not fondly to contrive the time, by making hir beleue, that he was farre in loue. The Lady weary (God wote) of his fonde behauiour, and amorous reafons, and yet not to feeme scornfull, made him good countenaunce, in futch wyfe as the Hungarian two or three dayes did nothing else but proceede in vayne Pursute, Shee perceyuing him to bee but a Hauke of the firft Coate, deuyed to recompence hys Follies with futch entertaynemen, as during his life, he shoulde keepe the fame in good remembrance. Wherefore not long after, sayning as though his great wisedome, vterted by eloquent Talke, had subdue hir, shee sayd thus vnto him: "My Lord, the reafons you produce, and your pleauant gesture in my house, haue so inchaunted mee, that imposible it is, but I must needes agree vnto your wyll: for where I neuer thought during lyfe, to shawe the purity of mariadge Bed, and determined continually to preferue my selue inviolably for my Husband: your noble grace, and curteous behauiour, haue (I say) so be-witched mee, that ready I am to bee at your commaundement, humbly beseeching your honour to beware, that knowledge hereof may not come vnto myne Husband's eares, who is so fierce and cruel, and loueth me so dearely, as no doubt he will without further triall eyther him selfe kill me, or otherwife procure my
death: and to the intent none of my house may suspect our doings, I shall desire you to morrow in the morninge about nyne of the Clock, which is the accustomed time of your repaire hither, to come vnto my Castle, wherein when you be entred, speedily to mount vp to the Chaumber of the highest Tower, over the doore whereof, yee shall finde the armes of my Husband, entayled in Marble; and when you be entred in, to shut the Doore fast after you, and in the meane time I will wayte and prouyde, that none shall molest and trouble vs, and then we shall bestowe our felues for accomplisement of that which your loue desireth.”

Nowe in very deede this Chaumber was a very strong Pryson ordainyned in auncient time by the Progenitours of that Territory, to Impryson, and punifhe the Vassals, and Tenants of the same, for offences, and Crimes committed. The Baron hearyng this Lyberall offer of the Ladye, thinking that he had obtained the summe of al his ioy, fo glad as if he had conquered a whole kingdome, the best contented man alive, thanking the Lady for hir curteous anfwere, departed and returned to his Inne. God knoweth vpon howe merry a Pinne the hearte of this young Baron was fette, and after he had liberally banketted his hofte and hostesse, pleasantly disposing himselfe to myrth and recreation, he wente to bed, where ioy fo lightned his merry head, as no slepe at all could close his eyes, futch be the sauage pangs of those that a preyre to like deligths as the best reclamer of the wildest hauk could never take more payne or deuise mo shiftes to Man the same for the better atchieuing of hir pray than dyd this braue Baron for brynging hys Enterprife to effect. The nexte day early in the morning hee rofe, dresing himselfe with the sweete Perfumes, and puttinge on hys finest suite of Apparell, at the appointéed houre hee went to the Caftell, and so secretly as hee could, accordinge to the Ladies instruction, hee couneyed himselfe vp into the Chaumber which hee founde open, and when he was entred, hee shut the same, the maner of the Doore was futch, as none within could open it without a Key, and besides the strongest Locke, it hadde both barre and Bolt on the outside, wyth futch fasteninge as the Deuill himselfe being locked within, could not breake forth. The Lady which wayted hard by for his comming, so foone as the perceyued that
the Doore was shut, stept vnto the fame, and both double Locked the Doore, and also without she barred, and fast Bolted the fame, caryng the Key away with hir. This Chamber was in the hygheft Tower of the Houfe (as is before sayd) wherein was placed a Bedde wyth good Furniture, the Wyndow whereof was fo high, that none could looke out wythout a Ladder. The other partes thereof were in good, and conveniencet order, apt and meete for an honest Pryfon. When the Lorde Alberto was within, hee sat downe, wayting (as the Iewes do for Meffias) when the Lady according to hir appoyntment shoule come. And as he was in this expectation building castles in the Ayre, and deuising a thousand Chimeras in his braine, behold he heard one to open a little wicket that was in the doore of that Chamber, which was as straight, as scarceely able to receiue a loafe of bread, or cruse of Wyne, vfed to be sent to the pryfoners. He thinkyng that it had ben the Lady, rofe vp, and hearde the noyfe of a lyttle girl, who looking in at the hole, thus sayd vnto him: "My Lord Alberto, the Lady Barbara my mistresse (for that was hir name) hath sent me thus to say vnto you: 'That for as much as you be come into this place, by countenaunce of Loue, to dispoyie hir of hir honour, she hath imprisyoned you like a theefe, accordinge to your deferte, and purpofeth to make you suffer penance, equall to the measure of your offence. Wherefore so long as you shal remain in thys place, the mindeth to force you to gaine your bread and drinke with the arte of spinning, as poore Women doe for gayne of theyr lyuinge, meanynge thereby to coole the heate of your lufty youth, and to make you taft the sorrow of fauce meete for them to aflay, that go about to robbe Ladyes of theyr honour: she bad me lykewise to tell you, that the more yarne you spin, the greater shall be the abundance and delycacie of your fare, the greater payne you take to earne your foode, the more lyberall she will be in dyftrybutyng of the fame, otherwife (the sayth) that you shall fafte wyth Breade and Water.' Which determinate sentence she hath decreed not to be infringed and broken for any kinde of fute or intrety that you be able to make.' When the maiden had spoken these Words, she that the lyttle dore, and returned to hir Ladye, the Baron which thought that he had ben commen to a mariadge, did eate nothing al the morningg
before, bycaufe he thought to be enterteyned with better and daintier store of viandes, who nowe at those newes farend like one out of his wittes and ftoode still so amazed, as though his leggs would haue fayled him, and in one moment his Spyrites began to vanyfhe and hys force and breath forfoke hym, and fel downe vpon the Chamber flore, in fuch wise as hee that had beheld hym would haue thought him rather dead than liuyng. In this state he was a great tyme, and afterwardes somewhat commyng to himselfe, he could not tel whether hee dreamed, or else that the Words were true, which the maiden had fayde vnto hym: In the end feeyng, and beyng verely affured, that he was in a Pryfon so fure as Bird in Cage, through diidayne and rage was like to dye or else to lofe his wits, faring with himselfe of long time lyke a madde Man, and not knowing what to do, paft the rest of the Day in walking vppe and downe the Chaumber, rauing, ftamping, staring, Cursynge and vffing Words of greateft Villanie, lamenting and bewailinge the Chamber, which hee had vnderynged, and was as a beast and Brutifh man, he gave the attempt to difpoyle the honefly of an other man's Wyfe. Then came to his mind the loffe of all his Lands and Goods, which by the king's authority were put in comprimife, then the shame, the fcorne, and rebuke whych hee fhould receyve at other mens handes, beyonde meafure vexed him: and reporte bruted in the Courte (for that it was impoffible but the whole Worlde shoulde knowe it) fo gryeued hym, as his heart seemed to be ftrained with two fharpe and bityng Nailes: the Paynes whereof, forced hym to loofe hys wyttes and vnderfstandynge. In the myddes of whych Pangs furiously vauntyng vp and downe the Chaumber, hee efpied by chance in a Corner, a Dyftaffe furnyfhed with good flore of flaxe, and a fpyndle hangyng thereupon: and overcome wyth Choler and rage, hee was aboue to fpyole and break the fame in pieces: but remembring what a harde Weapon Necesfitye is, hee stayed his wyfedome, and albeit he hadde rather to haue contruyed hys leyfure in Noble and Gentlemanlyke paffyms, yet rather than he would be idle he thought to referue that Infrument to auoyde the tedious lacke of honefthy and Familiar Company. When supper time was come, the mayden retourned agayne, who opening the Portall dore, saluted the Baron, and fayde: "My
Lord, my mistresse hath sent mee to vsyte your good Lordship, and to receiue at youre good Handes the effeekte of your labour, who hopeth that you haue sponne some substantiall store of threede for earning of your Supper, whych beyng done, shall be readily brought vnto you.” The Baron full of Rage, Furie, and felonious moode, if before he were fallen into choler, now by protestation of these words, seemed to transfresse the bounds of reaon, and began to raile at the poore wench, scolding and chiding hir like a strumpet of the stews, faring as though he would haue beaten hir, or don hir some other mischiefe: but his moode was stayed from doyng any hurt. The poore Wench lestoned by her mistresse, in laughing wife sayd vnto him: “Why (my Lord) do you chafe and rage againste mee? Me thinks, you do me wrong to vfe such reprochful words, which am but a feraunt, and bounde to the commaundement of my mistresse: Why sir, do you not know that a pursuauant or messanger suffreth no paine or blame? The greateft Kyng or Emperour of the Worlde, receiuing defiaunce from a meaner Prynce, neuer vseth his ambassadour with scolding Wordes, ne yet by villany or rebuke abueth his perfon. Is it wilde then for you, being a prefent pryfoner, at the mercy of your kepers, in thys dishonorable sorte to reuile me with disordred talke? But sir, leaue of your rages, and quiet your felpe for this prefent tyme, for my mistresse maruelleth much why you dursft come (for al your Noble state) to giue attemptes to violate hir good name, which message shee requyred me to tell you, ouer and besides a desire shee hath to know whether by the Scyence of Spynning, you haue gained your meat for you seeme to kicke against the wynd, and beat Water in a morter, if you think from hence to goe before you haue earned a recompense for the meat which thal be giuen you. Wherefore it is your lot patiently to suffer the penance of your fond attempt, which I pray you gentely to sustaine, and think no scorn thereof hardly, for desperate men and hard adventures must needs suffer the daungers thereunto belonging. This is the determinate sentence of my mistresse mynd, who fourdeth you no better fare than Bread and Water, if you can not shewe some pretie Spyndle full of yarne for signe of your good wyll at this prefent pynch of your distresse.”
Mayden seyng that hee was not dyspozed to shewe some part of wylling mind to gaine his lyning by that prefixed scyence shut the portall Doore, and went her way. The unhappy Baron (arruyed thether in very yll tyme) that Nyght had Neyther Breade nor Broth, and therefore he fared accordyng to the Proverbe: He that goeth to bed supperlesse, lyeth in his Bed refleffe, for during the whole night, no sleepe could faften hys Eyes. Now as this Baron was closed in pryfon fafte, so the Ladye tooke order, that secretly wyth great cheare hys Seruantes shoulde be interteyned, and his Horfe wyth sweete haye and good prouender well mainteyned, all his furnitures, fumpture horfe and caryages conueyed within the Castle, where wanted nothynge for the state of futch a personage but onely Lyberty, makynge the hoft of the Inne belye (whe the Lord harbored before) that he was returned into Hungarie. But now turne we to the Boeme knight, who knowyng that one of the two Hungarian Competitors, were departed the Court and ridden into Boeme, dyd still behold the quality of the inchaunted Image, wherein by the space of thre or foure Dayes, in wych time, the Baron made his greatest fute to his Ladie: he marked a certaime alteration of Coloure in the same, but afterwards returned to his Natiue forme: and seeing no greater tranformation, he was wel assured, that the Hungarian Baron was repulsed, and imploied his Labor in vaine. Whereof the Boeme knight was excedingly pleased and contented, bycause he was well assured, that his Wyfe had kep hir selfe rychte pure and honest. Notwithstandyng hys Mynde was not wel setteld, ne yet hys heart at reft, doubting that the lord Vladilao, which as yet was not departed the courte, would obtayne the thing, and acquite the faulte, which his Companion had committed. The impryfoned Baron which all this tyme had neither eaten nor dronken, nor in the night could sleepe, in the mornyng, after he had confidered his misaduenture, and well perceyued no remedy for him to goe forth, except hee obeyed the Ladie’s heft, made of Necesfitie a Vertue, and applied himselfe to learne to Spynne by force, which freedome and honour could neuer haue made him to do. Whereupon he toke the ditaffe and beganne to Spynne. And albeyt that hee neuer Sponse in al hys Lyfe before, yet instruccted by Necesfitie, so well as he could, he
drew out his Threede, now small and then greate, and manye times of the meanest fort, but verye often broade, yl favored, yl cloosed, and worfe twisted, all oute of fourme and saphyon, that sundry tymes very heartely he laughed to himselfe, to see his cunning, but would haue made a cunning Woman spinner burst into Ten Thoufand laughters, if she had ben there. Thus all the morning he spent in spynning, and when dynner came, his accustomed meffenger, the mayden, repayred vnto him againe, and opening the wyndow daunmended of the Baron how his worke went foreward, and whether he were disposed to manifest the cause of hys comming into Boeme? Hee well beaten in the schoole of flame, vtted vnto the Maide the whole compa	 and bargayne made betweene him and his Companion, and the Boeme knyghte hir mayfter, and afterwards shewed vnto hir his Spyndle ful of threde. The young Wenche smlyng at hys Woorke, sayd: "By Sain	 Marie this is well done, you are worthy of victual for your hire: for now I well perceiue that Hunger forceth the Woulf oute of hir Denne. I conne you thanck, that like a Lord you can so puiflantly gayne your lyuing. Wherefore proceeding in that which you haue begonne, I doubt not but shortly you will prove fetche a workeman, as my miftrefle shall not neede to put oute hir flax to spinne (to hir great charge and coste) for making of hir smocks, but that the same may wel be don within hir own houfe, yea although the same doe ferue but for Kitchen Cloathes, for dreffer bordes, or cleanynge of hir Vefell before they bee fer ned forth. And as your good deferts doe merite thanckes for this your arte, now well begonne, even so your new told tale of comming hyther, reqyreh no leffe, for that you haue dyfclosed the truch." When she had spoken these Worde, she reached hym some store of meates for hys dynner, and bade hym fare well. When she was returned vnto hir Lady, she shewed vnto hir the Spyndle full of threde, and told hir therewythall the whole story of the compa	 betwene the knight Vlrico, and the two Hungarian barons. Whereof the Lady fore astonned, for the snare layd to entrappe hir, was notwithstanding wel contented, for that shee had fo well forseene the fame: but most of all rejoysfed, that hir husband had fo good opinion of hir honeft lyfe. And before she would aduer-
tise hym of those events, the purposed to attend the commynge of the lord Vladiflao to whome she ment to do like penance for his careleffe bargayne and dishonest opinion, accordingly as he deferred, maruelling very mutch that both the Barons, were so rash and presumptuous, daungerously (not knowing what kind of Woman she was) to put their Landes and goodes in hazard. But considering the Nature of divers brainfick men, which passe not how carelesly they adventure their gained goods, and inherited Lands, so they may atchieue the pray, after which they vainely hunt, for the preindice and hurt of other, she made no accompt of these attemptes, fith honest Matrones force not vppon the futes, or vayne consume time of lyght brained Cockfcombs, that care not what fond coft or ill imployed houres they waffe to anoy the good renoume and honest brutes of Women. But not to discourse from point to point the particulers of this intended iorney, this poore deceived Baron in short time proued a very good Spinner, by exercise whereof, he felt fitch solace, as not onely the fame was a comfortable fporte for his captiue time, but also for want of better recreation, it seemed so joyfull, as if he had bene pluming and feeding his Hawke, or doing other fports belonging to the honourable state of a Lord. Which his wel attriued labour, the Maiden recompened with abundance of good and delicate meates. And although the Lady was many times requyred to visite the Baron, yet she would neuer to that request consent. In which tyme the knyght Vlrico ceased not continually to viewe and reweue the state of his Image, which appeared styll to bee of one well coloured forte, and although thys vfe of wys was divers times marked and feene of many, yet being earnestly demaunded the caufe thereof shee would neuer disclose the same. Many conjectures thereof were made, but none could attayne the trouth. And who would haue thought that a kni gentle wyse and prudente had worn within his purffe any ihaunted thyng? And albeyt the Kyng and Queene had intelligence of thys frequent praettyle of the knyght, yet they thought not mete for the priuate and secrete Mystery, to demaund the caufe. One moneth and a halfe was paffed now that the Lorde Alberto was departed the Court, and become a Caftle knyghte and cunning Spynster: which made the
Lord Vladišłao to mufe, for that the promife made betweene them was broken, and hearde neyther by Letter or messenger what suceffe he had receiued. After diuers thoughts imagyned in his mynde, he conceyued that his companion had happily enjoyed the ende of his defired ioy, and had gathered the wyshed fruicts of the Lady, and drowned in the mayne Sea of his owne pleasures, was overwelmed in the bottome of Obliuion: wherefore he determined to fet forward on his iourney to glie onfet of his defired fortune: who without long delay for execution of his purpofe, prepared all neceffaries for that voyage, and mounted on horfebacke with two of his men, he iourneyed towards Boeme, and within a few daies after arryued at the Caflle of the fayre and moft honeft Lady. And when hee was entred the Inne where the Lord Alberto was firft lodged, he dilygentl enquiryd of him, and heard tell that he was returned into Hungarie many dayes before, whereof much maruelling, could not tel what to fay or think. In the end purpoſeing to put in profe the caufe wherefore he was departed out of Hungarie, after dilygent fearche of the maners of the Lady; he vnderftoode by general voyce, that fe was without comparifon the honefteft, wiffeft, gentleft, and come-lyeft Lady within the whole Countrey of Boeme. Incontinently the Lady was aduertifed of the arriual of this Baron, and knowing his meffage, he determyned to paye him alfo wyth that Money which fe had already coyned for the other. The next Day the Baron went vnto the Caflle, and knocking at the Gate, fent in word how that he was come from the Court of king Mathie, to vifite and salute the Lady of that Caflle: and as fe did entertayne the firft Baron in curteous guife, and with louing Countenance, even fo fe dyd the fecond, who thought thereby that he had attayned by that pleafaunt entertaynment, the game which fe hunted. And discoursing vpon dyuers matters, the lady fhowed biffelfe a pleafaunt and Famlyar Gentlewome, which made the Baron to thynk that in short tyme he should wyn the pryce for which he came. Notwithstanding, at the fyfte brunt he would not by any meanes defcend to any particularity of his purpofe, but hys Words ran general, which were, that hearynge tell of the fame of biff Beauty, good grace and comelineffe, by hauing
A LADY OF BOEME. 219

occasion to repayre into Boeme to doe certayne his affaires, he
thought it labor wel spent to ride some portion of his journey,
though it were besides the way, to dygresse to do reverence vnto
hir, whom fame aduaunced aboue the Skyes: and thus passing his
first visitation he returned againe to his lodging. The lady when
the Baron was gone from hir Castle, was rapt into a rage, greatlye
offended that those two Hungar[i]an Lordes fo presumptuously had
bended themselues lyke common Theues to wander and rouse the
Countreys, not onely to robbe and spoyle hir of hir honour, but
also to bryng hir in displeasure of hir husband, and thereby into
the Daunger and Peryll of Death. By reason of which rage (not
without cause conceived) she caused an other Chamber to be
made ready, next Wall to the other Baron that was become futch
a notable Spynster, and vpon the nexte returne of the Lord
Vladiflao, she received him with no leffe good entertainement
than before, and when Nyght came, caused him to be lodged
in hir owne house in the Chamber prepared as before, where
he slept not very soundly all that Night, through the contin-
ual remembrance of hys Ladies beauty. Next morning he
perceived himselfe to be locked fast in a Pryson. And when he
had made him readye, thinking to descend to bid the Lady good
Morrow, seeking meanes to vnlock the Doore, and perceiving
that he could not, he stode flyll in a dumpe. And as he was
thus standing, maruelling the cause of his shuttyng in so faft,
the maiden repaired to the hole of the dore, giuing his honor an
vnaccustomed salutation, which was that hir mistresse com-
manded hir to giue him to vnderstand, that if hee had any luft
or appetyte to his breakfaft, or if he minded from thenceforth to
eafe his hunger or conteine Lyfe, that he should giue him selfe
to learne to reele yarne. And for that purpose she willed him to
looke in futch a coroner of the Chamber, and he should find cer-
taine spindles of thred, and an instrument to winde his yarn vpon.
"Wherefore" (quod she) "apply your self thereunto, and looke no
time." He that had that tyme behelde the Baron in the Face,
would have thought that hee had seene rather a Marble Stone,
than the figure of a man. But conuerting his could conceyued
moode, into mad anger, he fell into ten times more displeasure
with himselfe, than is before described by the other Baron. But seeing that his mad behauiour, and beastly vnage was bestowed in vayne, the next day he began to Reele. The Lady afterwardes when shee had intelligence of the good, and gaynefull Spinning of the Lord Alberto, and the wel disposed, and towardly Reeling of the Lord Vladizlao, greatly rejoiced for makinge of such two Notable Workemen, whose workmanship exceeded the labours of them that had been Apprentice to the Occupation seuen Yeares togeather. Such bee the apt and ready Wyts of the Souldiers of Loue: wherein I would wishe all Cupides Dearlings to be nauted and applied in their youthly time: then no doubt their passions would appease, and rages affluage, and would give ouer bolde attempts, for which they haue no thancke of the chaste and honest. And to thy goodly sight the Lady brought the Servaunts of these noblemen, willing them to marke and beholde the diligence of their Maysters, and to imitate the industry of their gallant exercise, who never attayned meate before by labour they had gayned the same. Which done, shee made them take their Horfe, and Furnitures of their Lords, and to depart: otherwise if by violence they resifted, she would cause their choller to be caulmed with such like servise as they saw their Lordes doe before their Eyes. The Servaunts seeing no remedy, but must needes depart, tooke their leaue. Afterwards she sent one of her Servaunts in poaft to the Courte, to aduertise her husband of all that which chaunced. The Boeme knight receyuing these good newes, declared the same vnto the King and Queene, and recited the whole story of the two Hungarian Barons, accordingly as the tenor of his Wyues letters did purport. The Princes stoode still in great admiration, and highly commended the wisedome of the Lady, esteeming hir for a very sage and politicke woman. Afterwards the knight Vlarico humbly besought the king for execution of his decree and performance of the Bargayne. Whereupon the king assembled his counsell, and required euer of them to saye their minde. Upon the deliberation whereof, the Lord Chaunceller of the Kingdom, with two Counsellers, were sent to the Caftle of the Boeme knight, to enquire, and learne the proceffe and doinges of the two Lordes, who diligently accomplisht the kinges commandement.
And having examined the Lady and her maiden with other of the house, and the barons also, whom a little before the arrival of these Commissioners, the Lady had caused to be put together, that by Spinning and Reeling they might comfort one another. When the Lord Chancellor had framed and digested in order the whole discourse of this history, returned to the Court where the king and Queen, with the Pieres and Noblemen of his kingdom, caused the acts of the same to be divulged and bruted abroad, and discourse of the performance of this compact, pro, and contra, the Queen taking the Lady's part, and favoring the knight, the king gave sentence that Sir Vlrico should wholly possess the lands and goods of the two Barons to him, and to his Heyres for ever, and that the Barons should be banished the kingdoms of Hungary and Boeme, never to return upon pain of death. This sentence was put in execution, and the unfortunate Barons exiled, which specially to those that were of their consanguinity and blood, seemed to severe, and rigorous. Nevertheless the couenaunt being most playne and evident to most men, the same seemed to bee pronounced with great justice and equity, for example in time to come, to leffon rash wits how they judge and deeme so indifferently of Womens behaviours, amongs whom no doubt there bee both good and bad as there bee of men. Afterwards the 2 princes sent for the Lady to the Court, who there was courteously intertayned, and for this her wise and politicke fact had in great admiration. The Queen then appoynted her to be one of hir women of honor, and esteemed her very deerely. The knight also daily grew to great promotion well beloved and favored of the king, who with his lady long time lived in great joy and felicity, not forgetting the cunning Pollacco, that made him the image and likenes of his wife: whose frendship and labor he rewarded with money, and other Benefits very liberally.
THE TWENTY-NINTH NOUELL.

Dom Diego a Gentleman of Spayne fell in loue with fayre Gineura, and he with him: their loue by meanes of one that enuied Dom Diego his happy choyfe, was by default of light credit on hir part interrupted. He constant of mynde, fell into despayre, and abandoning all his frends and liuing, repayred to the Pyrene Mountaines, where he led a savage lyfe for certayne moneths, and afterwardes knowne by one of hys frendes, was (by marueyous Circumflaunce) reconciled to hys froward mijireffe, and maryed.

Mens mischaunces occurring on the brunts of dyuers Tragicall fortunes, albeit vpon their first taste of bitternesse, they favor of a certayne kinde of lothsome relif, yet vnder the Rynde of that vnfaueroufe Sap, doth lurke a sweeter honnye, than sweetenefe it selfe, for the fruit that the Posterity may gather, and learne by others hurts, how they may loathe, and shun the like. But bicaufe all things haue their feasons, and euery thynge is not conuenient for all Times, and Places, I purpose now to shew a notable example of a vayne and superstitious Louer, that abandoned his liuing and friendes, to become a Sauage Defert man. Which History refembleth in a maner a Tragical Comedy, comprehending the very fame matter and Argument, wherewith the greatest part of the fottifhe forte Arme themselues to couer and defend their Follies. It is red and feene to often by common custome, and therefore needelesse heere to display what rage doth gouerne, and headlong hale fonde and licentious youth (conducted by the pangue of loue, if the fame be not moderated by reafon, and cooled with sacred Lessons) euen from the cradle to more muture and riper age. For the Tiranny of Loue amonges all the deadly Foes that vexe and afflict our mindes, glorieth of his force, vaunting hymselfe able to chauge the proper nature of things, be they never so founde and perfect: who to make them like his luftes, transformeth himselfe into a subftaunce qualified diuerfly, the better to intrap futch as be giuen to his vanities. But hauing auouched so many examples before, I am content for this prefent to tell the
difcourfe of two persons, chaunced not long after them in Catheloigne. Of a Gentleman that for his constancy declared two extremities in himselfe of loue and folly. And of a Gentlewoman so fickle and inconstant, as loue and they which wayted on him, be disordered, for the trufleffe grounde whereupon fuch foundation of servise is layed, which yee shall eafely conceiue by well viewing the difference of thef twayne: whom I meane to summon to the lifts, by the blast of this founding trump. And thus the fame beginneth. Not long after that the victorous and Noble Prynce, yonge Ferdinandus, the Sonne of Alphonfus Kyng of Aragon was deade, Lewes the Twelfth, that tyme being Frenche king, vpon, the Marches of Catheloigne, betwene Barcelona, and the Mountaines, there was a good Lady then a Wyddow, which had bene the Wyfe of an excellant and Noble knight of the Countrey, by whom she hadde left one only Daughter, which was so carefully brought vp by the mother as nothinge was to deare or hard to bee brought to passe for hir desire, thinking that a creature so Noble and perfect, could not be trayned vp to delicately. Now beides hir incomparable furniture of beauty, this Gentlewoman was adorned with Hayre fo fayre, curle, and Yealow, as the new fined golde was not matchable to the fhining locks of this tender Infant, who therefore was commonly called Gineura la Blonde. Halfe adayes iorjey from the house of this Wyddow, lay the lands of another Lady a Wydow also, that was very rich, and fo wel allied as any in all the Land. This Lady had a Sonne, whom she caufed to be trayned vp fo well in Armes and good letters, as in other honeft Exercifes proper and mete for a Gentleman and great Lorde, for which repect shee had sent him to Barcelona the chyefe Citty of all the Countrey of Catheloigne. Senior Dom Diego, (for fo was the Sonne of that Wydow called) profited fo well in all thynge, that when hee was 18 yeares of age, there was no Gentleman of his degree, that did excell him, ne yet was able to approche vnto his Perfections and commendable Behauior. A thing that did fo well content the good Lady his mother as she could not tell what countenaunce to keepe to couer hir ioy. A vice very common to fond and foolish mothers, who flatter themselues with a shadowed hope of the future goodneffe of their children, which many times
doth more hurt to that wanton and wilfull age, than profit or
aduancement. The persuasion also of fuch towardnesse, full oft
dothe bee farre more vile than before they were: whereby the
fird Table (made in his fird colours) of that imagined vertue, can
take no force or perfection, and fo by incurring sundry mishaps
the Parent and Chylde commonly escape not without equal blame.
To come agayne therefore to our difcourse: It chaunced in that
tyme that (the Catholike Kyng deceased) Phillippe of Auftrich
which Succeeded him as Heyre, paffing through Fraunce came into
Spayne to bee Inuefted, and take Possifion of all hys Seigniories,
and Kyngdomes: which known to the Cityzens of Barcelona,
they determined to receive hym with fuch Pompe, Magnificence,
and Honor, as duly appertaineth to the greatnes and maiestie of
fo great a Prince, as is the fonne of the Romane Emperour. And
amonges other thinges they prepared a Triumphhe at the Tilt, where
none was suffred to enter the lifts, but yong Gentlemen, fuch as
neuer yet had followed armes. Amongs whom Don Diego as the
Nobleft perfon was choosen chiefe of one part. The Archduke then
come to Barcelona after the receyued honors and Ceremonies,
acciufomed for fuch entertainement, to gratifie his Subiects, and
to fee the brauery of the yong Spanish Nobility in armes, would
place himfelve vpon the fcaffolde to iudge the courfes and vali-
ance of the runners. In that magnifique and Princely conflict,
all mens eyes were bent vpon Dom Diego, who courfe by courfe
made hys aduerfaries to feele the force of his armes, his manhood,
and dexterity, on horfebacke, and caufed them to muefe vpon his
toward valianc in time to come, whose noble Gheffs then acquired
the victory of the Campe on his fide. Which moued King
Phillip to fay, that in all his life he neuer faw triumph better
handled, and that the fame feemed rather a battell of strong and
hardy men, than an exercife of yong Gentlemen neuer wonted
to support the deeds of armes, and trauayle of warfare. For
which caufe calling Dom Diego before him he fayd: "God
graunt (yong Gentleman) that your ende agree with your good
beginnings and hardy shock of proofe done this day. In memory
whereof I will this night that ye do your watch, for I meane to
morrow (by God's assistance) to dub you Knight." The yong Gentleman blushing for shame, vpon his knees kifled the Prince's hands, thanking him moft humbly of the honor and favors which it pleased his maiefty to do to him, vowing and promising to do so well in time to come, as no man should be deceyued of their conceyued opinion, nor the king frustrate of his service, which was one of his moft obedient Vassals and subieéts. So the next day he was made knight, and receyued the coller of the order at the hands of king Phillip, who after the departure of his prince which tooke his iorney into Castille, retired to his owne landes and house more to see his mother, whom long time before he had not feene, than for desire of pleasure that be in fieldes, which notwithstanding he exercized so well as in end he perceyued resiuaunce in townes and Citties, to be an imprisionment in respect of that he felt in Countrey. As the Poets whilome fayned Loue to shoote his Arrowes amid the Woods, Forrests, fertile Fields, Sea coasts, Shores of great Ryuers, and Fountayne brinkes, and alfo vpon the tops of Huge, and hygh Mountaynes at the purfute of the sundry forted Nymphes, and fieldifh Dimigods, deeming the same to bee a meane of liberty to follow Loue's tract without suspition, voyde of company and lothsome cries of Citties, where Jealousie, Enuy, false report, and ill Opinion of all things, haue pitched their Camp, and rayfed their Tents. And contrariwise franckly and wythout diffi-
mulation in the fieldes, the Freende discouering his passion to his Miftreffe, they enjoy the pleasure of hunting, the naturall musicke of Byrds and sometymes in pleasaunt Herbers compassed with the mur-
mur of some running Brookes, they communicate their Thoughts, beautifie the accorde and vniety of Louers, and make the place fa-
mous for the first witneffe of their amorous acquaintance. In like manner thrice, and foure times blest be they there, who leueng the vnquiet toyle that ordinarily doth chance to them that abyde in Citties, doe render duetty of their studies to the Mufes wherevnto they be moft Addicted. Now Dom Diego at his owne houfe loued and cherisheé of his mother, reuerenced and obeyed of hys Subieéts after he had imploied some time at his study, had none other ordinary pleasure but in rousing the Deere, hunting the wylde Bore, run the Hare, sometimes to fly at the Hearon, or fearful
DOM DIEGO AND GINEURA.

Partrich alongs the fields, Forests, Ponds, and steepe Mountaynes. It came to passe one day, as he Hunted the wylde Mountayne Goate, which he had diflodged vpon the Hill top, he espied an olde Hart that his Dogges had found, who so joyfull as was possible of that good lucke, followed the course of that swift, and fearefull beast. But (futch was his Fortune) the Dogges loft the foote of that pray, and he his men: for being horfied of purpose, vpon a fayre Iennet, could not be followed, and in ende loofinge the fight of the Deere, was so farre feuered from company, as he was utterly ignoraunt which way to take. And that which grieued him mofte was his Horfe out of Breath scarce able to goe a false Gallop. For which caufe he put his horne to his mouth, and blew so loude as he could: but his men were so farre of, as they could not here him. The young Gentleman being in this diffresse, could not tell what to doe, but to returne backe, wherein he was more deceyued than before, for thinkinge to take the way home to hys Caftle, wandred still further of from the fame. And trotting thus a long tyme, he spied a Caftle Situated vpon a little Hill, whereby he knew himselfe far from hys owne house. Neuer- thelesse hearing a certayne noyse of Hunters, thinking they had bene his People, reforted to the fame, who in deede were the Seruaunts of the Mother of Gineura with the golden Locks, which in company of their Mistrefse had hunted the Hare. Dom Diego, when he drue neere to the cry of the Hounds, saw right well that hee was deceyued. At what tyme Night approched, and the Shadowes darkening the Earth, by reafon of the Sunnes departure, began to Cloth the Heauens with a Browne and misty Mantell. When the Mother of Gineura faw the knight which Rode a softe pace, for that his Horfe was tired, and could traualye no longer, and knowing by his outward appearence that he was some great Lord, and ridden out of his way, sent one of hir men to knowe what he was, who returned agayne with futch aunswered as shee defired. The Lady joyfull to entertayne a Gentleman so excellent and famous, one of hir next neighbors, went forwarde to bid hym welcome, which she did with fo great curtefy as the Knight fayd vnto hir: "Madame, I thynke that fortune hath done me this fauour, by setting me out of the way, to prowe your
certain the receive for man Yee and thincke truft perfeemed my good frend, happenefle liberally feb in at fayd vifiting curtefie which aunfwere, no hee that moft order face. Upon Family of that Houfhold, forced man worthieft two gorgeous themfelues, that attire fo should the the and disparcled, miled with Foreheade, wardes contemplation his that, heede mine the Urie and forfhould the Adoration and endure the for hire, and beholding hir at his pleafure, was fo aftenomed, as hee could not tell what to aunfwere, his eyes were fo fixed vpon hir, spendinge his lookes in contemplation of that frethe hew, flayned with a red Vermilion, vpon the Alabaftcr and fayre colour of hir cleare and beautiful face. And for the imbelifhing of that naturall perfeftion, the attire vpon hir head was fo couenable and proper, as it seemed the fame day shee had Looked for the comming of him, that afterwardes induced fo mutch for hir fake. For hir head was Adorned with a Garlande of Floures, interlaced wyth hir Golden, and Enamed hayre, which gorgeously couered fome part of hir Shoulders, difparcled, and hanging down fome tyme ouer hir paffing fayre Foreheade, somewhyles vpon hir ruddy Cheekes, as the Sweete, and Pleafaunt windy Breath dyd moue them to, and fro: Yee should have fene hir wauering and crisped treffes disposed with fo good grace, and comelyneffe, as a man would haue thought that Loue and the three Graces coulde not tell els where to harbor themsfelues, but in that riche and delectable place of pleafure, in gorgeous wife laced and imbrauaded. Vpon hir Eares did hang two Sumptuous and Riche orientall Pearles, which to the artificiaall order of hir hayre added a certen splendent brightnes. And he that had beholden the fhining and large Forehead of that Nimph which Gallantly was befet with a Diamonde of ineflimable price
and value, chaed with a treffe of Golde made in form of little Starres, would haue thought that he had seene a Rancke of the twickeling Planettes, fixed in the Firmament in the hottest time of Sommer, when that fayre feaon discouereth the order of his glittering Cloudes. In lyke maner the sparkeling eyes of the fayre Gentlewoman, adorned with a stately vaulte with two Archers, equally by euen spaces distinc, and deuided, fayned with the Ebene Indian tree, did fo well set forth their Brightneffe, as the eyes of them that stayed their lookes at Noone daye's directly vpon the Sunne, could no more be dazeled and offended, than thofe were that did contemplate thofe two flaminge Starres, which were in force able throughly to pierce euen the Bottome of the inward partes. The Nofe well foured, iuifully placed in the Amiable valley of the Vyfage, by equall conformity Diftinguished the two Cheekes, fayned wyth a pure Carnation, refemblinge two lyttle Apples that were arryued to the due time of their maturity and ripeneffe. And then hir Coralline mouth, through which breathing, issued out a breath more foote and fauorous than Ambre, Muske, or other Aromaticall Parfume, that euer the sweete Soyle of Arabie brought forth. She sometime vnclofing the doore of hir Lips, discouered two rancke of Pearles, fo finely blanched, as the pureft Orient would blufhe, if it were compared with the Beauty of thys incomparabe whiteneffe. But hee that will take vpon hym to speake of all hir inspakeable Beauty, may make his vaunte that he hath feene all the greatest perfections that euer dame Nature wrought. Now to come a little lower, on this frefhe Diana appeared a Neck, that furmounted the Blaunch colour of Mylke, were it neuer fo excellent white, and hir Stomacke some-what mounting by the two Pomels, and firme Teates of hir Breastes separated in equal distaunce, was couered wyth a vayle, fo lofe, and fine, as thofe two little pretie Mountaynes might easily be Difcried, to mowe, and remoue, according to the affection that rofe in the centre of that modest, and sober Pucelle's mynde: who ouer, and beides all thys, had futch a pleaunant Countenance, and ioyefull cheere, as hir Beauty more than wonderfull, rendred hir not fo woorthy to be feruued, and loued, as hir natural good-nesse, and difpoed curtesie appearing in hir Face, and hir excel-
lent entertaynement and comely Grace to all indifferently. This was not to imitate the maner of the most parte of our fayre Ladies, and Gentlewomen, who (mooued wyth what Opinion I know not) be so disdaynefull, as almoft their name caufeth discontentment, and breedeth in them great imperfection. And who by thinking to appeare more braue, and fine, by to mutch fqueymifie dealing, doe offificate and darken with folly their exterior Beauty, blotting, and defacing that which beauty maketh amiable, and worthy of honor. I leaue you now to confider wheather Dom Deigo had occafoon to Forgo his Speach, and to bee bereft of Senfe, being liuely affayled with one fo well armed as Gineura was with hir Graces and Honesty: who no leffe abashd with the Port, Countenaunce, sweete talk, and flately Behauiour of the knight, which she viewed to be in him by stealing lookes, felt a motion (not wonted or accuftomd) in hir tender heart, that made hir to chaunge color, and by like occasion speachleffe: an ordinary cuftome in them that be surprised with the malady of loue to lose the vfe of speach where the fame is moft needefull to gieue the intier charge in the heart, which not able to support and bære the burden of fo many passions, departeth some portion to the eyes, as to the faithfullmessengers of the mynde’s secret conceipts, which tormented beyond measure, and burninge with affection, caufeth sometimes the Humor to gufhe out in that parte that discouered the firft affault, and bred the caufe of that Feuer, which frighted the hearts of those two yong persons, not knowing well what the fame might be. When they were come to the Caftle, and dismounted from their Horffes, many Welcomes and Gratulations were made to the knight, which yelded more wood to the fire, and liuely touched the yong Gentleman, who was fo outraged with loue, as almoft he had no minde of himselfe, and rapt by litle, and little, was fo intoxicated with an Amorous passion, as all other thoughtes were lothome, and Ioye displeasaunt in respect of the fauousable Martridome which hee suffered by thinking of his fayre and gentle Gineura. Thus the knight which in the morning disposed him felfe to pursue the Hart, was in heart fo attached, as at euening he was become a Servaunt, yea and futch a Slawe, as that voluntary feruitude wholly disposed him from his former
Freedome. Thes be the fruiicthes also of Folly, inuegling the lookes of men, that launch themselfes with eyes shut into the Gulfe of despayre which in ende doth cause the ruin and ouerthrow of him, that yeldeth thereunto. Loue proceedeth neuer but of opinion: so likewise the ill order of those that bee afflicted with that Paflion, ryfeth not elsewhere, but by the fond perfuafion which they conceiyue, to bee Blamed, Defpifed, and deceyued of the thing beloued: where if they measured that paflion according to his valor, they would make no more accoumt of that which doth torment them, than they do of their health, honor, and life, which loue for their great seruice and labor deludeth them, and recompenfeth another with that for which the foolifh Louer impoyeth thys trauel, which at length doth haffe defpaire, and ende more than deperate, when an other enjoy that, for which hee hath fo longe time beate the Bushes. During the time that supper was prepayring, the Lady fente hir men to feeke the huntefmen of Dom Diego, to gyue them knowledge where he was become, and thereof to certify his mother, who when she heard tell that her fonne was lodged there, was very glad beyng a ryght good fryend and very familiar Neighbor with the Lady, the hoffeffe of Dom Diego. The Gentleman at supper after he had tafted the feruent heate that broyled in his Minde, coulde eate little meate, beinge fatiffied with the feeding diete of his Amorous eyes, which without any maner of Jealoufe, distributed their nourishment to the heart, who fat very soberly, priuily throwing his secretly Prickes, with louely, and wanton lookes, vppon the heart of the fayre Lady, which for hir part spared not to render vfurty of rolling regardses, whereof he was so iparing, as almoift he durft not lift vp his eyes for dazeling of them. After Supper, the knight bidding the mother and Daughter good night, went to Bed, where in fleede of sleepe, he fell to fighinge and imageninge a thoufande diuers deuifes, fantasifying like number of follies, futsch as they doe whose Braynes be fraught loue. "Alas," (sayde hee) "what meaneth it, that alwayes I have lyued in fo great liberty, and noe doe feele my felf attache with futch bondage as I cannot expresse whose effects neuertheleffe be fastned in me? Haue I hunted to be taken? Came I from my houfe in liberty, to be
shut vp in Prylon, and do not know wheather I shall be receyued, or being receyued have intertainment, according to devert? Ah Gineura, I would to God, that thy Beauty did pricke mee no worste, than the tree whereof thou takeft thy name, is sharp in touching, and bitter to them that taste it. Truely I esteeme my comming hither happy (for all the Passion that I indure) with the purchase of a grieffe so lucky doth qualify the ioy, that made me to wander thus ouer frankly. Ah Fayre amonges the Fayrest, truely the fearefull Beast which with the bloudy Hare Houndes was torne in pieces, is not more Martired, than my heart deuided in Opinions vpon thyne Affection. And what doe I know if thou loueft an other more worthy to bee Fauoured of thee than thy poore Dom Diego. But it is impossible that any can approche the sincerite that I feele in my heart, determining rather to indure death, than to ferue other but Fayre and golden Gineura: therefore my loyalty receyuing no comparifon, cannot bee matched in man sufficient (for respect of the fame) to be called feruant of thine excellency. Now come what shal, by meanes of this, I am assured that so long as Dom Diego liueth, his heart shal receyue none other impreffion or defire, but that which inciteth him to loue, serue, and honor the fairest creature at thys day within the compaffe of Spayne.” Resolued hereupon, sweating, laboring, and travelling upon the framing of his loue, he founde nothing more expedient than to tel hir his passion, and let hir vnderstand the good wil that he had to do hir seruice, and to pray hir to accept hym for futch, as from that time forth would execute nothing but under the title of hir good name. On th’otherfide Gineura could not close hir eyes, and knew not the caufe almoft that so impeched hir of sleepe, wherefore now tofing on th’one fide, and then turning to the other, in hir rich and goodly Bed, fantasied no fewer deuises than passionated Dom Diego did. In th’end she concluded, that if the knight shewed hir any evident figne, or opened by word of mouth any Speach of loue and seruice, she would not refuse to do the like to him. Thus paffed the night in thoughts, fighes, and wishes betwene these 2 apprentises of the thing, whereof they that be learners, shal foone attayne the experience, and they that follow the occupation throughly, in short time be their crafts
maistres. The next day the knight would depart so soone as he was vp: but the good widow, imbracing the personage and good order of the knight in hir heart, more than any other that she had seene of long time, intreated him so earnestly to tarry as he which loved better to obey hir request then to depart, although fayne the contrary, in the end appeared to be vanquished vpon the great importunity of the Lady. Al that morning the Mother and the Daughter passed the time with Dom Deigo in great talke of common matters. But he was then more astonned and inamored than the night before, in futch wife as many times he aunswered so vnaply to their demaunds, as it was easily perceiued that his minde was mutch disquieted with some thing, that only did pooffe the force and vehemence of the same: notwithstanding the Lady imputed that to the shamefastnesse of the Gentleman, and to his simplicitie, which had not greatly frequented the company of Ladies. When dinner time was come, they were serued with futch great fare and sundry delicats accordingly as with hir hart the wyshd to intertain the young Lord, to the intent from that time forth, he might more willingly make repaire to hir house. After dinner he rendred thanks to his hostesse for his good cheare and intertainment that he had receiued, affuring hir, that all the dayes of his Life he would imploy himselfe to recompence hir curtsey, and with all duety and indeuor to acknowledge that fauor. And hauing taken his leave of the mother, he went to the Damofell, to hir I say, that had fo fore wounded his hearte who already was so deeply grauen in his mind, as the marke remained there for euer, taking leave of hir, kifed hir handes, and thinking verily to expresse that whereupon hee imagined all the Nyghte, his Tongue and Wits were fo tyed and rapt, as the Gentlewoman perfectly perceiued this alteration, whereat she was no whit discontented and therefore all blufhyng, sayde vnto him: "I pray to God fir, to eafe and comfort your gryefe, as you leauie vs defirous and glad, long to enjoy your company." "Truely Gentlewoman," (aunswered the Knyght) "I think my selfe more than happy, to heare that wyth proceede from futch a one as you be, and specially for the desir which you say you haue of my presence, whych shall be euer readye
to doe that whych it shal please you to commaunde." The
Gentlewoman baftfull for that offer, thanked hym verye heartilye
praying him wyth sweete and smilinge Countenance, not to for-
get the waye to come to viſte them, beyng wel affured, that hir
mother would be very glad thereof. "And for mine owne part,"
(quod she) "I shall thinke my self happy to be partaker of the
pleasure and great amity that is betwene our two houfes." After
great reuerence and leaue taken between them, Dom Diego re-
turned home, where he tolde his mother of the good interteyn-
ment made him, and of the great honeſty of the Lady hys hofteffe:
"Werfore madam," (quod he to hys Mother) "I am defyrous
(if it be your pleasure) to let them know how much their bounti-
full hospitallty hath tied me to them, and what defire I have to
recompence the fame. I am therefore wyllying to bydde them hyther,
and to make them so good cheare, as wyth all theyr
Hearte they made me when I was wyth them." The Lady whych
was the affured fryende of the Mother of Gineura, lyked well the
adyufe of hir fonne, and tolde him that they shoulde bee welcome,
for the aunciente amity of long time betwene them, who was
wont many times to visit one an other. Dom Diego vpon his
mother's words, fent to intreat the Lady and fayr Gineura, that it
woulde pleafe them to do him the honour to come into his houfe:
to which request she so willingly yielded, as he was defirus to
bid them. At the appointed day Dom Diego fought al meanes
possibl honourably to recyeue them: In meates whereof there
was no want, in Instrumunts of all fortues, Mummeries, Moreſcoes,
and a thouſand other paſtymes, whereby he declared his good
bringing vp, the gentlenesse of his Spyryte, and the desire that he
had to appeare futch one as he was, before hir, which had already
the full poſſefſion of his liberty. And bicaufe he would not faile
to accompliſhe the perfection of his intent, hee inuyted all the
Gentlemen and Gentlewomen that were his neighbours. I will not
here deſcribe the moſte part of the prouifion for that feaſt, nor
the diuerſity of Meates, or the delicate kyndes of Wines. It shall
fuſſiſe mee to tell that after dynner they dancd, where the
knight tooke his miftrefſe by the hand who was fo glad to see hir
felse so advanced, as he was content to be so neere hir, that was
the sweete torment and vnspakeable passion of his mynd, whych
hee began to discouer vnto hir in this wyfe: "Miftreffe Gineura
I have ben alwayes of this Minde, that Musike hath a certaine
secrte hydden vertue (which wele can not be expressed) to reuie
the thoughts and cogitations of man, be he neuer so mornfull and
penfue, forcing him to vttre some outward reioyfe: I speake it
by my self, for that I liue in extreme anguifh andayne, that al
the ioy of the World feemeth vnto mee displeaunta, care, and dis-
quyetnisse: and neuerthelesse my passion, agreeing with the
plaintife voice of the Instrumment, doth rejoyce and conceiue com-
forte, as well to heare inefnable tinges conformable to my desires
as alfo to see my self so neere vnto hir, that hath the falue to
cufe myayne, to discharge my difeafe, and to depreyue my Mynd
from all grifes. In like maner reafon it is, that she hir felse do
remedy my difeafe, of whom I receiued the prycke, and which
is the firt foundation of all mine euil." "I can not tell" (layd
the Gentlewoman) what difeafe it is you speake of, for I shoulde
bee very vnkinde to gieue him occafion of grieue, that doth make
vs this great cheere." "Ah Lady myne," (layd the knight,
fetching a figh from the bottome of his heart,) "the intertayn-
ment that I receyue by the continuall contemplation of your
duine Beauties, and the vnspakeable brightnisse of thofe two
Beames, which twinkle in your Face, bee they that happily doe vex me, and make me drink this Cup of bitterniffe, wherein not-
withftanding I finde fuch sweeteniffe as al the Heauenly Drincke
called Ambrofia, fayned by the Poets, is but Gall in repect of that
which I tafte in mynde, feeling my devotion fo bent to do you ser-
vice, as onely Death shall vnty the knot wherewith voluntarily I
Knyt my felse to be your Seruaunt for euer, and if it fo pleafe vou,
your Faythfull, and Loyall Frende, and Hufbande." The yonge
Damofell not wonted for to heare fuch Songs, did chaunge hir
coloure at leaft three or foure times, and neuerthelesse fayned a
little angre of that which did content hir moft: and yet not fo
farpe, but that the Gentleman perceyued well enough, that fhee
was touched at the quicke, and alfo that he was accepted into hir
good Grace and Fauoure. And therefore hee continued fyll hys talke, all that time after dinner, vntill the Mayden made hym thys aunswere: "Sir, I will nowe confesse that grieffe may couer alteration of affections proceeding of Loue. For although I had determined to dissemble that which I thinke, yet there is a thinge in my Mynde (which I can not name) that gouerneth mee so farre from my proper Deuifes, and Conceyptes, as I am constrayned to doe that which this second Inspiration leadeth mee vnto, and forceth my Mynde to receyue an Impreffion: but what will be the ende thereof, as yet I knowe not. Notwythstandinge, repofinge mee in youre Vertue, and Honefly, and acknowledgynge youre merite, I thincke my felfe happy to haue sutch one for my Freende, that is fo Fayre and comely a knight, and for sutch I doe accept you vntill you haue obtayned of the Lady, my Mother, the second poynst, which may accomplishe that which is moſte defyreed of them, that for vertue's fake do loue. And but for that you shall bee none otherwyse fauoured of me, than hytherto you haue ben."

"Tyll now haue I attended for thys ryght happye day of Ioy and Blyffe (fayd the Knyght) in token whereof, I doe kyſſe your whyte and delycate Hands, and for acknowledging the fauour that preſently I do receiue, I make my vaunt to be the seruaunt of hir that is the fayreft, and moſt curteous Gentlewoman, on thys side the Mountaynes." As hee had finifshed thofe words they came to couer for Supper, where they were serued fo honourably, as yf they had ben in the Court of the Monarch of Spayne. After Supper they went to walke abroade alongs the Riuerside, beſette wyth Wyllow Trees, where both the Beauty of the time, the runnyng Ryuer, the Charme of the Natural musike of birds, and the pleaſant Murmure of the tremblyng Leaues, at the whifleyng of the swete Weſterne Wynd, moued them agayne to renew theyr Paſtyme after Dynner. For some dyd gyue themſelves to talke, and to deuſe of delectable matter: fome framed Nofegayes, Garlandes, and other prety poſyes for theyr Fryendes; other fome did leape, runne, and throwe the Barre. In the end a great Lord, neighbor to Dom Diego, whose name was Dom Roderico, knowynge by his Fryend's Countenaunce to what faynt hee was vowed, and perceyu-
ing for whose love the feaft was celebrate, tooke by the hand a Gentlewoman that fate nexte to Fayre Gineura, and prayed her to daunce after a Song, whereunto shee beeynge pleaunt and wyse, made no great refusall. Dom Diego fayled not to ioyne wyth hys myftrefle, after whome folowed the rest of that noble trayne, euer of them as they thought best. Now the Gentlewoman, that was ledde into daunce, fong thys fong fo apt for the purpose, as if shee had entred the heart of the Ennimy and Myftrefle of Dom Diego, or of purpofe had made the fame in the Name of hir, whom the matter touched aboue the rest.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all, Than she that doth hir lover's heart poifífe in bondage thrall?

The yong and tender feebleness
Of myne vnskiffulll age,
Wherof also the tenderneffe
Doth feeble heart affluage:
Whom Beautye's force hath made to frame
Vnto a Louter's heft,
So foone as firft the kindled flame
Of louinge Toyes increft.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all, Than she that doth hir lover's heart poifífe in bondage thrall?

I haue aßayed out to put
The fier thus begoone,
And haue attempted of to cut,
The threede which louver hath spoone:
And new alliance fayne would flee
Of him whom I loue beft,
But that the Gods haue willed me
To yeld to his request.

Who may better sing and daunce among vs Ladies all, Than she that doth hir lover's heart poifífe in bondage thrall?

So amiable is his grace,
Not like among vs all:
So paffing fayre is his Face,
Whose hue doth fayne us all:
And as the shining sunny day
Doth eu’ry man delight,
So he alone doth beare the sway,
Amongs eche louing wight.

Who may better fing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all
Than she that doth hir louer’s heart poseffe in bondage thrall?

Why should not then, the fayrest dame,
Apply her gentle minde,
And honor giue vnto his name,
Wyth humble heart and kinde?
Sith he is full of curtefie,
Indewd with noble grace,
And breft replete with honesty,
Well knowne in euery place.

Who may better fing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louer’s heart poseffe in bondage thrall?

If I shold loue, and serue him than,
May it be counted vice?
If I retayne that worthy man,
Shall I be deemde vnwife?
I will be gentle to him fure,
And render him myne ayde:
And loue that wight with heart full pure,
That neuer loue affayde.

Who may better fing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louer’s heart poseffe in bondage thrall?

Thus the moft sacred vnity,
That doth our hearts combine:
Is voyde of wicked flattery,
The fame for to vntwine.
No hardned rigor is our guide,
Nor folly doth vs lead:
No Fortune can vs twayne deuide,
Vntill we both be deade.

Who may better fing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louer’s heart poseffe in bondage thrall?
And thus assured certaynely,
That this our loue shall dure,
And with good lucke hope verely,
The fame to put in vre
The fowen feedes of amity,
Begon betwixt vs twayne,
Shall in most perfect vnity,
For euermore remayne.

Who may better sing and daunce amongs vs Ladies all,
Than she that doth hir louer's heart posseffe in bondage thrall?

Thys Song delighted the Myndes of many in that company, and principally Dom Deigo, and Gineura, who felt themselues tickled without laughing: And the mayden reioyfed to heare hir selfe so greatly prayfed in so noble a company, and specially in the presence of hir friende who had no leffe pleasure by hearing the praifes of his beloved, than if he had bin made Lord of all Aragon. She for all hir dissembled Countenaunce could not hide the alteration of hir Mynde, without sending forth a sodayne chaunge of colour, that forced a fayre and goodly taynt in hir Face. Dom Diego seeing that mutation, was so ioyful as was possible, for thereby he knew and Iudged himselfe assured of the good grace of hys Mitreffe, and therefore wringing hir finelly by the hands, sayd vnto her very soberly Smiling: “What greater pleasure my louinge Wench can there happen vnto your Seruaunt, than to see the accomplishment of this Propheticall Song? I affure you that in all my life I never heard muficke, that delighted me so mutch as this, and thereby doe vnderstand the good will of the Gentlewoman, which so curteously hath discouered yours towards me, and the faythfull seruice whereof you shall fee me from henceforth so liberall, as neyther goods nor life shalbe spared for your sake.” Ginuea who loued him with all hir heart, thanked him very humbly, and prayed him to beleue that the Song was truely soonge, and that without any fayle, shee that soonge, had thereby manysested all the secrets of hir mynde. The daunce ended, they sat them downe rounde about a cleare Fountayne, which by silent discourse, issuied from an high and moyfity rock, enuironned
DOM DIEGO AND GINEURA.

with an infinite number of Maple trees, Poplars, and Ashes. To
which place a Page brought a Lute to Dom Diego, whereupon hee
could play very well, and made it more plesauntly to found for
that hee accorded hys Fayninge Voyce to the Instrument, Singing
this song that followeth.

That I should loue and serue also, good reason doth require,
What though I sufFer loathsome grief, my life in woe to wrap?
The same be th’only instruments of my good lueke and hap,
The fooe and pray for hungry corps, of reft th’assured hire.

By thought wherof (O heauy man) gush forth of teares great
tore
And by and by reioyft agayne, my driery teares do ceafe:
Which guerdon shall mine honor sure in that triumphant peace,
The summe wherof I offer now, were it of price mutch more.

Which I do make withall my heart, vnto that blessed wight,
My proper Goddesse here on earth, and only mistresse deere :
My goods and life, my brething goffe within this carcafe here,
I vow vnto that maefty, that heauenly starre moft bright.

Now fith my willing vow is made, I humbly pray hir grace,
To end th’accord betwene vs pight, no longer time to trachte:
Whych if it be by fured band, so haply brought to passe,
I muft my self thrice happy count, for that moft heauenly fact.

Thys Song made the company to mufe, who commended the
trim inuention of the Knight, and above all Gineura prayed him
more than before, and could not so well refrayne hir lookes from
him, and he with counterchaunge rendring alike agayne, but that
the two wydowes their Mothers tooke great heede thereof, reioy-
fing greatly to see the fame, defirous in time to couple them
together. For at that present they deferred the fame, in confide-
ration they were both very young. Notwithstanding it had bene
better that the fame Coniunction had ben made, before Fortune
had turned the Wheele of hir vnstables. And truely delay and
prolongation of time sometymes bryngeth furch and so great
mischappe that one hundred times men curse their fortune, and
little aduyfe in foresight of their infortunate chaunces that com-
monly do come to passe. As it chaunced to thofe Wydowes, one
of them thinking to loose hir fon by the vaine behauor of the
other’s daughter, who wythout the help of God, or care vnto his
wil, disparaged hir honor, and prepared a poyfon so daun-erous
for his Mother’s age, as the foode thereof hastened the way to the
good Ladye’s Grave. Now whiles this loue in thys manner increased
and that the desire of these two Louers, flamed forth ordinarily
in fire and flames more violent, Dom Diego all chaunced and
trannformed into a new man, receiued no delght, but in the sight
of his Gineura. And she thought that there could be no greater
Felicity or more to be wythed for, than to haue a Fryend so per-
fect, and so well accomplisched wyth all thyngs requisite for the
ornament and full furniture of a Gentleman. This was the occa-
- sion that the young Knyght let no Weeke to passe without visiting
his myltrefe twice or thrice at the leaft, and she did vnto hym
the greatest curtsey and beft Entertainement, that vertue could
fuffer a Mayden to doe, whych was the diligent Treasuruer and care-
ful tutor of hir honor. And this she dyd by consent of hir
Mother. In lyk maner, honestie doth not permiet chaft Maydens
to vfe long talk or immoderate speach, with the fyrft that be futers
vnto them, and mutch leffe seemely it is for them to be ouer
squeimish Nice, wyth that man whych seeketh (by way of mar-
riage) to wynne power and tytle of the Body, beyng in very
deepe, or ought to be the moicety of theyr foule. Sutch was the
defyres of these two Louers, which notwithstanding was impeached
by meanes, as hereafter you shal heare. For duryng the re-
bounding joy of thofe faire couple of Loyall Louers, it chaunced
that the Daughter of a Nobleman of the Countrey, named Ferrando
de la Serre, whych was fayre, very Comely, Wife, and of good
behauior, by keepyng daily Company with Gineura, fell ex-
tremely in loue with Dom Diego, and affayed by all meanes to
do him to vnderstand what the puifance was of hir Loue which
willingly shee meant to beftowe vpon him, if it would please hym
to honor hir so much, as to love hir with like sincerity. But the knight which was no more his own Man, beyng possesed of another, had with hys Lybertye lost his Wyts and Mynd to marke the affectyon of this Gentlewoman, of whom he made no accompt. The Maiden neuertheless ceased not to love him, and to prowe all possible wayes to make him hir owne. And knowing how much Dom Diego loused Hawking, she bought a hauke the best in all the countrey, and sent the same to Dom Diego, who wyth all his heart receiued the same, and affectuousely gau thankes for that desired gyft, praying the messanger to recommend him to the good grace of his miftreffe, and to affure hir self of his faithfull servuce, and that for hir fake he would kepe the Hauke so tenderly as the Balles of his eyes. Thys Hauke was the cause of the ill fortune that afterwards chaunced to this poore Louer. For going many times to see Gienura with the hauke on his fift and bearing with him the tokens of the goodnesse of his Hauke, it escaped his mouth to say, that the same was one of the things that in all the World he loved best. Truely this Word was taken at the first bound contrary to his meaning, wherewith the matter so fell out, as afterwards by despayre he was like to lose his Lyfe. Certaine dayes after, as in the absence of the knight, talk rofe of his vertue and honest conditions, one praying his proweffe and valyance, another his great Beauty and Curtefy, another passing further, extolling the sincere affectyon and constancy which appeared in him touching matters of Loue, one enious person named Gracion spake his mind of hym in this wyse: "I will not deny but that Dom Diego is o:e of the most excellent most honest and brauest knyghtes of Catheloigne, but in matters of Loue he seemeth to me so walteryng and inconstant, as in every place where he commeth, by and by he faileth in loue, and maketh as though he were fickle and would dy for the same." Gineura maruellling at those words saide vnto hym: "I pray you my frend to vse better talk of the Lord Dom Diego. For I do thynk the Loue whych the Knight doth bera to a Gentlewoman of thys countrey, is so firme and assured, as none other can remove the same out of the siefe of hys mind?" "Lo howe you be deceiued Gentlewoman" (quod Gracion) "for vnder colour of diffymulate servuce, he and futch as he is doe abufe the simplicitie of young

VOL. III.
Gentlewomen. And to prowe my sayinge true, I am affured that he is extremely enamored wyth the Daughter of Dom Ferrando de la Serre, of whom he receyued an Hauke, that he loueth aboue all other things." Gineura remembrying the words which certayn dayes before Dom Diego spake touching his hauke, began to suspec and beleue that which Gracian alleaged, and not able to support the choler, which cold Iealosy bred in hir stomack, went into hir Chaumber full of so greate grye and heauynesse as she was many tymes lyke to kyll hir selfe. In the end, hopyng to be reuenged of the wrong whych she beleued to receyue of Dom Diego, determyned to endure hir fortune paciently. In the meane tyme she conceyued in hir Mynd a defpyte and hatred fo great and extreame agaynst the poore Gentleman that thought lyttle hereof, as the former loue was nothing in respecke of the reuenge by death which she then defired vpon hym. Who the next day after his wonted maner came to fee hir, hauing (to hys great damage) the hauke on his fishe, which was the onely caufe of all her Iealosie. Nowe as the knyght was in talke with the Mother, seyng that his beloved came not at al (accordyng to hir custome) to salute him and bid him welcome, inquired how she dyed. One that knew hym more than the rest, sayde vnto hym: "Syr, so soone as she knewe of your comming, immedyately she wythdrew hir self into hir Chaumber." He that was wyfe and well trayned vp diffembled what he thought, imagininge that it was for some lyttle fantasie, whereunto Women wyllingly be subiecte. And therefore when he thought time to depart he tooke leve of the wydow, and as he was goyng down the faires of the great Chamber, he met one of the maides of Gineura, whom he prayed to commend him to hir mistresse. Gineura duryng al this time tooke no refe, deuising howe she myghte cutte of cleane hir loue entertained in Dom Diego, after she knewe that hee carried the hauke on his fishe: beyng the onely instrument of her frensie. And therefore thynkyng hir selfe both defpyfed and mocked of hir Knyght, and that he had done it in defpyte of hir, she entred into fo greate rage and Choler as she was like to fall mad. She being then in this trouble of Mynde, behold hir Gentlewoman came vnto hir, and dyd the knyght's message. Who hearing but the fymple name of hir sup-
pos'd Enemy, began to s'ge so strangely, as a Man would have thought hir foule presently would have departed hir Body. Afterwards when she had vanquished hir raging fit whiche stayed hir speach, she gan very tenderly to wepe, sayeing: "Ah traytor and vnfaithful Louer, is thys the recompenche of the honost, and firme Amity whiche I haue borne thee, so wyckedly to deceiue me vnder the colour of so fain and detestable a Fryendship? Ah rafe and arrant Theefe, is it I vppon whom thou oughtest to bend thy wycked Trumperies? Doo's thou thinke that I am no better worth but that thou prodigally shouldest waste myne honor to bear the spoyles thereof to hir, that is in nothing comparable vnto me? Wherein haue I deferved thys diuercity, if not by louyng thee more than thy beauty and fained loue defere? Diddest thou dare to adventoure vppon me, haung thy confeyence wounded wyth such an abominable and deadly Treason? Durste thou to offer thy Mouth to kyfle my Hand, by the mouth of another, to whome thou haddest before dedicated thy lying Lyppes in thine owne person? I moff humbly thancke Almighty God that it pleased him to let me see the Poison by thee prepared for the ruine of my lyfe and honor. Ha foole, hope not to take me in thy Trap, nor yet to deceiue me through thy fygred and deceitfull Words. For I fweare by the Almyghty God, that so long as I shall liue, I will accompte thee none other, but the most cruell and mortall Enemy that I haue in this world." Then to accomplis the rest of hir carefull Minde she wrote a Letter to giue hir farewell to hir olde Friend Dom Diego. And for that purpose instructed hir Page with this Lefson, that when the knyght shoulde come, he shoulde be ready before hir lodging and say vnto him in the behalfe of hir, that before he paffed any further, hie shoulde reade the Letter, and not to sayle to doe the Contents: the Page which was malicious, and il affectioned to Dom Diego, knowyng the appointed day of hys comming, wayted for hym a quarter of a mile from the Castle, where he had not long taryed, but the innocent louer came, agaynst whome the page went, bearyng about him more hurtfull and noyforme weapons than al the Theeues and robbers had in all the Countrey of Catheloigne. In this manner presenting his mys-tresse letters, he said vnto him: "My Lord, madame Gineura my
mistresse hath sent me vnto you: and bicaufe she knoweth how feareful you be to displease hir, prayeth you not to saye to reade this Letter before you passe anye further, and there wyth al to accomplysh the effecte thereof.” The knyght abafhed wyth that todayne mefstage, aunswered the Page: “God forbid my fryend,” (quod he) “that I shoule disobey hir by anye meanes, vnto whom I haue gyuen a full authority and puifTauce over myne afFeftyons.” So receyuing the letters, he kiffed them thre or four times, and openyng them, found that he loked not for, and red that whych he thought not off. The contents were thefe.

The letters of faire Ginuera, to the Knight Dom Diego.

There shal passe no day of my Lyfe, from makyng complaynts of the difloyall and periured Louer, who being more esteemed and better beloued than thou dydft defernue, haft made fo small accompte of mee, whereof I wyll be ruerenged vpon my felfe, fo full of crafte and guyle. I am in mynd that thou henceforth shalt flye to buzze and beat the Bufhes, where thou fufpefteft to catch the pray: for heere thou art lyke to be deceived. Goe varlet, (goe I say,) to decyeue hir whych holdeth thee in hir nets and snares, and whose Pre-fentes (althoughe of small Value) moued thee more than the Honefte, Vertuous and Chafte Loue, that Vertue hir felfe began to knyttte betwene vs. And fith a Carrion Kyte hath made the fly further off, than the Wynde of the Ayre was able to bear thee, God defende that Ginuera shoulde goe aboute to hynder thy follyes, and mutch lefle to suffer hir felfe to bee beguyled throughge thine Excufes. Nay rather God defend (except thou defireft to fe me dy) that thou shouldeft ever bee in place where I am, affyrung thee of thys my mynde, neuer to be chaunged fo long as my soule shal reft wythin my body: which giuing breath vnto my panting breast, shal neuer be other, but a mortall enmy to Dom Diego; and futch one as even to the Death wyl not fayle to prosecute the default of the moft traiterous and vnfaythfull Knyght that euer was gyrte in girdle, or armed with Sword. And behold the laft favour that thou canft, or oughteft to hope of me, who
lyueth not but onelye to martir and crucify thee, and neuer shal beother but

The greatest Enemy, that euer thou haddest, or
shalt haue, Gineura the fayre.

The myferable louer had no sooner red the Letter, but lifting vp his eyes to the heauens, he sayd: "Alas, my God thou knowest well if euer I haue offended, that I ought to be banished from the place, where my contention is chyefly fixed, and from whence my heart shall never departe, chaunce what myfhefappes and Fortune so euer shall." Then tournyng himself towards the Page, hee sayd: "Sir Page my fryend, fay vnto my Ladye, moft humbley commending me vnto hir, that for this present time I wyll not see hir, but hereafter (he shall heare fome newes from me.)" The page well leffoned for the purpofe, made hym aunfwere, saying: "Sir, the hath wylled me to fay thus mutch by mount, that ye cannot do hir greater pleafure, than neuer to come in place where fhee is: for fo mutch as the Daughter of Dom Ferrando de la Serre hath fo catched you in hir nettes, that loth fe is your faithfull heart shoulde hange in ballance, and expect the uncertaine Loue of two Ladyes at once." Dom Diego hearing the truth of hys misfhep, and the occasion of the fame, made Lyghte of the matter for that tyme, till at length the Choler of his Mistrefte were abated, that thereby fhee might know vpon how bryttle Ground he hadde planted a fufpition of hir moft faithfull and louing Seruanunt, and so returfing to his Houfe, altogither vexed and yll contented, he wente into his Chaumber where with his Dagger he paunched the gorge of the poore birde, the caufe of hys Ladies Anger, faying: "Ha vyle carraine kite, I sweare by the bloud of him, that thou shalt neuer be the caufe agayne, to make hir fret for futch a triflying thing as thou art: I beleue that what fo euer fury is hidden within the Body of this cursed Kite, to engender a Plague, the fame now is feased on me, but I hope to doe my Mistrefte vnderftande what Sacrifice I haue made of the thynge that was fent me, ready to do the lyke vppon mine owne fleshe, where it shall pleafe her to commaund." So taking Inke and Paper, he made aunfwere to Gineura as foloweth.
The Letters of Dom Diego, to Gineura the faire.

But who would ever thynck (my Lady deare) that a Lyght Opinion could so soone have dewied your good iudgement, to condemne your Knight before you had heard what he was able to say, for himselp? truely I thought no more to offend you, than the man which you never knew, although you have bene deceived by colored words, utterd by thofe that be envious of my happe, and Enimies of your ioy, who have filled your minde full of false report. I swere unto you (by God, my good Lady) that never thinge entred into my fantafie more, than a defire to feme you alone and to auoide the acquaintance of all other, to preferue for you a pure and entire heart. Whereof longe agone I made you an offer. In wytnesse whereof I humbly befeech you to beleue, that so soone as you see this Birde (the caufe of your anger and occasion of my mishap) torne and pluckte in pieces, that my heart feeleth no leffe alteration or torment: for so long as I shall vnderstand your displeaure to endure against mee, affure your selue my Life shal abide in no leffe paine than my ioye was great when I franckly possessd your presence. Be it sufficient (Madame) for you to know, that I never thought to offend you. Be contented I befeech you, with this sacrifice which I send you, if not that I doe the like vpon myne owne body, which without your good will and grace can no longer liue. For my lyfe depending vpon that onely benefit, you ought not to be affermed if the fame fayling his nourishment doth pearish, as frustrate of that foode, propere, and apt for his Appetite: and by like meanes my fayd life shal reuiue, if it may pleaue you to spread your beames ouer mine obscure and base perfonage, and to receive thys satiffaction for a fault not committed. And so wayting a gentle aunfwer from your great curtefie, I humbly kifse your white and delicate handes, with all humility, praying God sweete Lady, to let you see how much I suffer without defert, and what puiuance you have ouer him that is all your:

Faythfull and euer servaunt
most obedient, Dom Diego.
The letter closed, and sealed, he delivered to one of his faithfull and secret Seruants, to beare (with the deade Hauke) vnto Gineura, charging him diligently to take heed to her countenance, and abowe all, that faithfully he should beare away what she dyd say vnto him for aunswere. His man sayled not to speede himselfe with diligence: and being come before Gineura, he presented that which his maister had sent hir. She full of wrath and indignation, would not once vouchsafe to reade the letter, and mutch leffe to accept the preuent which was a witnesse of the contrary of that shee did beleue, and turninge vnto the messeneger, she sayde: “My Frenede, thou mayest goe get thee backe agayne, wyth the selfe fame charge which thou haft brought, and say vnto thy mayster, that I haue nothing to doe with his Letters, his Excuses, or any other thing that commeth from his handes, as one hauing good experience of his sleights and deceipts. Tell him also, that I prayse God, in good time I haue taken heed to the little faith and trust that is in him for a countergarde, lightly neuer hereafter to bee deceit.” The seruyng man would sayne haue framed an Oration to purge his maister, but the fierce Gentlewoman brake of his talke, sayng vnto hym, that she was wel resolute vpon hir intent, whych was that Dom Diego shoulde neuer recouer place in hir minde: and that shee hated hym as mutch at that time as euuer shee loued him before. Vpon whych aunswere the Messanger returned, so sorrowfull for the Misfortune of his Mayster (knowing hym to bee very innocente) as he knew full well into what defpayre his Mayster would fall, when he vnderstode thofe pitifull and heavy newes: notwithstanding needes he must knowe them, and therefore when he was come before Dom Diego, he recyted vnto hym from poynpt to poynpt his ambaflage, and deliered hym agayn his Letters. Whereof the infortunate Gentleman was so sore astonned, as he was like to haue fallen downe dead at that instant. “Alas,” (fayd he) “what yll lucke is this, that when I thought to enioye the benefite of my attempte, Fortune hath revoluted to bryng me to the extremity of the moyste desperat man that ever lyued? Is it poissible that my good servuice shoulde bee the caufe of my approached ouerthrow? Alas, what may true and faithfull louers henceforth hope for, if not the loffe of theyr tyme, when
after long deuoiare and duetye, an Envious fool shall come to depyue them of theyr ioy and gladneffe, and they feelyng the bytternesse of theyr abandoned farewell, one that loueth leffe shall bear away the sweete fruite of futch hope, and shall pos-
seffe withoute deferte the glory due to a good and saythfull futer. 
Ah sayre Gineura, that thou feeft not the grieafe whych I do feele, 
and the affection wherewith I ferue thee, and how mutch I would 
suffer to gayne and recouer thy good grace and fauor. Ha vayne 
hope, which vntill now haft fyled me, with mirth and gladneffe, 
altogether fpent and ouerwhelmed in the gaulle of thy bytter 
fauour, and in the taft of thy corrupted lycour: better it had ben 
for me at the begining to haue refused thee, than afterwards 
receiued, cherished, and sincerely beloued, to be banished for fo 
light occaʃon, as I am ful fore ashamed to conceyue the fame 
within remembrance: but fortune shal not haue hir wil ouer me: 
for so long as I shall luye I wyll contynue the feruaunt of Gineura, 
and my lyfe I wyll preferue, to lette her vnderstand the force of 
Loue: by continuauce whereof, I wyll not ficike to fette my felfe 
on fyre with the liuely flames of my passions, and then withdrawe 
the fyrebrandes of my ioy, by the rigour and frowardneffe that 
shall procede from hir.” When he had fyniʃed his talke, he 
began to sigh and lament fo strangely, as his man was about to 
go cal the lady his mother. In whom dyd appeare futch signes, as 
if death had ben at hand, or els that he had ben attached wyth 
the Spirite of phrenfe. But when hee faue hym aboute to come 
agayne to himselfe, he fayed thus vnto him: “How now, fyr, wyl 
you caʃt your felfe away for the foolythe toy of an vndiscreete 
gire, yll mannered and taught, and who perchaunce doth al this 
to prove how constant you would be? No, no sir, you must turne 
ouer an other Leafe, and 4th you bee determyned to loue hir, you 
must perfeuerre in your pursute. For at length it is impossiובל, 
but that this Diamont hardneffe, must needes bee mollified, if she 
be not a Diuell incarnate, more furious than the wildef beasts, 
whych haunt the deferts of Lybia.” Dom Diego was comforted 
with that admonition, and purposed to perfor in hys affection, 
and therefore fent many meʃages, giftes, letters, and excuʃes to 
hys angry mistreffé Gineura. But she made yet leffe accompt
of them than of the first, charging the messangers not to trouble themselves about those trifles, for she had rather dye than see hym, or to receyue any thyng from him, whom she deadly hated. When newes hereof came to the knyght, he was altogether impatient, and seeing the small profite which he did gaine by pursuing his follyfh opinion, and not able to beftow his loue elsewhere, he determined to die: and yet vnwilling to imbrue his hands with his owne bloud, he purposfed to wander as a vagabond into some deferte, to perrourne the courfe of his vnhappy and sorowfull dayes, hoping by that meanes to quench the heat of that amorous rage, either by length of tyme, or by death, the laft refuge of the myferable. For which purpofe then, he caufed to be made two pylgrims wedes, the one for himfelfe, and the other for his man, and prepared al their necessaries for his voyaje. Then writing a Letter to his Gineura, he called one of his men, to whom he said: “I am going about certayne of myne affayres, whereof I will haue no man to knowe, and therefore when I am gone, thou shalt tell my Lady Mother what I say to thee, and that within twenty dayes (God willing) I meane to retourne: moreouer I require thee, that foure dayes after my departure, and not before, thou beare these letters to miftreffe Gineura, and if fo be she refuse to receyue them, fayle not to deliver them vnto hir mother. Take heed therefore if thou loue me, to do all that which I haue geuen thee in charge.” Afterwards he called his Seruaunt vnto hym, which had done the first meffage vnto Gineura, which was a wife, and gentle fellow, in whom the knight reposed great affiaunce, to him he declared all his enterprie, and th’ende whereunto his fierce determination did extend. The good Seruaunt whych loued his mayfter, hearing his intent fo unreasonable, fayde vnto hym: “Is it not enoufh for you fyr, to yelde your felfe a pray to the moft fierce, and cruell woman that lyueth, but thus to augment hir glory, by seeing hir felfe fo victorious over you? Are you ignoraunt what the mallice of Women is, and how much they triumph in tormenting the poore blynded soules that become their Seruaunts, and what prayfe they attribute vnto themselves, if by some mifffortune they drue them to difpaire? Was it without caufe that the Sage in times past did fo greatly hate that Sexe,
and Kinde, as the common Ruine, and overthow of men? What mooued the Greeke Poet to fing theefe verfes against all forts of Women?

A common woe though silly woman be to man,
Yet double ioy againe the doth vnto him bring:
The wedding night is one, as wedded folk tell can,
The other when the knill for hir poore foule doth ring.

If not for that he knew the happinesse of man consiifted more in auoyding the acquaintance of that fury, than by imbracing, and chearifging of the fame, Sith hir nature is altogether like vnto Ælop's Serpent, which being deliuered from pearill and daunger of death by the shepeheard, for recompence thereof, infected his whole house with his venomous hissings, and rammith Breath. O howe happy is hir that can mayster his owne affections, and like a free man from that paffion, can reioyce in liberty, fleeing the sweete euill which (as I well perceyue) is the caufe of your despayre. But fir, your wisedome ought to vanquifie thofe light conceits, by fettin fo light of that your rebellious Gentlewoman, as hir is vnworthy to be fauoured by fo great a Lord as you be, who deferueth a better perfonage than hir's is, and a frendlier entertainment than a farewell fo fondly giuen." Dom Diego, although that he tooke pleafure to heare thofe dicourfes of his faythfull feraunt, yet he fhewed fo fower a Countenaunce vnto him, as the other with theefe fewe wordes helde his peace: "Sith then it is fo fyr, that you be refolued in your mifhap, it may pleafe you to accept mee to wayte vpon you, whither you are determined to goe: for I meane not to liue at mine eafe, and fuffer my mayster, in Payne, and grieue. I will be partaker of that which Fortune shall prepare, vntill the heauens doe mitigate their rage vpon you, and your predefinate mifhap." Dom Diego, who defired no better company, imbraced him very louingly, thankinge him for the good will that hir bare him, and fayd: "This prefent Night about midnight, we wil take our Iourney, euon that way wheather our Lot and alfo Fortune shall Guide vs, attendinge eyther the ende of my Paffion, or the whole ouerthrow of my felfe." Their intent they did put in prooфе: for at Midnight the Moone being cleere
when all thinges were at rest, and the Crickets chirpinge through
the Creauifes of the Earth, they tooke their way vnseene of any.
And fo soone as Aurora began to garnish hir Mantle with colors
of red and white, and the morning Starre of the Goddresse of steali-
ing loue, appeared, Dom Diego began to sigh, saying: "Ah yee
frethe and devout Mornings, that my hap is farre from the quiet
of others, who after they have rested vpon the Cogitation of their
Ease, and ioye, doe awake by the pleafaunte Tunes of the Byrdes,
to perforume by effect that which the Shadowe and Fantaffe of
their Minde, did presfent by dreaming in the Night, where I am
contrayned to separate by great diftance exceeding vehement
continuation of my Torments, to followe wilde Beastes, wandring
from thence where the greateft number of men doe quietly sleepe
and take their rest. Ah Venus, whose Starre now conducteth me,
and whose beames long agoe did glow and kindle my louing heart,
how chaunceth it that I am not intreated according to the defert
of my constant minde and meaning most sincere? Alas, I looke
not to expect any thyng certayne from thee, fith thou haft thy
course amongs the wandring flarres. Muft the Influence of one
Starre that rul eth ouer mee, deface that which the Heauens would
to bee accomplisht, and that my cruel mistresse, deluding my
languors and griefs, triumpheth ouer mine infirmity, and over-
whelmeth me with care and forow, that I liue pyning away, amongs
the fauage beastes in the Wilderneffe? For somtach as without the
grace of my Lady, all company shalbe fo tedious and lothfom
vnto me, that the only thought of a true reconciliation with hir,
that hath my heart, shal ferue for the comfort and true remedy of
all my troubles." While he had with these pangs forgotten him-
selue, hee fawe that the day began to waxe cleere, the Sun already
spreading his golden beames vpon the earth and therefore haftily
he fet himself forthwards, vfang Bywayes, and far from common
vfed trades, fo neere as he could, that hee might not by any
means be knowne. Thus they rode forth till Noone: but seeing
their horse to be weary and faynt, they lighted at a village, farre
from the high way: where they refreshed themselues, and bayted
their horse vntill it was late. In this fort by the space of three
dayes they trauersed the Countrey vntill they arrivied to the foote
of a mountayne, not frequented almoft but by Wilde and sauage Beasts. The countrey round about was very fayre, pleafaunt, and fit for the folitarines of the Knight: for if shadow pleased him, hee might be delighted with the couerdt of an infinite number of fruiftfull trees, wherewith only nature had furnifhed those hideous and Sauage Defertes. Next to the high and wel timbred Forrests, there were groues and bushes for exercife of hunting. A man could defire no kinde of Venefon, but it was to be had in that Wildernefle: there might be feene also a certain sharpe and rude fitution of craggly, and vnfruiftful rocks, which notwithstanding yelded some pleafure to the Eyes, to fee theym tapifled with a pale moafe greene, which dispoed into a frizele Guife, made the place pleafaunt and the rock loft, according to the fashion of a courterture. There was also a very fayre and wide Caue, which liked him well compaffed round about with Firre trees, Pine apples, Cipres, and Trees distilling a certayne Rosen or Gumme, towards the bottom whereof, in the way downe to the valley, a man might haue viewed a paffing company of Ewe trees, Poplers of all fortes, and Maple trees, the Leave whereof fell into a Lake or Pond, which came by certayne fmal gutters into a frefh and very cleare fountayne right agaynft that Caue. The knight viewing the auncienty and excellency of the place, deliberated by and by to plant there the fiege of his abode, for performing of his penaunce and life. And therefore fayd unto his Seruaunt: “My friend, I am auifed that this place shall be the Monaftery, for the voluntary profeffion of our religion, and where we will accomplifh the Voyage of our Deuotion. Thou feeft both the beauty and folitarinefle, which do rather command vs here to ref, than any other place nere at hand.” The Seruaunt yelded to the pleafure of his mayfter, and fo lightinge from their horfe, they diuﬀurnifhed them of their Saddles, and Bridles, gieuing to them the liberty of the fields, of whom afterwards they neuer heard more newes. The faddles they placed within the Caue and leauing their ordinary apparell, clothed themfelues in Pilgrimes weedes, fortifying the mouth of the caue, that wilde beasts should not hurt them when they were a fleep. There the Seruaunt began to play the Vpyholfter, and to make 2 little beds of moffe,
DOM DIEGO AND GINEURA.

(whose spindle and wheele were of wood, so well polished and trimmed, as if he had bin a carpenter wel expert in that Science. They liued of nothing els, but of the fruicds of those wilde trees, sometymes of herbs, vntill they had deuised to make a crosbow of wood, wherewith they killed now and then a Hare, a Cony, a Kid, and many times some stronger beast remayned with them for gage: whose bloude they preffed out betwene two pieces of wood and rosted them against the Sunne, feruing the fame in, as if it had bene a right good Dish for their first course of their sober and vndelicate Table, whereat the pure water of the fountayne, next vnto their hollow and deepe house, ferued in stead of the good Wynes, and delicious Drinks that abounded in the house of Dom Diego. Who liuing in this poore state, ceaued night nor day to complayne of his hard fortune and cursed plight, going many times through the Defertes alone, the better to mufe and study thereupon, or (peraduenture) defirous that some hungry Beare should descend from the mountayne, to finishe his life and paynefull griefes. But the good Seruaunt knowing his Maysters forow and mishap, would never go out of his fight but rather exhort him to retourne home againe to his goods and poiffeions, and to forget that order of lyfe, vnworthy for fuch a perfonage as he was, and vncomely for him that ought to be indued with reaon and judgement. But the desperate Gentleman wilfull in his former deliberation, would not heare him speake of fuch retrayt. So that if it escaped the seruaunt to be earneft and sharpe agaynst the rudenesse and fottifh cruelty of Gineura, it was a paltime to see Dom Diego mount in choller againft him, saying: "Art thou fo hardy to speake il of the gentlewoman, which is the moft vertuous perfonage vnder the coape of heauen? Thou maift thancke the loue I bear thee, otherwise I would make thee feele how much the flaunter of hir toucheth mee at the heart, which hath right to punishe me thus for mine indiscretion, and that it is I that committ the wronge in complayning of hir feuerity." "Now fir," sayd the seruaunt, "I do indeede perceyue what maner of thing the contagion of loue is. For they which once doe feele the corruption of that Ayre, think nothing good or fauory, but the filthy smel of that pestiferous meat. Wherefore
I humbly beseech you a little to set apart, and remove from
minde, that feare and presumptuous dame Gineura, and by for-
getting hir beauty, to meaure hir Defert and your griefe, you
shall know then (being guided by reason's lore) that you are the
simplest and weakest man in the worlde, to torment your selfe in
this wise, and that she is the fondest Girle, wholly draught of
wits, so to abuse a Noble man that meriteth the good grace and
sweete embracement of one more fayre, wife and modest, than she
fheweth hirfelfe to be." The knight hearing these words thought
to abandon pacience, but yet replied vnto him: "I sweare vnto
thee by God, that if euer thou haue any futch talke agayne,
eyther I will dye, or thou shalt depart out of my company, for I
cannot abide by any meanes to suffer one to defpife hir whom I
do loue and honor, and shal fo do during life." The feruaunt
loath to offend his mayfter held his peace, heauy for all that in
heart, to remember how the poore gentleman was refolued to
finifh there, (in a defert unknowne to his Freendes) all the re-
meaunt of his life. And who aswell for the euill order, and not
accluteme nourture, as for affiduall playnts and weepings, was
become fo pale and leane, as he better resembled a dry Chip, than
a man, hauing feeling or lyfe. His eyes were fonke into his Head,
his Beard vnkempt, his hayre flaring, his skin ful of filth, alto-
gether more like a wilde and Sauage creature (futch one as is
depainted in brutal forme) than faire Dom Diego, fo mutch com-
mended, and efteemed throughout the kingdome of Spayne. Now
leauwe we this Amorous Hermit to paflionate and playne his mi-
ffortune, to fee to what ende the Letters came that he wrote to his
cruel Miftrrefe. The day prefixed for delivery of his Letters, his
feruaunt did his charge, and being come to the houfe of GineURA,
founde hir in the hall with hir mother, where kiffing his Mayfter's
Letters, hee prefented; them with very great reuerence to the
Gentlewoman. Who fo foone as hhee knew that they came from
Dom Diego, all chaunged into raging colour, and foolishhe choller,
threw thenym incontinently vpon the grounde, fayinge: "Suf-
ficeth it not thy Mayfter, that already twice I haue done him to
vnderstand, that I haue nothing to doe with his Letters nor
Ambaffadaces, and yet goeth he about by futch affaultes to encrcah
my displeasure and agony, by the only remembrance of his folly?"
The Mother seeing that uncivil order, although she understood the cause, and knowinge that there was some disorde betweene the two Louers, yet thought it to bee but light, sithe the Comike Poet fayeth:

The Louers often falling out,
And pretty warling rage:
Of pleafant loue it is no doubt,
The fure renewing gage.

She went unto hir Daughter, and fayd unto hir: "What great rage is this: let me see that Letter that I may reade it: for I have no feare that Dom Diego can deceyue me with the sweetenes of his honny words. And truly Daughter you neede not fear to touch theym, for if there were any Poyfon in the them, it proceeded from your beauty that hath bitten and ftong the knight, whereof if he affay to make you a partaker, I fee no caufe why he ought to be thus rigorouly reiefted, deferuing by his honesty a better enter-taynement at your hands." In the meane time one of the ferving men toke vp the Letters, and gaue them to the Lady, who reading them, found written as followeth.

The letters of Dom Diego, to misstreffe Gineura.

My deareft and moft well beloued Lady, fis that mine innocency can finde no refling place within your tender Corpse, what honest excuse or true reaon so euer I do alledge, and fis that your heart declareth itself to be Implacable, and not pleased with hym that neuer offended you, except it were for ouermutch loue, which for guerdon of the rare and incomparable amity, I perceyue my felfe to be hated deadly of you and in futch wise contempted, as the only record of my name caufeth in you an insupportable griefe and displeasure vspeakeable. To avoide I fay your indig-nation, and by my mishap to render vnforme eafe and contentment, I haue meant to diflodge my selfe so far from this Countrey, as neyther you nor any other, shal euer heare by fame
or true report, the place of my abode, nor the graue wherein my bones shall reft. And although it be an inexplicable heart’s sorrow and torment, which by way of pen can not be declared, to be thus misprised of you, whom alone I doe loue and that, so long as mine afflicted soule shall hang vpon the feeble and brittle threedes of life: yet for all that, this griefe falling vpon me, is not irkesome, as the punishment is grievous, by imagining the passion of your minde when it is disquieted with diſlayne and wrath agaynſt me, who liueth not, but to wander vpon the thoughts of your perfections. And forſomutch as I doe feele for the debility that is in me, that I am not able any longer to beare the fowre shockes of my bitter torments and martyrdome that I prefently doeuffer, yet before my life doe fayle, and death doe feafe vpon my fenſes, I haue written vnto you this present letter for a testimoniall of your rigour, which is the marke that iuſtifieth my vnguiltyneffe. And although I doe complayne of mine vnhappy fortune, yet I meane not to accuse you, onely contented that eche man doe know, that firme affection and eternall thraldome do deferue other recompence than a farewell so cruell. And I am wel affured, that when I am deade, you will pitty my torment, knowing then, although to late, that my loyalty was fo sincere, as the report of thofe was falte, that made you beleue, that I was very far in loue with the Daughter of Dom Ferrande de la Serre. Alas, shall a Noble gentleman that hath bene well trayned vp, be forbidden to receive the gifts that come from a vertuous Gentlewoman? Ought you to be fo incapable and voyde of humanity, that the sacrifice which I haue made of the poore Birde, the caufe of your diſlayne, my repentance, my lawfull excuses, are not able to let you fee the contrary of your persuaſion? Ah, ah, I fee that the dark and obfcurc voyde of uniuſt diſlayne and immoderate anger, hath fo blindfold your eyes, and inuegled your mynde, as you can not iudge the truth of my caufe and the vnrightouſnes of your quarrell. I will render vnto you none other certificate of myne innocency, but my languishinge heart, which you clepe betweene your hands, feling futch rude intertauynment there, of whom he loaked for reioyfe of his trauayles. But forſomutch then as you do hate me, what refleth for me to do, but to procure destruction to my self?
DOM DIEGO AND GINEURA.

And fitth your pleasure consifteth in mine ouerthrow, reason willeth that I obey you, and by deth to sacrifice my life in like maner as by life you were the only mistrefe of my heart. One only thing cheereth vp my heart agayne, and maketh my death more myferable, which is, that in dying so innocent as I am, you shall remayne guilty, and the onely caufe of my ruine. My Lyfe will depart like a PufFe, and Soule fhall vanifh like a fweete Som-

mer's blaft: whereby you shall be euer deemed for a cruell Woman and bloudy Murderer of your deuot and faythfull Seruaunt. I pray to God mine owne fweete Lady, to giue you futch Contentation, Loye, Pleafure, and Gladneffe, as you do caufe through your Rigor, Difcontentment, Grieue, and Difpleafure to the poore languifhing Creature, and who for euermore shall bee Your moft obedient and affected Seruaunt Dom Diego.

The good Lady hauing red the Letter, was fo aftenoned, as hir words for a long fpae stained within hir mouth; hir heart panted, and spirite was full of confufion, hir minde was filled with forrow to confider the anguifhes of the poore vagabound, and foter Her-omit. In the ende before the houfhold difsembling hir passion which mooued hir fenfe, fhe tooke her Daughter a fide, whom very sharply fhe rebuked, for that fhe was the caufe of the loffe of fo notable and perfect a Knight as Dom Diego was. Then fhe red the Letter vnto hir, and as all hir eloquence was not able to moue that cruell damfell, more venemous than a Serpent agaynft the knight, who (as fhe thought) had not indured the one halfe of that which his inconfancy and lightneffe had wel deferred, whose obstinate minde the mother perceyuinge, fayde vnto hir:

"I pray to God (deare daughter) that for your frowardneffe, you bee not blinded in your beauty, and for refufall of fo great a benefit as is the alliaunce of Dom Diego, you be not abused with futch a one as fhall dimme the light of your renoume and glory, which hitherto you have gayned amongs the fobreft and modelf maydens." Hauing fayd fo, the wyfe and fage widow, went to the Seruaunt of Dom Diego, of whom fhe demaunded what day his mayfter departed, which fhe knowing, and not igno-

VOL. III.
rant of the occasion, was more wroth than before: notwithstanding she dissembled what she thought, and sending backe his seruant, she required him to do hir hearty commendations to the Lady his mistresse, which he did. The good Lady was joyfull of them not knowing the contents of her sonne’s letters, but looked rather that he had sent word vnto his lady of the iust hour of his returne. Howbeit when she saw that in the space of 20 dayes, nor yet within a moneth he came not, shee could not tell what to thinke, so dolorous was she for the abfence of hir sonne. The time passinge without hearing any newes from him she began to torment hirſelfe, and be fo penſiue, as if she had heard certayne newes of his death. "Alas," (quod ſhe) "and wherefore have the heauens giuen me the poſſefſion of ſuchs an exquiſite fruict, to depryue mee thereof before I do partake the goodneſſe, and ſwetenes thereof, and before I do enjoy the gifts proceding from fo goodly a ſtock. Ah God, I fear that my immoderate loue is the occafion of the losſe of myſon, and the whole ruine of the mother, with the demolition and waft of al our goods. And I would that it had pleased God (my Son) the hunter’s game had never bene fo deere, for thinking to catch that pray thou thy ſelfe waft taken and thou wandring for thy better diſport, missing the right way, fo ſtrangely didſt ſtraggle, that hard it is to reduce thee into the right track agayne. At leaſt wife if I knew the place, whereunto thou arte repaired to finde againe thy losſe, I would trauell thither to beare the company, rather than to lyue heere voyde of a Huſbande, betrayed by them whom I beſt truſted and bereft from the preſence of the my ſon, the Staffe and onely comfort of myne olde age, and the certayne hope of all our Houſe and Family." Now if the Mother vexed hir ſelfe, the Sonne was eafeſd with no great reioyce, being now a free cittizen with the Beafeſ, and Foules of the Forreſts, Dennes, and Caues, leaving not the Profundity of the Woods, the Craggednes of the Rocks, or beauty of the Valley, without someſigne or token of his grieſe. Sometime with a Puncheon wel ſharpened, ſerving him in ſteede of a Penknife, he graued the ſuccesse of his lone vpon an hard stone. Other times the fofte Bark of fome tender and new grown ſpray ſerved him in ſteede of Paper, or Parchment. For there he
carued in Cyphres properly combined with a Knot (not easily to be knowne) the name of his Lady, interlaced so properly with his owne, that the finest heads might bee deceyued, to Disciphere the righte interpretation. Vpon a day then, as he passed 'his time (accordinge to his custome) to mufe vpon Mysshaps, and to frame his successe of lone in the Ayre, hee Ingraued thefe Verfes vpon a Stone by a Fountayne side, adjoyning to his rude and Sauage house.

If any Forrest Pan, doth haunt here in this place,
Or wandring Nymph, hath hard my wofull playnt:
The one may well beholde, and view what drop of grace,
I haue desperde, and eke what griefes my heart do taynt,
The other lend to me some broke, or showre of rayne
To moyft myne heart and eyes, the gutters of my brayne.

Somewhat further of many times at the rising of the Sunne, he mounted the Top of an high and greene Mountayne to solace himselfe vpon the freshe and greene graffe, where four Pillers were erected, (eyther naturally done by dame Nature, or wrought by the industry of man,) which bore a stone in forme four square, well hewed, made and trimmed in maner of an Aulter, vpon which Aulter he dedicated these verfes to the Posterity.

Vpon this holy squired stone, which Aulter men doe call,
To some one of the Gods aboue that confecrated is,
This dolefull verfe I do ingrave, in token of my thrall,
And deadly griefes that do my silly heart oppresse,
And vex with endelesse paynes, which neuer quiet is,
This wofull verfe (I say) as surest gage of my distreffe,
I fixe on Aulter stone for euer to remayne,
To shew the heart of truest wight, that euer liued in payne.

And vpon the brims of that Table, he carued these Words:

This Mason worke erected here, shall not so long abide,
As shall the common name of two, that now uncoupled bee,
Who after froward fortune paft, knit eche in one degree,
Shall render for right earnest loue, reward on either side.
And before his Lodging in that wilde and stony Forrest upon the Barke of a lofty Beeche Tree, feeling in himselfe an unaccustomed lustinesse, thus he wrote:

Th'increasing beauty of thy shape, extending far thy name,
By like increase I hope to see, so stretched forth my fame.

His man seeing him to begin to be merily disposed, one day said vnto him: "And wherefore sir servest the Lute, which I brought amongs our Males, if you do not aßay thereby to recreate youre selfe, and sing thereupon the prayses of hir whom you love so wel: yea and if I may so say, by worshipping hir, you do commit idolatry in your minde. Is it not your pleasure that I fetche the fame vnto you, that by immitation of Orpheus, you may mooue the Trees, Rocks, and wylde Beastes to bewayle your misfortune, and witneßle the penance that you doe for hir fake, without cause of so haynous punishment:" "I see well," (quod the knight) "that thou wouldst I should be mery, but mirth is so far from me, as I am estraunged from hir that holdeth me in this misery. Notwithstanding I will performe thy request, and will awake that instrument in this defert place, wherewith sometime I witnessed the greatest part of my passions." Then the knight receyuing the Lute founded thereupon this song enfuing.

The waues and troubled scum, that mooues the Seas alofte,
Which runs and roares against the rocks, and threatneth daungersoft
Refembleth lo the fits of lone,
That dayly do my fanfie moue.

My heart it is the ship, that drieus on salt Sea foam,
And reafon sayles with seneleffe wit, and neuer loketh home,
For lone is guide, and leades the daunce,
That brings good hap, or breedes mischauncce.

The furious flames of lone, that neuer ceaseth fure,
Are loe the beufe failes and oares, that would my rest procure,
And as in Skies, great windes do blo,
My swift defires runnes, fleeting so.
As sweete Zephyrus breath, in spring time feedes the floures,
My mistresse voice would ioye my wits, by hir moyst heauenly powers,
And would echange my state I say,
As Sommer chaungeth Winter's day.

She is the Artique starre, the gratious Goddesse to,
She hath the might to make and marre, to helpe or els vndo,
Both death and life she hath at call,
My warre, my peace, my ruine and all.

She makes me liue in woe, and guides my siths and lookes,
She holds my frendome by a lace, as fish is held with hookes,
Thus by despayre in this conceite,
I swallow vp both hooke and baite.

And in the deserts loe I liue, among the sauge kinde,
And spend my time in woefull siths, ray'd vp by care of minde,
All hopelesse to in paynes I pyne,
And ioyes for euer doe resigne.

I dread but Charon's boat if she no mercy giue,
In darknesse then my soule shall dwell, in Pluto's raygne to liue,
But I beleue she hath no care,
On him that caught is in hir snare.

If she releafe my woe, a thoufand thankes therefore,
I shall hir giue, and make the world to honor hir the more,
The Gods in Skies will prayfe the fame,
And recorde beare of hir good name.

O happy is that life, that after torment straunge,
And earthly forowes on this mould, for better life shal chaunge
And liue amongs the Gods on high,
Where loue and Louers neuer die.

O lyfe that here I leade, I freely giue thee now,
Vnto the fayre where ere she refts, and loke thou shew hir how
I linger forth my yeares and dayes,
To win of hir a crowne of prayfe.

And thou my pleafaunt Lute, ceafe not my songs to found,
And fhow the torments of my minde, that I throughloue haue found,
And alwayes tell my Mistrefle still,
Hir worthy vertues rules my will.

The Fofter Louer.

The Fofter louer finging this fong, fighing sundry tymes betwene, the tricling teares ranne downe his Face: which thereby was fo diffigured, as scarfe could any man haue knowne him, that al the dayes of their lyfe had frequented his company. Such was the state of this myfierable yong gentleman, who dronke with hys owne Wyne, balanced himfelfe downe to defpayre rather than to the hope of that which he durft not looke for. Howbeit like as the mischiefs of men be not alwayes durable, and that all things haue their proper feafon, euen fo Fortune repentinge hir euill intreaty which wrongfully shee had caused this poore penetenciary of Gineura to endure, prepared a meanes to reduaunce him aloft vppon hir Wheele, euen when he thought leaft of it. And certes, herein appeared the mercy of God, who caufeth things difficult and almoft impoffible, to be fo eafy, as thofe that ordinarily be brought to paffe. How may this example show how they which be plunged in the bottome of defiaunce, deeming their life ytterly forlorn, be foone exalted euen to the top of all glory, and felicity? Hath not our age feene a man whych was by aufthority of his Enemy judged to dye, ready to bee caried forth to the Scaffolde miraculoufly deliuered from that daunger, and (wherein the works of God are to be marueyled) the fame man to be called to the dignity of a Prynce, and preferred aboue all the reft of the people? Now Dom Diego attending his fieldifh Philofophy in the solitary valeys of the riche Mountayne Pyrene, was refcowed with an helpe vnlooked for as you shall heare. You haue hard how hee had a Neyghbour and finguler Frend a Noble Gentleman named Dom Roderico. Thys Gentleman amongs all his faithfull Companions did moft lament the harde fortune of Dom Diego. It came to paffe that 22 moneths after that the poore Wilde penitent perfon
was gonne on Pilgrimage, Dom Roderico tooke his Journey into Gascoyne for divers his vrgent Affayres, which after hee had dispatched, were it that hee was gon out of his way, or that God (as it is most likely) did driue him thither, he approched towardes that Coafte of the Pyrene Mountaynes, where that tyme his good Frenede Dom Diego did Inhabite, who dayly grew fo Weake and Feeble, as if God had not sent him sodayne succour hee had gotten that hee most defred, which was death that shoule haue beene the ende of his travayles and Afflictions. The trayne of Dom Roderico being then a bowe shot of from the fauage Caben of Dom Diego, espied the tractes of mens Feete newly troden, and begane to marauyle what hee shoule bee that dwelled there, confidering the Solitude, and Infertility of the Place, and also that the fame was farre of from Towne or House. And as they deuised hereupon, they saw a man going into a Caue, which was Dom Diego, comming from making his Complayntes vppon the Rock spoken of before. From which hauinge turned his face toward that parte of the worlde where he thought the lodging was of that Saynct, whereunto he addressed his devotions, Dom Diego hearinge the Noyfe of the horffe, was retired because hee woulde not bee seene. The knight which rode that way, seing that, and knowing how far he was oute of the way, commaundde one of his men to Gallop towardes the Rocke, to leare what people they were that dwelled within, and to deamaunde how they might coafte to the high way that led to Barcelona. The Seruaunt approching neare the Caue, perceived the fame so well Empaied and Fortified with Beasts skins before, fearing alfo that they were Theues and Robbers that dwelled there, durst not approche, and lefte enquire the way, and therefore returned towards his mayster, to whom hee tolde what hee saw. The knight of another maner of Metall and hardinesse than that Rafcall and coward seruaunt, like a stout, Courageous, and valiant Man, poofed to the Caue, and deamaundinge who was within, he saw a man come forth fo disfigured, horrible to looke vpon, pale with flaring hayre vpright, as pitifull it was to behold him, which was the seruant of the fother Hermit. Of him Roderico deamaunded what he was, and which was the way to Barcelona. "Syr," aunswered that disguised perfou: "I know not
how to aunfwered your demaund, and mutch leffe I know the country where we now presently be. But fir, (fayde he fighing) true it is that we be two poore companions whom Fortune hath fent hither, by what il adventur I know not, to do penaunce for our Trespafies, and Offences.” Roderico hearing him fay fo, began to call to his remembrance his Freende Dom Diego, although he neuer before that tyme fufpeched the place of his abode. He lighted then from his horfe, defirous to fee the singularities of the Rocke, and the magnificence of the Cauifh lodging, where hee entred and fawe him whom he fought for, and yet for all that did not know him: He commoned with him a long tyme of the plea- sure of the solitary life in refeect of theym that liued intangled with the comberfome Follies of this World. “For somutch” (quod he) as the spirite diftracted and withdrawn from Worldly troubles is eleuate to the contemplation of heauenly things, and sooner attendeth to the knowledge and reuerence of his God, than thofe that bee conuerfaunt amongs men, and to conclude, the com- playnts, the delights, ambitions, couetousneffe, vanities, and super- fluities that abounde in the confused Maze of Worldely troupe, doe caufe a misknowledge of our felues, a forgetfulneffe of our Creator, and many times a negligence of piety and pureneffe of Religion. Whiles the vnknowne Hermit, and the knight Roderico talked of these things, the Seruauntes of Roderico visiting all the Corners of the deepe, and Stony Cell of thofe Penitents, by Fortune espyed two Saddles, one of theym rychely wroughte and Armed wyth Plates of Steele, that had bene made for some goodly Ienet. And vpon the Plate well Wroughte, Grauen and Enameled, the Golde for all the Ruft cankering the Plate, did yet appear. For whych Purpofe one of theym fayde to the feruaunt of Dom Diego: “Good Father hitherto I see neyther Mule, nor Horfe, for whom thefe Saddles can ferue, I pray thee to fell them vnto vs, for they will doe vs more pleafure, than presently they do you.” “Maifters (quod the Hermit,) if they like you, they be at your commandement.” In the meane time Roderico hauing ended his talke with the other Hermit, without knowing of any thinge that he defired, fayd vnto his men: “Now firs to horfe, and leane wee theefe poore people to refit in peace, and let vs goe feeke for the
right way which we so well as they haue loft." "Syr," (quod one of his men,) "there be two Saddles, and one of them is so exceeding fayre, so well garnished and wrought as euer you saw." The knight feeling in himselfe an vnaccustomed motion, caufed them to be brought before him, and as he viewed and marked the riche Harnefle, and Trappings of the fame, he flayeth to looke vpon the Hinder parte minionly wrought, and in the middeft of the engrauing he red this deuife in the Spanish Tongue.

* Que brantare la fe, es causa muy fea. *

That is,

To violate or breake fayth, is a thing detestable.

That only inscription made him to paufe a while. For it was the Poefie that Dom Diego bore ordinarily in his armes, which moued him to think that without doubt one of those Pilgrimes was the very fame man to whom that Saddle did appertayne. And therefore he bent himselfe very attentiuely afterwards to behold firft the one, and then the other of those defert Citizens. But they were fo altered, as hee was not able to know them agayne. Dom Diego feeing his Freende fo neare him, and the desire that he had to knowe hym, chafed very mutch in hys mynde, and the more his Rage began to waxe, when hee faw Roderico approch neare vnto hym more aduifedly to looke vpon hym, for hee had not his own Affeotions fo mutch at commaundement, but hys Bloude moued hys Entrailes, and mounting into the moft known place, caufed outwardly the alteration which hee endured, to appeare. Roderico feeing hym to chaunge colour, was affurred of that which before hee durft not fufpeft: and that which made him the sooner beleue that he was not deceived, was a lyttle tuft of haire, fo yelow as Gold, which Dom Diego had vpon his Necke, whereof Dom Roderico takyng heede, gaue ouer all fufpition, and was well affured of that he doubted. And therefore displaying himselfe with hys armes opened vpon the necke of his friend, and imbracing him very louingly, his face bedewed with tears, sayd vnto him: "Alas, my Lord Dom Diego, what euill lucke from Heauen hath departed you from the good company of them which dye for forrow, to fee themselues beriewed of the Beauty, lyght and ornament of their fellowship? What are they that haue giuen
you occasion thus to Eclipse the bryghtnesse of your name, when it oughte most clearely to shyne, both for theyr present pleasure, and for the honour of your age? Is it from me sir, that you oughte thus to hide your selfe? Do you think me so to be bluynd, that I know not ryght well, that you are Dom Diego, that is so renouned for vertue and prowess? I would not haue tarried here so longe, but to carry away a power to reioyce two perfons, you being the one, by withdrawing your selfe from this heaue and vnseemely Wyldernesse, and my selfe the other, to enjoy your Company, and by bearynge newes to your friends, who fith your departure, do bewaile and lament the same." Dom Diego seeing that he was not able to conceyde the truth of that which was evidentely feene, and the louing imbrace of his best Friende, began to feele a certayne tendernesse of heart lyke vnto that whych the Mother conceuyeth, when she recouereth hir Sonne that is long abfent, or the chaefe wyfe, the presence of hir deare Hufband, when she clepeth him betwene hir armes, and frankly culleth and cherisht hym at hir pleasure. For whych caufe not able to refrain any longer for ioy and sorrow together, weeping and sighinge began to imbrace him wyth so good and hearty affection, as with good wyll the other had fought and longed to knowe where he was. And being come againe to himsely, he sayd to his faithfull and most louinge friend: "Oh God, how vneeafy and difficult be thy judgments to comprehend? I had thought to lyue here miserably, vnknown to al the world, and behold, I am here discouered, when I thought leaft of it. I am indeede" (quod he to Roderico) "that wretched and vnfortunate Dom Diego, even that thy very great and louing fryend, who weary of his lyfe, afflytet wyth his vnhap, and tormented by fortune, is retred into these deserts to accomplifh the ouerpious of the rest of his illuck. Now fith that I haue fatifished you herein, I befeech you that being content wyth my fighte, yee wyll get you hence and leave me heere to perfome that lyttele remnant whych I haue to lyue, without telling to any perfon that I am aliuue, or yet to manifeste the place of my abode." "What is that you say sir," (sayd Roderico) "are you so farre fraught from your ryght wits, to haue a minde to continue this brutal Lyfe, to depryue al your
friends from the ioy which they receive by injoying your com-
pany? Think I pray you that God hath caufed vs to be born
noble men, and hauing power and authority not to lyue in Corners,
or be buryed amid the flauey of the popular fort, or remain idle
within great palaces or secrete Corners, but rather to illustrat
and glue lyght with the example of our vertue to those that shal
apply themselues to our dexterity of good behavor, and do lyue
as depending vpon our edicts and commaundments: I appeale to
your faith, what good shal succede to your subiects, who haue
both heard and also knowne the benefit bestowed vpon them by
God, for that hee gaue them a Lord fo modeft and vertuous,
and before they haue experimented the effect of his goodneffe
and Vertue, depriued of him, that is adorned and garnifhed with
futch perfeftions? What comfort, contentation and ioy shall
the Lady your mother receive, by feelyng your losse to be fo
fodaine, after your good and delycate bryngyng up, instructed
with futch great diligence and vterly bereued of the fruict of
that education? It is you fir, that may commaund obedience to
Parents, succor to the afflicted, and do iustice to them that craue
it: Alas, they be your poore subiectes that make complaints, euene
of you, for denying them your due prefence. It is you of whom
my good madame doth complayne, as of him that hath broken and
violated his faith, for not comming home at the promised day.”
Now as he was about to continue his oration, Dom Diego vnwil-
ing to heare him, brake of his talk faying: “Ah fir, and my great
Friend: It is an eazy matter for you to judge of mine affayres, and
to blame myne abfence, not knowing peraduenture the caufe
thereof. But I esteeme you a man of fo good judgement, and
so great a fryend of thinges that be honeste, and a Gentleman of
great fidelity, as by vnderstanding my hard luck, when you be
aduertifed of the caufe of my withdrawing into this solitarie place,
you wyll rightly confefse, and playnely fee that the wifefe and
most conftant haue committed more vaune follies than thofe don
by mee, forced with like spirite that now moueth and tormenteth
me.” Hauing fayd, he tooke aside Roderico, where he dyd tell
vnto hym the whole difcourfe both of his Loue, and also of the
rigor of hys Lady, not without weepyng, in futch abundaunce
and with futch frequent sighes and fobs interruptyng fo hys speach, as Roderico was constrained to keepe him company, by remembrance the obstinacie of hir that was the Mistrefse of his heart, and thinkynge that already he had feene the effect of lyke mishap to fal vpon his owne head, or neare vnto the lyke, or greater distrefse than that which he fawe his deare and perfect Fryend to endure. Notwyldestanding he affayed to remove him from that desperate minde and opinion of continuance in the defert. But the froward penitente swore vnto him, that fo long as he liued (without place recovered in the good graces of his Gineura,) he would not returne home to his house, but rather change his being, to feke more fauage abode, and leffe frequented than that was. "For" (quod hee) "to what purpose shal my retourne serue where continuinge mine affection, I shal fele lyke cruelty that I dyd in time past, which wil bee more painful and heavy for me to beare than voluntary exile and banishment, or bring me to that end wherein prefently I am." "Contente your self I befeech you, and suffer me to be but once vnhappy, and do not perswade mee to prowe a seconde affliction, worser than the first." Roderico hearing his reasons so liuely and wel applied would not reply, onely content that he would make him promyse to tarry there two moneths, and in that time attempt to reioyce himselfe so wel as he could. And for hys owne part, he swore vnto him, that he would bee a meanes to reconcile Gineura, and brynge them to talke together. Moreover, he gaue him assurance by othe, that hee shoulde not bee discouered by hym, nor by any in his Company. Wherewith the knyght somewhat recomforted, thanked him very affectuously. And fo leauyng wyth him a field bed, two feruants, and Money for his Neceffities, Roderico tooke hys leave, tellyng hym that shortely he would vifite him againe, to his great contentation, as euer he was left and forfaken with grypefe and forrow, himselfe makyng great mone for the vnfeemly flate and myferable plyght of Dom Diego. And God knoweth whether by the way, he detected the cruelty of pitileffe Gineura, blafphemyng a million of times the whole fexe of Womankynd, peraduenture not without iuft caufe. For there lieth hydden (I know not what) in the brefts of Women, which at times like the
Wane and increase of the Moone, doth change and alter, whereof a man can not tell on what foote to stand to conceive the reasons of the fame: whych fickle fragility of theirs (I dare not say mobility) is such, as the subtillest wench of them al beft skilled in Turner's Art, can not (I say deface) or so much as hide or colour that naturall imperfection. Roderico arriued at his house, frequented many times the lodging of Gineura, to espie hir fashions, and to see if any other had conquered that place, that was so well affayled and besieged by Dom Diego. And this wyfe and sage knyght vfed the matter fo well, that he fell in acquaintance with one of the Gentlewoman's Pages, in whom she had so great truft, as she conceyled from him very few of hir greatest secreetes, not well obferuing the precepte of the wyfe man, who counsellth not to tell the secreetes of the mynde to thofe, whose judgement is but weake, and tongue very laufh and frank of speach. The Knyght then familiar with this Page, dandled him fo with faire words, as by lyttele and lyttele he wrong the Wormes out of his Nofe, and vnderfoode that when Gineura began once to take Pepper in snuffe againft Dom Diego, she fell in loue wyth a Gentleman of Bifkaye, very poore, but Beautyfull, young and lustye, whych was the Stewarde of the house: and the Page added further that hee was not then there, but woulde returne wythin three Dayes, as he had sent Woorde to hys myftriff, and that two other Gentleman woulde accompany him to carr away Gineura into Bifkaye,for that was their laft conclusion: "And I hope" (quod he) "that she will take me with hir, bicaufe I am made priuy to their whole intent." Roderico hearing the treafon of this flight and departure of the vnfaithful daughter, was at the firft brunt afconned, but desirous that the Page shoulde not marke his alterd Countenance, faid vnto him: "In very deede meete it is, that the Gentlewoman should make hir owne choice of husband, fith hir mother so little careth to prouide for hir. And albeit that the Gentleman be not so riche and Noble as hir estate deferueth, hir affection in that behalfe ought to suffife, and the honettie of his perfon: for the rest Gineura hath (thanks be to God) wherewith to intertaine the flate of them both." These wordes he spake, farre from the thought of his hearte. For being alone by himself, thus he said:
"O blessed God, how blinde is that loue, which is vnruled, and out of order: and what dispayre to reeline to them, which (voie of reafon) doe feede fo foolishly of vayne thoughts and fond defires, in futch wife as two commodities, prefented vnto them, by what ill lucke I know not, they forfake the beste, and make choise of the worft. Ah Gineura, the fairest Lady in all this Countrey, and the mofte vnfaithfull Woman of oure time, where be thine eyes and judgement? Whither is thy mynde straied and wandred, to acquire thyfelfe from a great Lord, faire, rich, noble, and vertuous, to be giuen to one that is poore, whose parents be vnknnowne, his prowefle obscure, and birth of no aparant reputation. Behold, what maketh me beleue, that loue (fo wel as Fortune) is not onely blynd, but also dazeleth the fight of them that hee imbraceth and captuataeth vnnder his power and bondage. But I make a vowe (faife woman) that it shal neuer come to passe and that this Bif-kaye gentleman shal neuer enjoy the spoyles whych iustely bee due vnto the Trauaile and faithfull fervice of the valiaunt and vertuous knyght Dom Diego. It shal be bee, or else I wil dye for it, whych shal haue the recompenfe of his troubles, and shal feele the caulme of that tempeft, whych prefently holdeith hym at Anker, amyd the moft daungerous rockes that euer were." By this meanes Roderico knew the way how to keepe promife wyth his friende, which liued in expectation of the same. The two dayes paft, whereof the Page had fpoken, the beloued of Gineura, fayled not to come, and with him two Gallants of Bifkay, valiaunt Gentlemen, and well exercyfed in Armes. That Nighte Roderico wente to fee the olde Wydowe Lady, the Mother of the Mayden, and fyndyng oportunity to fpake to the Page, hee faid vnto hym: "I fee my Friend, accordingly as thou diddeft tell mee, that ye are vpon departing, the steward of the house being now retourned. I pray the tel mee, if thou haue neade of mee, or of any thyng that I am able doe for thee, affuring thee that thou shalt obtaine and haue what fo euer thou requireft. And therewithall I haue thought good to tel thee, and giue the warning (for thine owne fake specially) that thou keepe all thynges clofe and secreete, that no flaunder or dihonour do followe, to blot and deface the Same and prayfe of thy Mifitreffe. And for my felfe I had rather dye,
than once to open my mouth, to discover the least intent of this enterpryse. But tell mee, I praye thee, when do ye depart?" "Sir" (quod the Page) "as my Mistrefse saith, to morow about ten or eleuen of the Clocke in the Euening, when the Lady hir Mother shall bee in the sound of hir first sleepe." The knight hearyng that, and desirous of no better time, tooke hys leave of the Page, and went home, where he caufed to bee fente for tenne or twelue Gentlemen, his Neighbours and Tenaunts, whom he made priuy of his secretes, and partakers of that he went about, to deliuier out of Captuuity and miferie the chiefeft of all his Friends. The Nighte of those two Louers departure being come, Dom Roderico, which knewe the way where they shou'd paffe, bestowed him felfe and his Company in Ambufl, in a little Groue, almoft three Miles of the Lodging of this fugitive Gentlewoman: where they hadde not long tarried but they hearde the tramplinge of Horfes, and a certaine whifpring noife of People riding before them. Nowe the Nighte was somwhat cleare, which was the caufe, that the Knighte amonges the thronge, knew the Gentlewoman, besides whome rode the Miferable Wretche that hadde stolne hir awaye. Whome so soone as Roderico perceyued full of defpyte, mowed wyth extreme passion, welding his launce into his rest, brake in the nearest way vpon the infortunate Louer, with futch vehemency, as neither coate of Maile or Placard was able to faue his lyfe, or warrant him to keepe company wyth that troupe which banded vnder loue's Enfeigne, was miserably slayne, by the guide of a blynd, naked, and thievish litle boy. And when he saw he had done that he came for, he sayd to the rest of the Company: "My Friends, thys man was carelesse to make inuasion vpon other mens ground." Thefe poore Biskeyes surpryfed vpon the fodayne, and seeing the ambuflment to multiply, put spurres to their horfes to the best advantage they could for expedition, leaung their Conduét or guid gaping for breath and geuing a signe that he was dead. Whiles the other were making themselues ready to runne away, two of Roderico his men, couered with Skarfes, armed, and vnknowne, came to feafe vpon forrowfull Gineura, who beholdeing her fryende deade, began to weep and crye so straungely, as it was maruell that hir breath fayled
not. "Ah trayterous Theeues," (said she) "and bloody Murderers, why do ye not address your felues to execute cruelty upon the rest, Sith you haue done to death hym, that is of greater value than you all? Ah my deare Fryend, what crooked and grievous Fortune haue I, to see thee grouselyng dead on ground and I abying in life, to be the pray of murderous Theeues and thou so cowardly beryued of lyfe?" Roderico wyth his face couered, drew neare vnto her, and sayde: "I beseech you Gentlewoman, to forget these straunge fashions of complaynt, Sith by them ye bee not able to reuie the dead, ne yet make your ende of greifes." The maiden knowing the voyce of hym, that had flayne hir fryende, began to cry out more fiercely than before. For whych caufe one of the gentlemen in company with Roderico, hauing a blakke counterfayt beard with two lunets, in manner of spectacles, very large and great, that couered the moft part of his Face, approched neare the basful maiden, and with bigge voice and terrible talk, holding his dagger vpon hir white and delicate breast, said vnto hir: "I sweare by the Almighty God, if I heare thee speake one word more, I wil sacrifce thee vnto the ghost of that varlet, for whome thou makest thy mone, who defuered to end his daies vpon a gallow tree rather than by the hands of a gentleman. Holde thy peace therefore thou fooulyfhe girl, for greater honour and more ample Benefite is meant to thee, than thou haft defuered. Ingratitude onely hath so ouerwhelmed thy good Nature, as thou art not able to judge who be thy friends." The gentlewoman fearing death, whych as she thought was prest, held hir peace, downe alonges whose Eyes a ryuer of Teares dyd run, and the passioun of whose heart appeared by affiduall sighes, and neuer ceasning fobbes, whych in end so qualifyed hir cheare, that the exteriour fadnessse was wholy inclosed whithin the mynd and thought of the afflicted Gentlewoman. Then Roderico caufed the body of the dead to be buryed in a lyttle Countrey Chappell, not farre out of theyr way. Thus they trauayled two dayes before Gineura knew any of them, that had taken hir away from hir louter: who permittted none to speake vnto hir nor she to any of hir company, beyng but a waiting maid, and the page that hadde dyfcouered al the secretes to Dom Roderico. A notable example
furely for stolne and secrete mariages, whereby the honour of the contracted partes, is most commonly blemished, and the Commandement of God violated, whose word enioyneth obedience to Parents in all ryghtfull causes, who if for any lyght offence, they haue power to take from vs the inheritance whych otherwyse natural law would giue vs, what ought they of duety to doe, where rebellious Chylde renuing theyr goodnesse, do confume without feare of Liberty, the thynge that is in theyr free wyll and gouernement. In like maner diuers vn dicrete and folysh mothers are to be accuued, which suffer their daughters of tender and clydysh age to be enamored of theyr seruants, not remembrynge how weake the flesh is, how prone and ready men be to do euyl, and how the sedyng spirite wayting fiel vpnon us, is procliuie and prone to furprie and catch vs wythin his Snares, to the intent he may reioyce in the ruine of foules washed and redeemed wyth the bloud of the Son of God. This troupe drawing neare to the caue of Dom Diego, Roderico sent one of his men to aduertisfe him of their comming, who in the abfence of his fryende, fylled and fustained with hope, shortly to see the onely Lady of hys heart, accompanied wyth a merry and ioyfull Trayne, fo foone as hee had somewhat chaunged his wilde maner of Lyfe, he alfo by lyttle and lyttle gagne a good part of hys lyfty and frefh coloure, and almoft had recovered that beauty, which he had when he firfte became a Citizen of thefe defertes. Now hauing vnderstaned the mesage sent vnto him by Roderico, God knoweth if with that pleasaunt tydings he felt a motion of Bloud, futch as made all his members to leape and daunce, wythch rendred hys Mynde astonned, for the onely memorye of the thynge that poyzed hys mynd vp and downe, not able to be wayed in equall Balauence whereof rather he ought to haue made reioyfe than complayne, being assured to fee hir, of whome he demauncted onely grace and pardon, but for recouery of hir, he durft not repose any certayne Judgement. In the Ende hoyfying vp hys head lyke one ryfen from a long and found sleepe, hee sayd: "Praise be to God, who yet before I dye, hath done me great pleasure, to suffer me to haue a fyght of hir, that by causynge my Matirdome, continueth hir thubburne manner of Lyfe, whych shall procure in like fort myne
vttar ruine and decay. Vpon the approch of whom I shalll goe more ioysfull, charged with incomparable lone, to vysit the ghostis beneath, in the presence of that cruel swete, that now tormenteth me with the ticklysh tentation, and who sometimes hath made me taft a kind of Hony fugred with bytter Gal, more daungorous than the fuck of Poylon and vnder the vermyllion rudde of a new sproueted Rose diuuely blowen forth, hath hydden secrete Thorns the pryckes whereof hath me so lyuely toched, as my Wound cannot well bee cured, by any Baulme that may be thereunto applyed, without enjoying of that myne owne mifschappe, moстве happy or wythout that remedy, whych almoft I feele refying in death, that so long and oftentymes I haue desired as the true remedy of all my paynes and gryeфе." In the meane whyle Dom Roderico, whych tyll that tyme was not knowen vnto Gineura, drew neare vnto hir by the way as he rode, and talked wyth hir in this forte: "I doubt not (Gentlewoman) but that you think your self not wel contented to se me in this place, in tutch com- pany and for occaion fo vnseemely for my dege, and flate, and moreover knowyng what injury I feeme to do vnto you, that euer was, and am fo affectionate and friendly to the whole flocke of your race and Lynage, and am not ignoraunte that vpon the firffe brunte you may iudge my caufe vniust to carry you away from the handes of your fryst, to bring you into these defertes, wylde, and solitay places. But if ye confired the force of that true amity, which by vertue sheweth the common Bondes of hearts and myndes of Men, and shalll measure to what end this acte is done, without to mutch flaying vpon the lyght apprehen- sion of Choler, for a beginnynge somewhat troublefom, I am assiured then (that if you be not wholly depryued of reasone) you shalll perceiue that I am not altogether worthy blame nor your selve vitterly voyde of fault. And bycaufe we draw neare vnto the place, whether (by the help of God) I meane to conduct you, I befeech you to consider, that the true Seruaunt whych by all fervice and duety studeith to execute the commaundementes of him that hath puissance ouer him, doth not deserne to bee beaten or driuen away from the house of his maister, but to be fouvered and cherishe, and ought to receyue equal recompense for
his service. I speake not this for my selfe, my devotion beinge vowed elsewhere, but for that honest affection which I beare to all vertuous and chaste persons. The effect whereof I will not deny to tell you in tyme and place, where I shall use sutch modesty towards you, as is meete for a maiden of your age and state. For the greatnesse of Noble Men and puissant, doth most appeare and shew forth it self, when they vse Mildenesse and Gentlenesse vnto those, to whom by reason of their Authority they mighte execute cruelty and malice. Now to the end that I do not make you doubtfull long, al that which I have done and yet meane to doe, is for none other purpofe but to ease the grievous paines of that mofte faithful louer that loueth at thys Daye vnder the Circle of the Moone. It is for the good Knighte Dom Diego, that loueth you so dearely and still worshippeth your Noble fame, who because he wil not shew himself disobedient, liueth miserably amonge brute beasts, amid the craggy rocks and mountaines, and in the deepe solitudes of comfortlesse dales and valleis. It is to him I fay that I do bryng you, protesting vnto you by othe (Gentlewoman) that the misery wherein I saw him, little more than vi. Weekes paft, toucheth me so neare the heart, as if the Sacrifice of my lyfe sufficed alone, (and without letting you to feele this painfull voyage) for the solace of his martirdome I would spare it no more, than I do mine owne endeauor and honor, besides the hazarding of the losse of your good grace and favoure. And albeit I wel perceive, that I do grieue you, by causyng you to enter this painfull journey, yet I befeech you that the whole displeasure of this fact may bee imputed vnto my charge, and that it would please you louingly to deale with him, who for your fake vth fo great violence against himselfe.” Gineura as a woman half in despayre for the death of hir friend, behaue hir selfe like a mad woman void of wit and senfe, and the simple remembrance of Dom Diego his name so astonned her, (which name she hated far more than the pangs of death) that she flaid a long time, hir mouth not able to shape one word to speake. In the ende vanquished with impacience, burning with choler, and trembling for sorrow, looke vpon Dom Roderico with an Eye no lesse furious, than a Tigresse caught within the Net, and seeth before hir face hir young
Fawnes murdered, wringing hir hands and beating hir delicate brest, she vfed these or futch like woordes: “Ah bloudy traitor and no more Knight, is it of thee that I oughte to looke for so detestable a villany and treason? How dareft thou be so hardy to entreat me for an other, that haft in myne owne presence killed him, whose death I will pursue vpon thee, so longe as I haue life within this body? Is it to thee false theefe and murderer, that I ought to render accomplte of that which I meant to doe? Who hath appointed thee to be arbitrator, or who gave thee commision to capitulate the Articles of my mariage? Is it by force then, that thou wouldst I should love that vnfaithfull Knighte, for whom thou haft committed and done this acte, that so longe as thou liuest shal blot and blemish thy renowne, and shal be so wel fixed in my mind, and the wounds shal cleave so neare my heart, vntill at my pleasure I be rueuenged of this wrong? No, no, I assure thee no force done vnto mee, shal neuer make mee otherwise dyfposed, than a mortall Enimy both to thee which art a Theefe and rauisher of an other man’s wife, and also to thy desperate frend Dom Diego, which is the cause of this my losse: and now not satisfied with the former wrong done vnto me, thou goest about to deceiue me vnder the Colour of good and pure Friendship. But fith wicked Fortune hath made me thy Pryfoner, doe with me what thou wylt, and yet before I suffer and endure that that Traytor Dom Diego doe enjoy my Virginity, I will offer vp my lyfe to the shadowes and Ghostes of my faithfull frend and husband, whome thou haft so trayerously murdred. And therefore (if honestlye I may or ought entreate mine Enimy) I pray thee that by doyng the duty, thou sufier vs in peace, and gyue lycence to mee, thys Page, and my two pore Maydens to depart whether we lyft.” “God forbid” (quod Roderico) “that I should doe a Trefpaffe so shamefull, as to depryue my dearest frend of his ioy and contentation, and by falsifying my faith be an occasioon of hys death, and of your losse, by leaung you without company, wandring amids this wilderness.” And thus he continued his former discourse and talk, to reclaime thyss cruell Damofell to haue pitty vpon hir poore penyent, but he gained as mutch thereby, as if he had gone aboute to number the Sands alongs the Sea Coaftes of
the maine Ocean. Thus deuifing from one talke to an other, they arrayed neare the Caue, which was the flately house of Dom Diego: where Gineura lyghted, and saw the pore amorous Knight, humbly falling downe at hir feete, all forworne, pale, and disfigured, who weeping with warme teares, said vnto hir: "Alas, my deare Lady, the alone and onely mistreffe of my heart, do you not thinke that my penaunce is long inouge for the sinne which ignorauntly I haue committed, if euer I haue done any fault at al? Behold [I befeech you (good ladie deare) what ioy] I haue conceived in your absence, what pleasures haue nurfed mine hope, and what conflation hath entertained my life: which truely had it not bene for the continual remembrance of your diuine Beauty, I haed of long time abruiated the pains which do renew in me so many times the pangs of death: as ofentimes I think vpon the vukindnes shewed vnto me by making so litle accompt of my fidelity: which can nor shal receive the fame in good part, wer it so perfect as any affurance were able to make it." Gineura sweling with forrow and full of feminine rage, blushing with fury, hir eyes sparcklinge forth hir chollerick conceypts, vouchfaced not so much as to give him one word for aunfwere, and because she would not looke vpon him, she turned hir face on the other side. The poore and afflicted Louer, seeing the great cruellty of his felonous Mystreffe, still kneeling vpon his knees, redoubling his armes, fetching Sighes with a voyce that seemed to bee drawne by force from the bottome of his heart, proceeded in these wordes: "Syth the fincerity of my fayth, and my long ferverice madame Gineura, cannot perfuade you that I haue bene moft Obedient, Faythfull, and very Loyall seruaunt towards you, as euer any that hath serued Lady or Gentlewoman, and that without your favoure and grace it is vnpossiblle for mee any longer to liue, yet I doe very humbly befeech you, for that all other comfort is denied me, if there bee any gentlenesse and curtesie in you, that I may receyue this onely grace at your hands for the laft that euer I hope to craue: which is, that you being thus greuously offended with me, would do iustice vpon that vnfortunate man, that vpon his Knees doth instantly craue the fame. Graunt (cruell mistreffe) this my request, doe vengeaunce
at your pleasure vpon him, which willingly yeldeth himselfe to
death with the effusion of his poore innocent bloud to satisfy you,
and verily farre more expedient it is for him thus to die, by
appeasing your wrath, than to rest or liue to your discontent-
ment or anoiaunce. Alas, shal I be so vnfortunate, that both life
and death shoule bee denied me by one perfon of the world,
whom I hoped to content and please by any sort or meanes what
so euer restinge in mine humble obedience? Alas gentlemewant
rid mee from this Torment, and dispatch your selfe from the griefe
you haue to see this vnhappy Knight, who would say and esteeme
himselfe most happy (his life being lothsome vnto you) if he may
content you, by death done by your owne handes, sith other
faavour he cannot expect or hope for." The Mayden hardned in
hir Opinion, floode still immoueable mutch like vnto a Rocke in
the midft of the Sea, disquieted with a tempest of billowes, and
fomy Waues in futch wife as one word could not be procured from
hir mouth. Which vnlucky Dom Diego perceyuing, attached
with the feare of present death, and saylinge his Naturall force
fell downe to the Grounde, and faintyng saied: "Ah, what a
recompence doe I receive for this so faythfull Loue?" Roderico
beholding that rufulle sight, whilest the others went about to
relieve Dom Diego, repaired to Gineura, and full of heauinesse
mingled with fury, said vnto hir: "By God (falte fiendish woman)
if so be that I doe chaunge my mind, I will make thee feele the
smarte, no lesse than thou shewest thy selfe dihonourable to them
that doe thee honour: Art thou so carelesse of fo greate a Lord
as this is, that humbleth himselfe so lowe to futch a ftrumpet as
thou art: who without regarde either to hys renoume, or the
honour of his Houfe, is content to bee abandoned from his noble
state, to become a fugitiiue and ftrounger? What cruelty is this
for thee to mifprysse the greateft humility that man can Imagin?
What greater amends canst thou wyse to haue, yea though the
offence which thou presupposest had ben true? Now (if thou be
wyse) chaunge thy Opinion, except thou wouldst haue mee doe
into so many pieces, thy cruel corpe and vnfaithful heart, as once
this poore Knight did in parts the vnhappy hauke, which through
thy folly did breede vnto him this distresse, and to thy self the
name of the most cruel and disloyall Woman that ever lyued. But what greater benefite can happen vnto thee, than to see thys Gentleman vterly to forget the fault, to conceive no finister suff-pition of thy running away, craving pardon at thy Hands, and is contented to sacrifice him self vnto thine Anger, to appease and mytigate thy rage? Now to speake no more hereof, but to pro-ceede in that which I began to say, I offer vnto thee then both death and Loue, chooze whether thou lyft. For I sweare againe by hym that feeth and heareth all thinges, that if thou play the foole, that thou shalt feele and prowe me to be the cruellest Enemy that euer thou hadist: and such a one as shall not feare to imbriue his hands wyth the bloud of hir that is the death of the greatest friend I haue, and truest knight that euer bare armes." Gineura hearing that resolute aunswere, shewed hir selfe to be nothing afrayde nor declared any token of feare, but rather seemed to haue encouraged Roderico, in brave and mannish fort, farre diuers from the simplicy of a young and tender Mayden, as a Man would say, such a one as had neuer felt the assaults and troubles of adverse fortune. Wherefore frouncyng her Browes, and grating hir Teeth wyth closed fifts, and Countenaunce very bold, she made him aunswere: "Ah thou Knight, whych once gauest assault to commit a villany and Treason thinkest thou now wythout remorfe of confeyence to continue thy mischiefe: I speake it to thee Villayne, whych hauing shed the Bloud of an honesst Man than thou art, fearest not now to make me a Companion of hys Death. Which thyng spares not hardly to accomplish, to the intent that I liuinge, may not be such a one as thou falsly judgest me to be: for neuer Man hitherto vaunted, and never shall, that hath had the spoyle of my dearest Jewell: from the Fruict whereof, like an arrant Thiefe, thou haft depuyed my loyall Spoufe. Now doe what you lyfte: for I am farre better content to suffer death, be it as cruel as thou art mischievous, and borne for the disquieting and vexation of honor Maidens then yele vnto thy furies: notwithstanding I humbly befeech Almyghty God, to gyue thee so mutch plaesure, contention and ioie in thy loue, as thou haft done to me, by hastening the death of my deare Husband. O God, if thou be a luft God, sutch a one, as from whom we thy
poore Creatures do beleue al injustice to proceede, thou I say which art the Rampire and refuge of al injustice, poure downe thy vengeance and plague vpon these pestiferous Thieves and murderers, which prepared a worldly plague vpon me thine innocent damfel. Ah wycked Roderico, think not that death can be so fearful vnto me, but that with good heart, I am able to accept the same, trusting verily that one day it shal be the cause of thy ruine, and the ouerthrowe of him for whom thou takest al these paines.”

Dom Roderico maruelously rapte in sense imagined the Woman to be fully bente against hym, who then had puissance (as he thought) ouer hir own heart: and thinking, that he sawe hir moued with like rage against him, as she was against Dom Diego, flode fil so perplexed and voyde of ryghte minde, as he was constrained to fitte downe, so feeble he felt him self for the onely remembranunce of hir euill demeanor. And whilest this Pageant was a doing, the handmaid of Gineura, and hir page, inforced to persuade their myfireffe to haue compassion vpon the Knight that had suffred so much for hir sake, and that she would consent to the honest requests and good counsell of Roderico. But she which was stubbornely bent in hir fonde persuasions, made them aunfer: “What fooles? are you so much bewitched, eyther with the fayned teares of this disloyall Knight, whych colorably thus doth torment himselfe, or els are yee inchaunted with the venomous honny and tirannicall brauery of the Theefe whiche murdered my husband, and your mayster? Ah vnhappy caytife mayden, is it my chaunce to endure the assault of such Fortune, when I thought to liue at my best ease, and thus cruelly to tomble into the handes of him, whom I hate so much as he fayneth loue vnto me? And moreouer my vnluckie fate is not herewith content, but redoubleth my sorrow, euyn by those that be of my trayne, who ought rather to incourage mee to dy, than consent to so unreasonoble requests. Ah loue, loue, how euill be they recompened which faythfully doe Homage vnto thee? And why should not I forget all Affection, neuer hereafter to haue mynde on man to proue beginning of a pleasure, which tafted and felt bringeth more displeasure than euery joy engendreth delight. Alas, I neuer knewe what was the fruictfe of that which so strangeely did attach me,
and thou O trayterous and theeuifhe Loue, hafte ordayne a banket ferued with futch bitter dishes, as forced I am perforce to taste of their egre sweetes: Auuant sweete folly, auuant, I doe henceforth for ever let thee flip, to imbrace the death, wherein I hope to find my greatest rest, for in thee I finde noughte else but heapes of strayninge Passions. Auoyde from me all mishap, flee from me ye furious ghostes and Fayries moft vnkinde, whose gauudes and toyes dame loue hath wrought to keepe occupied my lousing minde, and suffer me to take ende in thee, that I may live in an other life without thee, being now charged with cup of grieue, which I shal quaffe in venomous drinke soaked in the Sops of bitterneffe. Sharpen thou thy selfe, (O death vnkinde) prepare thy Darte, to strike the Corpse of hir, that she may voyde the Quarelles shotte agaynft hir by hir Aduerfary. Ah poore hearte, flrip thy selfe from hope, and qualifie thy desires. Ceafe henceforth to wilfe thy Lyfe, seeing, and feelinge the appoynted fight of loue and Life, combattyng within my minde, els where to fecke my peace in an other world, with him to ioy, whych for my fake was sacrificed to the treafon of varlets handes, who for the perfite hoorde of his desires, noughte else dyd fecke but to foile his bloudy fifts with the pureft bloude of my loyall friend. And I this flioud of Teares do head to faciate his felonous moode that is the iuft shortenig of my dolefull Dayes.” When she had thus complayned, she began horribly to torment hir felfe that the cruellef of the company were moued with compaffion, to see hir thus strangely fraught of hir wits: neuertheles they did discontinue by duety to solicite hir to haue regard to that which poore fayntyng Dom Diego dyd endure: who fo foone as wyth frethe Fountayn water hee was reviued, seeing still the heauineffe of his Lady, and hir increased disdaine and cholour againft hir hym vanished in diuers foundings: which moued Roderico from studye deepe, wherein he was, to ryfe, whereunto the rage of Gineura had caft him downe, because forgetting all imaginarie affection of his Lady, and propoting his duety before his eyes, whych eche Gentleman oweth to Gentle Damsels [and womenkind], flyll beholding with honorableaspeect thegrye of the martyred wylderniffe Knighe, fighning yet in former gryefes, he sayd vnto Gineura, “Alas, is it poftyble,
that in the heart of so young and delicate a maiden, there may bee harboured so straunge fury and vnreasonable rage? O God, the effect of the cruelty resting in this Woman, painting it felfe in the imaginatiue force of my mind, hath made me feare the like myfchappe to come to the crucell state of this difaduenturous gentleman? Notwythftanding (O thou crucell beaft) thinke not that thy thy fury shall stay me from doing thee to death, to rid thee from follye and difdayne, and this vnfortunate louer from defpayre and trouble, verily beleuing, that in tyme it shalbe knowne what profit the World shal gayne by purgyng the fame of fuch an infected plague as is an vnkynd and arrogante hearte: and it shal feele what utility ryfeth by thyne overthowe. And I doe hope befydes in tyme to come, that Men shal prayfe this deede of myne, who for pfereruynge the Honour of one Houfe, hath choosen rather to doe to death two offenders, than to leaue one of them alieue, to obfcure the glory and brightnesse of the other. And therefore” (sayd he, tourning his face to thofe of his traine,) “cut the throte of this stubborne and froward beaft, and doe the like to them that be come with hir, fhewe no more fauor vnto them all, than that curffed strumpet doth mercy to the life of that miferable Gentleman, who lieth a dying there for loue of hir.” The Mayden hearing the cruel sentence of hir death, cryed out fo loud as she coulde, thinking reafue woulde haue come, but the poore Wench was deceiued: for the defect knew none other, but thofe that were abiding in that troupe. The Page and the woman fervauant exclaimed vpon Roderico for mercy, but he made as though he heard them not, and rather made figne to his men to do what he commaundde. When Gineura fawe that their deathe was purposed in deede, confirmed in opinion rather to dy, than to obey, she faid vnto the executioners: “My friends, I befeech you let not thes innocentes abide the penaunce of that which they neuer committed. And you, Dom Roderico, be reuenged on me, by whome the fault, (if a woman’s faith to hir hufband may be termed a faulte) is don. And let thes infortune depart, that bee God knoweth guiltles of any cryme. And thou my friend, which liueth amonges the shadowes of faythfull louers, if thou haue any feelinge, as in deede thou prouest being in another world,
behold the pureness of mine heart and fidelity of my love: who to keep the same inviolable, do offer my self voluntarily to the death, which this cruel tyrant prepareth for me. And thou hangman the executioner of my ioyes, and murderer of the immortal pleasures of my love (sayd she to Roderico) glut thy unsaciable desire of blood, make dronke thy mind with murder, and boast of thy little triumph, which for all thy threatens or persuasible words, thou canst not get from the heart of a simple maiden, ne cary away the victory for all the batted breach made into the rampage of hir honour.” When she had so said, a Man would have thought that the memory of death had cooled hir heate, but the fame serued hir as an assured solace of hir paynes. Dom Diego being come to himself and seing the discourse of that tragedy, being now addressed to the last act and end of that life and stage of faire and golden locked Gineura, making a vertue of neceffity, recovered a lyttle corage to faue, (if it were possible) the life of hir, that had put hys owne in hazard miserably to end. Having stayed them that held the maiden, he repayred to Dom Roderico, to whom he spake in this wise: “I see wel my good Lord and great Friende, that the good will you beare me, causeth you to vfe this honest order for my behalf, whereof I doubt if I shoulde lyue a whole hundred yeares, I shall not be able to satifie the least of the bondes wherein I am bound, the fame surpassing all mine ability and power. Yet for all that (deare friend) sith you see the fault of this miffheap to arise of my predefinete ill lucke, and that man cannot auoyde things once ordained, I befeech you do me yet this good pleasure (for all the benefits that euer I have receiued) to fend back again this gentlewoman with hir trayne, to the place from whence you toke hir, wyth like assurance and conduct, as if shee were your fister. For I am pleased with your endevour, and contented with my misfortune, affuring you sir besides, that the trouble which she endureth, doth far more gryeue my heart than al the paine which for hir sake I suffer. That hir sorrow then may decrease and mine may renew againe, that she may lyue in peace, and I in Warre for hir cruel beauty sake, I wyll wayt vpon Clotho, the Spynner of the threden life of man vntil she breake the twyfted lace that holdeth the fatall course of
my dolefull yeares. And you Gentlewoman lyue in reft, as your poore suppliant, wretched Dom Diego, shalbe citizen of wyld places, and vaunt you hardely that yee were the beft beloued maiden that euer liued." Maruellous truly be the forces of loue, when they discouer their perfection, for by their meanes thinges otherwife impossible be reduced to suftch facility, as a man would judge that they had neuer bene fo hard to obtaine, and fo painefull to purfue: As appeared by this damf©l, in whome the wrath of fortune, the pyanche of iealofie, the intollerable rage of hir fryendes loffe, had ingendred a conteempte of Dom Diego, an extreme defire to be renenged on Dom Roderico, and a tediousneffe of longer Lyfe. And now putting of the vaile of blynde appetite, for the efclarifhing of hir vnderfandying Eyes, and breakyng the Adamant Rocke planted in the middes of hir breaft, she beheld in open fght the stedfastneffe, pacience and perfeueration of hir great fryend. For that supplication of the Knight had greater force in Gineura, than all hys former feruyces. And full we! she shewed the fame, when throwyng hir felfe vppon the Necke of the desperate Gentleman, and imbracyng hym very louingly she fayd vnto him: "Ah sir, that your felicity is the begynnynge of my great ioy of Mynd, whych fauoreth now of sweetnes in the very fame, in whom I imagyned to be the welprynge of byterneffe. The diminutyon of one gryefe is, and shall bee the increafe of a bonde, futch as for euer I wyll call my felfe the moft humble flame of your honor, lowly befeechyng you neuertheless to pardon my follyes, wherewith full fondely I haue abused youre pacience. Confrder a whyle sir, I befeech you, the Nature and fecrecye of loue. For thofe that be blinded in that passion, thynke them felues to be perfecte Seers, and yet be the firft that commit moft filthy faultes. I doe not deny any committed wrong and trepaff©, and doe not refuse therefore the honest and gentle Correction that you shall appointe mee, for expiation of myne offence." "Ah my Noble Lady," (anfwered the knight, all rapt wyth pleasure, and halfway out of his wyts for ioy) "I humbly befeech you inflyft vpon my poore wretched body no further panges of Death, by remembring the glory of my thought, fith the recitall bryngeth with it a taft of the trauailes which you
haue suffred for my ioy and contentation.” "It is therefore," (quod she) "that I think my self happy: for by that meanes I haue knowne the perfect qualitie that be in you, and haue proued two extremeties of vertue. One consisting in your constancy and loyalty wherby you may vannt yourself aboue hym that sacrifised his Lyfe vpon the bloudy body of his Ladye who for dying so, finished his Trauailes. Where you haue choen a life worfe than death, no lesse payneful a hundred times a Day, than very death it self. The other in the clemency wherhyth you calme and appease the rage of your greatest auatesries. As my self which before hated you to death, vanquished by your courtefie do confesse that I am double bound vnto you, both for my lyfe and honor: and hearty thankes do I render to the Lord Roderico for the violence he dyd vnto me, by which meanes I was induced to acknowledge my wrong, and the right whych you had to complayne of my hearty resistanse.” “Al is wel,” sayd Roderico, "fith without peril of honor we may returne home to our houfes: I intende therefore (sayd he) to send word before to the Ladies your mothers of your returne, for I know how so wel to couer and excuse this our enterpryfe and secrete iorneis, as by God's affistance no blame or displeaure shall enufe thereof. And like as (sai’d he smilling) I haue builde the fortrasse whych shot into your campe, and made you flie, euen fo I hope (Gentlewoman) that I shalbe the occaion of your victoye, when you combat in close campe, with your sweete cruel Ennimy.” Thus they passed the iorney in pleasaunt talk, recompensing the 2 Louers with al honest and vertuous intertainment for their griefs and troubles past. In the meane while they sent one of their Seruaunts to the two widow Ladys, which were in greate care for their Children, to aduertise them that Gineura was gone to visit Dom Diego, then being in one of the castles of Roderico, where they were determined if it were their good pleasure, to confumate their mariage, hauing giuen faith and affiance one to the other. The mother of Gineura could not heare tel of more pleasaunt newes: for she had vnderstood of the foolylif flyght and ecape of hir daughter, with the steward of hir houfe, wherof she was very sorrowful, and for grief was like to die, but assured and recomforted with those newes
she failed not to mete the mother of Dom Diego, at the appointed place whether the 2 louers were arrived two daies before. Ther the mariage of that fair couple (so long desired) was solemnis'd with such magnificence as was requisite for the state of those two noble houses. Thus the torment indured, made the ioye to fanour of some other taste than they do feele, which without paine in the exercife of loue's pursuite, attaine the top of their desires: and truly their pleasure was altogether like to him that nourished in superfluous delicacy of meates cannot aptly so wel iudge of pleasure as he which sometimes lacketh the abundance. And verily loue wythout bitterneffe, is almost a caufe without effect, for he that shall take away gryefs and troubled fancies from Louers, depruyeth them of the prayse of their feefafneffe, and maketh vayne the glory of their perfeuerence: Forhee is vnworthy to beare away the price and Garland of triumph in the Confict, that behaueth himfelfe like a coward, and doth not obserue the lawes of armes and manlike dueties incident to a combat. This History then is a Mirrour for Loyall Louers and Chaffe Suters, and maketh them deteft the vnframefaffe of thofe, which vpon the first view do followe with might and mayne, the Gentlewoman or Lady that gieueth them good Face, or Countenaunce whereof any gentle heart, or mynde, nourfed in the Schoolehoufe of vertuous education, will not bee squeueifhe to thofe that shall by chaffe salutation or other incountry, doe their curteous reverence. This History alfo yeldeth contempt of them, which in their affectiion forget themselues abasing the Generosity of their Courages to be reputed of foole the true champions of loue, whose like are they that defire such regarde. For the perfection of a true Louer confifteth in passions, in sorrows, grieues, martirdomes, or cares, and mutch leffe arriueth he to his desire, by fighes, exclamations, Weapings, and childifhe playnts: For so mutch as vertue ought to be the bande of that indiffoluble amity, which maketh the vnion of the two feuered bodies of that Woman man, which Plato describeth, and caufeth man to trauell for hys whole accompli-ment in the true pursute of chaffe loue. In which labour truly, fondly walked Dom Diego, thinking to finde the fame by his dispayre amiddef the sharpe solitary Deferts of thofe Pyrene
Mountaynes. And truly the duety of his perfect friende, did more liuely disclose the same (what fault so euer he did) than all his Countenaunces, eloquent letters or amorous Messages. In like manner a man doth not know what a treasure a true Friend is, vntill hee hath proued his excellency, specially where necesfity maketh him to taste the sweetenes of sutch delicate meate. For a frend being a seconde himselfe, agreeth by a certayne naturall Sympathie and attonement to th'asseotions of him whom he loueth both to particpate his ioyes and pleasures, and to sorrowe his aduerfity, where Fortune shall vie by sorne misaduen-tures, to shewe hir accustomed mobility.
THE THIRTIETH NOUELL.

A Gentleman of Siena, called Anselmo Salimbene, curteously and gently deliuereth his enemy from death. The condemned party feeing the kinde parte of Salimbene, rendreth into his hands his sister Angelica, with whom he was in loure, which gratitude and curtefy, Salimbene well markinge, moved in Conscience, woulde not abuse hir, but for recompence tooke hir to his wyfe.

Wee do not meane here to discouer the Sumptuosity and Magnificence of Palaces, stately, and wonderfully to the view of men, ne yet to reduce to memory the maruellous effectes of man’s Industry to bulde and lay Foundations in the deepest Chanel of the mayne sea, ne to describe their ingenious Industry, in breaking the Craggy Mountaynes, and hardest Rocks, to eafe the crooked Passages of weary waies, for Armies to marche through in accessible places. Onely now do we pretend to shewe the effects of loue, which surmount all Opinion of common thinges, and appeare so miraculous as the founding, and erecting of the Colliffse, Collofse, Theatres, Amphitheatres, Pyramides, and other workes wonderfull to the world, for that the hard induced path of hatred and displeasure long time begoon, and obstinately pursued wyth strange cruelty, was convertte into loue, by the effect of concord, such as I know none, but is so much astonned, as hee maye haue good caufe to wonder, confydering the stately foundations upon which Kinges and greate Monarches haue employed the chyefest revenues of their prouinces. Now lyke as ingratitude is a vice of greatest blame and discommendation amongs men, euen so Gentleneffe and Kindneffe ought to beare the title of a most commendable vertue. And as the Thebans were accusd of that crime, for their great Captaynes Epaminondas and Pelopidas. So the Plateens (contrarywise) are praising for their solempe obferuation of the Grekes benefits, which deliuered them oute of the Perfians bondage. And the Sicyonians beare away the pryfe of eternall prayfe, for acknowledgyng the good turnes receiued of Aratus, that deliuered them from the cruelty of the tyrants. And
if Philippo Maria, duke of Milan, defuered eternal reproch for his ingratitude to his wife Beatrix, for the secrete killing of hir, he being enryched with hir goodes and treasures: a barbarous Turke borne in Arabia, thal carry the praise, who being vanquished in Arabia, by Baldouine, kyng of Hierufalem, and he and his Wife taken prynsoners, and his treasures fallen into the hands of that good king, iffued of the Loraine bloud, who neuertheless seeing that the Chryflian had deliuered him, and restored againe his wife would not be vanquished in magnificence and liberalitye, and mutch leffe beare the name of an vnkind prince, but rather when Baldouine was overcome of the infidels, and being retyned within a certayne city, the Admiral of Arabia, came to him in the night, and tellyng him the deuice of his companions, conueyed hym out of the City, and was hys guide vtill he fawe hym free from peril. I haue alleged the premylles, bycaufe the Hiftory whych I purpose to recyte, aduoucheth two examples not Vulgare or Common, the one of very great Loue, and the other of futch acception and knowledgyng thereof, as I thought it pitty the fame shoulde lurk from the Acquayntaunce of vs Englyfli Men. And that they alone should haue the Benefite thereof whych vnderftand the Italian tongue, supponing that it shall bryng fome fruyft and commodity to this our Englyfhe Soyle, that ech Wyghte may frame their lyfe on thofe whych in fraung Countries far from vs, haue lyued verucusly wythout reproch that might soyle or fppote theyr name. In Siena then (an auncient, and very noble Citty of Tofcane, which no longe time past was gouerned by hir Magiftrates, and liued in hir owne lawes and liberties, as the Lucquois, Pifans, and Florentines do) were two families very rich, noble, and the chiefe of the Citty called the Salimbenes, and Montanines, of the Race and Stock whereof, excellent men in their Common wealth haue descended, very good and expert Souldiers for conduote of Armies. Thofe two houfes in the beginning were fo great freendes, and frequented futch lone and famillarity, as it seemed they had bene but one houfe and bloude, dayly vninge ech others company, and banketting one another. But Italy in all times being as it were a Store houfe of troubles, and a very mart of fedition, bandes, and parcialities, specially of ciuill warres in euery Citty, it coulde

VOL. III.
not be that Siena shoulde alone enjoy hir liberty in peace, and accorde of Cittizens, and vaunt hir selve to bee free from knowledge of particular debate. For of warres shee had good experience against the Florentines, who by long remembrance have done what they could to make hir subject unto them. Nowe the cause of that discorde rose even by them which kept the Cittizens in vnity and concord, and was occasioned by those 2 houses the noblest, and most puissant of their common wealth. It is not vnknowne to any man, that antiquity ordain'd it to be peculiar for nobility, to trayne vp there children in huntinge, aswell to bolden and Nosell them in daungers, as to make them strong, and accustomed in trauayle, and to force them shun the delicate lyfe and great Idlenes which accompany honorable houses, and those of gentle bloud, forsomuch as by the pursuite of Beastes, flyghts of warre bee offerued: the Hounds be the square battell, the Greyhoundes be the flanquart and Wynges to follow the enimy, the horfeman seuereth to gieue the Chace, when the Game speedeth to couert, the Hornes be the Trumpets to founde the Chafe and Retire, and for incouragement of the Dogges to run. To be short, it seemeth a very Campe in battayle, ordain'd for the pleasure and pastyme of noble youth. Neuerthelesse, by hunting dyuers missefortunes doe arise, and sundry daungers haue happened by the same. Meleager lost his Lyfe for the victory of the wyld Bore of Callydonia, Cephalus was slaine for kylling his deare beloued Pocris, and Acaftus was accursed for murdering the King's sonne of whom he was the Tutour. William Rufus, one of our Englyth Kings, the son of the Conquerour, was killed with an Arrow in the New Forrest by a French Gentleman called Walter Tyrel, as he was pursuuing the Harte. Other histories reporte dyuers peryls chaunted in hunting, but yet the same worthy to be cheryshed, frequented and vfed by good aduise and moderate paftyme. So the huntinge of the wyld Bore defyled the City of Siena, with the bloud of hir owne Cittizens, when the Salimbenes and Montanines vppon a daye in an assembléd company, in countring vppon a greate and fierce Bore, toke hym by force of men and Beastes. When they had done, as they were banketting and communing of the nimblenesse of their dogs, ech man praiing his owne, as hauing done beste, there
rofe greate debate amongst them [vpon that matter], and proceeded 
so farre, as fondly they began to reuile one another with words, and 
from taunting termes to earneft blowes, wherewith divers in that 
skirmish were hurt on both sides: In the end the Salimbenes had 
the worsel, and one of the principall slayne in the place, which 
appalled the rest, not that they were discoraged, but attending 
time and seafon of reuenge. This hatred so strangely kindled 
bewene both partes, that by lyttle and lyttle, after many combats 
and ouerthrowes of eyther side, the losse lyghted vpon the Mon-
tanines, who with their wealth and rychesse were almost brought to 
nothing, and thereby the rygour and Choler of the Salimbenes 
appeased, none being able to refift them, and in space of time 
forgot all injuries. The Montanines also that remayned at Siena, 
lived in quyet, wythoute chalenge or quarell of their aduerfaries, 
howbeit mutuall talke and haunt of others company vitterly 
fruceed. And to say the truth, there were almost none to 
quarell wythall, for the whole Bloude and Name of the Montanines 
rested in one alone, called Charles the Sonne of Thomas Mon-
tanine, a young man so honest and well brought vp as any then 
in Siena, who had a fyster, that for beauty, grace, curtesy and 
honesty, was comparable with the best in all Thofcane. This 
poore young Gentleman had no great revenue, for that the patri-
monic of his predeceffors was wafted in charges for entertain-
ment of Souldiers in the time of the hurly burly and debates afore-
faid. A good parte also was confiscate to the Chamber of Siena 
for trefpaftes and forfaitures committed: with the remayne he 
sustained his family, and indifferently maintained hys porte foberly 
within his owne houfe, keeping his fifter in decent and moderate 
order. The Maiden was called Angelica, a Name of trueth, with-
out offence to other, due to hir. For in very deede in hir were 
harbored the vertue of Curtesy and Gentlenesse, and was so wel 
instruected and nobly brought vp, as they which loued not the 
Name or race of hir, could not forbeare to commend hir, and wythe 
theyr owne daughters to be hir lyke. In futch wife as one of hir 
chiefest foes was so sharply beftet with hir vertue and beauty, as 
he loft his quiet sleepe, and lufet to eate and drinke. His name 
was Anfelmno Salimbene, who woulde wyllinglye hauue made fute
to marry hir, but the discord past, quite mortified his desire, so foone as he had devised the plot within his brayne and fancies. Notwithstanding it was impossible that the louer so livelyly grauen and roted in his mind, could easily be defaced. For if once in a day he had not seene hir, his heart did fele the torments of tosting flames, and wished that the hunting of the Bore, had never decayed a family so excellent, to the intent he myght have matched himself with hir, whom none other could displace out of his remembrance, that was one of the richest Gentlemen and of greatest power in Siena. Now for that he durst not discouer his amorous griefe to any perfon, was the chiefeft cause that martired most his heart, and for the auncient festred malice of those two families, he despayed for ever, to gather either flourue or fruit of that affection, pre-supposing that Angelica would never fixe hir Loue on him, for that his Parents were the cause of the deceit and ouerthrow of the Montanine house. But what? There is nothing durable vnder the heauens. Both good and euyl haue there reuolution in the government of humane affayres. The amityes and hatredes of Kynges and Prynces, be they so harded, as commonly in a Moment hee is not seen to be a hearty Friend, that lately was a cruell Foe, and spyred naught else but the ruine of his Aduerfary? Wee see the variety of Humayne chaunces, and then doe judge at eye what great simplicity it is to stye and settle certayne, and infallible judgement vpon man’s vnstayed doings. He that erit gouerned a king, and made all things to tremble at his word, is sodaynely throwne downe, and dyeth a shamefull death. In like forte, another whych looketh for his owne vndoinge, seeth himselfe aduanued to hys estate agayne, by reuenge ouer his Enimies. Calir Baffa gouerned whilom the gre te Mahomet, that wan the Empire of Confantinople, who attempted nothing without the aduice of that Baffa. But vpon the sodayne he faw him selfe rejected, and the next day strangled by commandment of him, which so greatly honoured him, and without iut caufe did him to a death so cruell. Contrarywise Aragon the Tartarian entring Armes against his Vnkle Tangodor Cau, when hee was vpon the Poynct to loose his Lyfe for his rebellion, and was conuayed into Armenia to be executed there, was rescued by certayne Tar-
tarians the houshold seruaunts of his dead vnle, and afterwards Proclaymed King of Tartary about the year 1285. The example of the Empreff Adaleda is of no leffe credit than the former, who being fallen into the hands of Beranger the Vfurper of the Empyre escaped his fury and crueltie by flight, and in the ende maried to Otho the firfte, fawe hir wrong reuenged vpon Beranger and all his Race by hir Sonne Otho the seconf. I aduouch thefe Hyftories to prove the mobility of fortune, and the chaunge of worldly chaunces, to th'ende you may fee that the very fame mifery which followed Charles Montanine hoyfled him aloft agayne, and when he looked for leaft succour, he faw deliuerance at hand. Now to prosecute our Hyftory: know yee that while Salimbene by little and little pined for loue of Angelica, whereof shee was ignoranunt and careleffe, and albeit shee curteoufly rendred health to him, when sometimes in his amorous fit he beheld hir at a Window, yet for al that shee neuer fo mutch as gueffed the thoughts of hir louing enimmie. During these haps it chaunced that a rich Cittizen of Siena, haung a ferme adjoyning to the Lands of Montanine, defirous to encreafe his Patrimony, and annexe the fame vnto his owne, and knowing that the yong Gentleman wanted many things, moued him to fel his inheritaunce, ofering hym for it in ready money, a m. Ducates, Charles which of al the wealth and subftaunce left him by his ancefter, had no more remaynyng but that countrey Ferme, and a Palace in the City (fo the rich Italians of eeh City, terme their houfes,) and with that lyued honestly, and maintained his fitter fo wel as he could, refused flatly to disposfe his elfe of the portion, that renewed vnto him the happy memory of those that had ben the chiefe of all the Common Wealth. The couetous wretch feeing himzelfe frustrate of his pray, conceiued futch rancor against Montanine, as he purposed by right or wrong to make him not only to forfeit the fame, but alfo to lofe his lyfe, following the wicked defire of tirannous Iefabell, that made Naboth to be stonned to death to extort and wrongfully get his vineyard. About that time for the quarels and common dyfcordes raigning throughout Italy, the Nobility were not assured of safety in their Countreis, but rather the common fort and rascall number, were the chief rulers and
gouerners of the common wealth, whereby the greatest part of
the Nobility or those of beste authority being banished, the
villanous band, and grostest kind of common people made a law
(like to the Athenians in the time of Solon) that all persons of
what degree and condition so euer they were, which practized by
himselfe or other meanes the restablything or reuocation of such
as were banished out of their Citye, shoult lose and forfaite the
summe of m. Florens, and haung not wherewith to pay the con-
demnation, their head shoulde remaine for gage. A law no doubt
very iust and righteous, scenting rather of the barbarous cruelty
of the Gothes and Vandales, than of true christians, stopping the
retire of innocents exiled for particular quears of Citizens incited
one against another, and rigorously rewarding mercy and curtesy,
with execution of cruelty incomparable. This Citizen then pur-
pofed to accuse Montanine for offending against the law, bicaufe
otherwise he could not purchase his entent, and the same was
easy enough for him to compass, by reason of his authority and
estimation in the Citye: for the Endytemente and plea was no
sooner red and giuen, but a number of post knightes appeared to
depose against the poore Gentleman, to beare witnesse that he had
trespasst the Lawes of the Countrye, and had sought meane to
introduce the banished, with intent to kyll the gouerners, and to
place in state those factious, that were the cause of the Italian
troubles. The myserable Gentleman knewe not what to do, ne
how to defend himself. There were against him the Moone and
the vii. starres, the state of the City, the Proctor and Judge of the
Courte, the wytnesses that gaue euidence, and the law whych con-
demned him. He was sent to Pryson, sentence was pronounced
against him with such expedition, as he had no leyfure to con-
sider his affayres. There was no man, for feare to incurre the
displeaures of the Magistrates, that durst open hys mouth to
speake or make fute for hys delyueraunce. Like as the most
part of fryendes in these dayes resembling the crow, that flyeth
not but after carrian to gorge his rauenous Crop, and such friends
doe visite the house of the fryend but for profit, reuerencyng
him so long as he is in prosperitye, accordyng to the Poet's com-
playnt.
Like as the purest gold in fieri flames is tried,
Euen fo is faith of fryends in hard estate descried.
If hard misfheap doth thee affray,
Ech of thy friends do fie away,
And he which erft full friendly femde to thee,
A friend no more to thy poor state is hee.

And simple Wyghtes ought not to bee afrayde, and thynke amyfs if Fryendes doe fie away, fith Prynces and great Lords incurre futch hap and Fortune. The great leader of the Romayne Armies, Pompeius, the honor of the people and Senate of Rome, what companion had he to fie with hym? Whych of his auncient friends toke paine to rescue and deluyer him from his Enimyes hands which did pursue him? A king of Aegipt which had known and found this good Romane Prynce a kind and gentle fryend, was he that killed him, and fent his head to his Victor and unfaftible greedy gutte Julius Cæfar, falsifying his promised fayth, and forgetting his receiued pleafures. Amongs all the comforts which this pore Siena Gentleman found, although but a curfled Traitor, was thys vnfaithfull and pestiferous Camæleon, who came and offred him al the pleafure and kindneffe he was able to do. But the varlet attended conuenient tyme to make him taste his poyfon, and to let him fee by effeft, how dangerous a thing it is to be il neighbored, hoping after the condempation of Montanine he should at pleafure purchafe the Lordfhippe, after whych with fo open mouth he gaping. Ouer whom he had hys wyll: for two or three dayes after the recitall of the endytement, and giuing of the euydence, Charles was condemnped, and his fine fessfed at m. Florins to be payed within xv. dayes, vntyl whych time to remaine in Pryfon. And for default of futch payment to loofe his head, becaufe he had infringed the Lawes, and broken the Statutes of the Senate. This fentence was very difficult for poor Montanine to digeft, who saw all his goodes like to be difpoyled and conficcate, complaying specially the fortune of fayre Angelica his fifter, whych all the tyme of the impryfonment of hir deare brother, neuer went out of the houfe, ne ceased to wepe and lamente the hard fortune whereinto their family was lyke to fall by that new
mischaunce: "Alas," said the fair courteous damsel, "will the heauens never be appeased but continually extend their wrath
upon our deplored family, and shall our mishaps never cease? Had it not bene more tolerable for our consumed bloude, that
the diffentions past, had beene tried by dent of sword, than to
see the present innocency of the young Gentleman my brother in
daunger to be innocently accused and put to death, through the
vniustice of thofe, which beare mortal malice to noble bloud,
and glory in depreyuation of the whole remembrance of the fame?
O damnable ftate that muste hale the guiltieffe to the gibet and
irrevocable sentence of thofe judges remaining in a city, which
men cal free, albeit a confused multitude hath the upper hande,
and may fo bee, that Nature hath produced them to treade vnder
foote noble Wightes for their Offences. Ah dear Brother, I fee
well what is the caufe. If thou hadft not that lytle lordshyp in
the Countrey, and Pryncely Houfe in the City, no man would haue
enuiied thine estate, or could haue charged thee with any Crime,
which I would to God, thou hadft not onely enterpryfed, but
also broughte to paffe, to the intent thou mightest haue ben
revenged of the wrong which these cankred Carles ordinarily do
vnto my Noble bloud. But what reason is it that marchants and
artificers, or the fonnes of villaines shoud rule a common Wealth?
O happy Countreis where kings giue Lawes, and Princes see by
proud fight, thofe persons which reSEMBle them, and in their
places beare the fway. And O unhappy wee, that be the flaues
of a waiwarde ftate, peruered by corruption. Why dyd our pre-
deceifors minde to flablyfh any lyberty at al, to thruft the fame
into the confused government of the commons of our Countrey?
We haue fil the Frenchman at our tayle, or the people of our
highest Bishop, or else thofe crafty Florentines, we be the common
pray of al thofe that lift to follow the haunt, and that which is
our extreamefl misery, we make oure folues the very flaues of them
that of right ought to be reputed the vilest amongs us al. Ah
deare Brother, that thy wretched tyme is come, the onely hope of
our decayed family. Thou hadnest neuer bene committed to Warde,
haue not thy falfe affured foes bene affure of witenffe to con-
dempe thee. Ah that my life mighte raunfome thine, and re-
SALIMBENE AND ANGELICA.

deme agayn thyne estate and succor, thou shouldest be sure that forthwith Angelica would prepare hirself to bee the pray of those hungry rauenyng Wolues, which bleat and bellow after thy Lands and Lyfe.” While this fayre Damfell of Siena in this fort dyd torment hir self, poore Montanine, seeinge that he was brought to the laft extremity of his desired hope, as eche man naturally doth seke meanes to prolong his lyfe, knowing that all other help fay-led for hys delyuerance except he fold his land, aswel to satiffy the fine, as to preuayle in the reft of his Affaires, sent one of the gailers to that worshipfull ufurger the caufe of hys Calamity, to offer him his Land for the pryce and sum of a m. Ducates. The pernicious and trayterous villain, seeing that Montanine was at his mercy, and flode in the water up to the very throte, and knew no more what to do, as if already he had tryumphed of hys life and Land fo greatly coueted, anfwered him in this manner: “My friend thou shalt fay to Charles Montanine, that not long ago I would willingly haue giuen him a good Summe of Money for his Ferme, but fithens that tyme I haue imployed my Money to fome better profit: and albeit I was in minde to buy it, I would be loth to give aboue 7. c. Florins, being affured that it cannot be fo commodious, as my Money is able to bring yearely Gayne into my Purfe.” See how Auarice is the Pickpurfe of secret and hidden gayne, and the very Whirlepoole of Honesty, and Confcience, couetinge nought els but by vnrighteous Pray of other mens goods, to accumulate and heape together. The aboundance whereof bringeth no greater good hap vnto the gluttonous Owner, but rather the minde of futch is more miferable, and carryeth therewithall more decreafe of quiet, than increafe of filthy muck. The couetous man beareth no loure but to his Treasure, nor exercifeth charity but vpon his Coafers, who, than he would be difpoifed thereof, had rather fell the life of his naturall Father. This detefable Villayne hau-ing sometymes offered m. Ducates to Charles for his Enherytaunce, will now doe fo no more, aspiring the totall Ruine of the Mon-tanine Family. Charles aduertifed of his minde, and amazed for the Counfels decree, well faw that all thinges contraried hys hope and expeftation, and that he must needs dye to satiffie the exceffive and couetous Luft of the Cormerant, whose malice bee
knew to be so vehement, as none durst offer him Money, by reason of the unhappy desire of this neuer contented Varlet: For which consideration throughly resolved to dye, rather than to leave his poor Sister helpless, and without reliefe, and rather than he would agree to the bargain tending to his so great losse and disadvauntage, and to the Tirannous dealing of the wicked Tormentor of his Lyfe, seeing also that all means to purge and auerre his innocency, was taken from him, the final decree of the Judges being already passed, he began to dispose himselfe to repentance and saluation of his Soule, making complaynte of his Mifhaps in thys manner.

To what hath not the heauens hatefull bin,
Since for the eafe of man they weaue futch woe?
By diuers toyles they lap our crofles in
With cares and griefes, whereon our mischieves groe:
The bloudy hands and Sword of mortall foe,
Doe search mine euill, and would destroy me quite,
Through heynous hate and hatefull heaped spite.

Wherefore come not the fatall sisters three,
That draw the line of life and death by right?
Com furies all, and make an ende of mee,
For from the world, my sprite would take his flight.
Why comes not nowe fowle Gorgon full in sight,
And Typhon's head, that deepe in hell remaynes,
For to torment the filly soules in paynes?

It better were for mee to feele your force,
Than this miffehap of murdring enuy'es rage,
By cursed meanes and fall upon my corfe,
And worke my ruine amid my flouring age:
For if I were dispatch'd in this desire,
The feare were gone, of blacke infernall fire.

O Gods of Seas, and caufe of blustring winde,
Thou Æolus and Neptune to I say,
Why did you let my Barke futch fortune finde,
That safe to shore I came by any way?
Why brake yee not, agaynst some Rocke or Bay,
The keele, the sterne, or els blew downe the Maft,
By whose large sayles through surging feas I past?

Had these things hapt, I had not seene this houre,
The house of dole where wofull sprites complayne,
Nor vferers on me had vide futch power,
Nor I had feene depaynted in disdayne,
The God of care, with whom dead Ghosts remayne.
Who howles and Skrekes in hollow trees and holes,
Where Charon raygnes among condemned soules.

Ah, ah, since hap will worke my wretched end,
And that my ruine by judgement is decreed:
Why doth not happe futch happy fortune fend,
That I may lead with me the man in deede,
That staynd his sayth, and saylde me at my neede,
For gayne of golde, as vsurers do God knowes,
Who cannot spare the dropping of their nofe?

I should haue slayne the slaue that seru'd me so,
O God forbid my hands were brued in blood,
Should I defire the harme of friend or foe?
Nay better were to wishe mine en'my good:
For if my death I throughly vnderflood,
I should make fhort the course I haue to run,
Since rest is got when worldly toyle is done.

Alas, alas, my chiefeft way is this,
A guildeffe death to suffer as I can,
So shal my soule be sure of heauen's blisse,
And good renoume shal rest behinde me than,
And body shal take end where it began,
And fame shal fly before me, ere I flit
Vnto the Gods, where Ioue in throne doth fit.
O God convert, from vyce to vertue now,
The heart of him that falseth fayth wyth me,
And chaunge his minde and mend his maners throw,
That he his fault and fowle offence may see,
For death shall make my fame immortall bee:
And whyles the Sunne which in the heauens doth shine,
The shame is his, and honor shall be mine.

Alas, I mourne not for my selfe alone,
Nor for the fame of my Forefathers olde,
'Tys Angelike, that caufeth me to mone,
'Tys she that fyllies my bref with fanfies colde,
'Tys shee more worth, than was the fleece of golde,
That mooues my minde and breedes futch paffions straunge,
As in my selfe I feel a wonderous chaunge.

Haue pitty Lord of hir and mee this day,
Since deftiny thus hath fundred vs in spite,
O fuffer not hir vertues to decay,
But let hir take in friendship futch delite,
That from hir bref all vice be baniift quite:
And let hir like as did hir noble race,
When I poore man am deade, and out of place.

Alas my hand would write these woffull lines,
That feeble sprite denyes for want of might,
Wherefore my heart in bref confumes and pines,
With deepe defires, that far is from man's fight,
But God he fees myne innocencie and right,
And knowes the caufe of myne Accufer ftil,
Who fseekes my bloud to haue on mee his will.

When Charles thus complayned himself, and throughly was
determined to dy, great pitty it was to fee how fayre Angelica
did rent hir Face, and teare hir golden Locks, when she faw how
impossible it was to faue hir obstinate brother from the cruel
SALIMBENE AND ANGELICA.

Thus they can to perfwade the neereft of hir Kin to make fute. Thus rested she alone ful of futh heauineffe and vexation as they can think which fee themfelues deprived of things that they efteeme moft dere. But of one thing I can wel affure you, that if ill fortune had permitted that Charles should have bin put to death, the gentle damfel also had breathed forth the final gasp of hir forowful life, yeldinge therewithall the last end of the Montanine race and family. What booteth it to hold proceffe of longdifcourfe? Beholde the laft day is come deferred by the Iudges, whereupon he must eyther satisfie the fine, or dye the next day after like a rebel and Traytor against the state, without any of his kin making fute or meane for his delineraunce: albeit they visited the fayre mayden, and comforted hir in that hir wretched state, instructing hir how shee should gouerne hir felfe patiently to fuffer things remedileffe. Angelica accompanied with hir kin, and the maidens dwelling by, that were hir companions, made the ayre to found with outeries and waymentings, and shee hir felfe exclaymed like a woman destraught of Wits, whose plaints the multitude affifted with like eiulations and out-cries, wayling the fortune of the yong gentleman, and forowfull to see the mayden in daunger to fal into some mishap. As these things were thus bewayled, it chaunced about nine of the clocke at night, that Anfelmo Salimbene, he whom we haue fayd to be surprisef with the loue of Angelica, returning out of the Countrey, where he had remayned for a certayne time, and paffing before the houfe of his Lady, according to his cuftome, heard the voyce of women and maydens which mourned for Montanine, and therewithall fayd: the chieffet caufe of his fay was, for that he faw go forth out of the Pallace of hys Angelica, diuers Women making Moane, and Lamentation: wherefore he demaunded of the neighbors what noyfe that was, and whether any in those Quarters were dead or no. To whom they declared at length, al that which yee haue heard before. Salimbene hearing this story, went home to his houfe, and being secretly entred into his chamber, began discouerfe with himfelfe vpon that accident, and fantafying a thoundred things in his heade, in the ende thought that Charles
should not so be cast away, were he justly or innocently con-
demned, and for the only respect of hisifter, that he might
not bee left destitute of the Goods, and Inheritaunce. Thus dis-
couraging divers things, at length he sayd: "I were a very simple
person nowe to rest in doubt, 6th Fortune is more curious of my
felicity than I could wish, and seeketh the effect of my desires,
when least of all I thought vpon them. For behold, Montaine
alone is left of all the mortall enemys of our house, whych to mor-
row openly shall lose his head like a rebell and seditious person,
vpon whose Auncestors, in him shall I be revenged, and the quarrell
betweene our two Families, shall take ende, hauinge no more
cause to feare renewing of disorde, by any that can descend from
him. And who shall let mee then from injoying hir, whom I doe
loue, hir brother being dead, and his goods confiscate to the
Seigniory, and hir without all Maynetenounce, and Reliefe, except
the ayde of hir onely beauty and curtefie? What maynetenounce
shall she haue, if not by the loue of some honest Gentleman, that
for hys pleasure may support hir, and haue pitty vpon the losse
of so excellent beauty? Ah Salimbene, what haft thou sayd?
Haft thou already forgotten that a Gentleman for that onely cause
is esteemed above all other, whose glorious facts ought to shine
before the brightnesse of those that force themselues to followe
virtue? Art not thou a Gentleman borne, and Bred in noble house,
Issued from the Loyns of gentle and noble Parentes? Is it ignor-
'ant vnto thee, that it pertayneth vnto a noble and gentle heart,
to revengue receyued Injuries himselfe, without seeking ayde of
other or else to pardon them by vseing Clemency and princely
curtefie, burying all desire of vengeance vnder the Tumbe of
eternall oblivion? And what greater glory can man acquire, than
by vanquishing himselfe, and chastifying his affections and rage,
to bynde him which neuer thought to receyue pleasure or benefit
at his hand? It is a thing which exceedeth the common order of
nature, and so is it meete and requisite, that the most excellent
doe make the effects of their excellency appeare, and seeke means
for the immortality of their remembraunce. The great Dictator
Cæsar was more prayfed for pardoning hys enemys, and for shew-
ing himselfe curteous and easie to be spoken to, than for subdu-
inge the braue and valiaunt Galles and Britons, or vanquishing
the mighty Pompee. Dom Roderico Viuario, the Spaniard, al-
though he might haue bene reuenged vpon Dom Pietro, king of
Aragon, for his infidelity, because he went about to hinder his
voyage agaynst the Saracens at Grenado, yet woulde not Punifhe
or Raunfome him, but taking him Pryfoner in the Warres, suffred
him to goe without any Tribute, or any execution of him and his
Realme. The more I followe the example of mighty Personages
in things that be good, the more notorious and wonderful shal I
make my selfe in their rare and noble deedes. And not willing to
forget a wrong done vnto me, whereof may I complayne of Mon-
tanine? What thinge hath hee ever done agaynst me or mine?
And albeit his Predecessors were enemies to our Family, they haue
therefore borne the penance, more harde than the sinne deffered.
And truly I shoulde be afrayde, that God would suffer me to tum-
ble into some mishap, if seeing one afflicted, I shoulde rejoyce in
his affliction, and take by his decay an argument of ioy and plea-
sure. No, no, Salimbene is not of minde that futch fond Imagina-
tion shoulde Bereue good will to make hymselfe a Freende, and
to gayne by liberalitie and courtefull hir, which for hir only vertue
devalueth a greater lord than I. Being assured, that there is no
man (except he were dispoyled of all good nature and humanity)
specially bearing the loue to Angelica, that I do, but he would
be forie to see hir in futch heauinesse and defpayre, and would
attempt to deliuer hir from futch dolorous griefe. For if I loue
hir as I do in deede, must not I likewise loue all that which she
carefully loueth, as him that is nowe in daunger of death for a
simple fine of a thousand Florens? That my heart doe make ap-
peare what the loue is, which maketh me Tributary and Subieect to
fayre Angelica, and that eche man may knowe, that furious loue
hath vanquifht kings and great monarches, it behoueth not me to
be abashed, if I which am a man and subieect to passions, so well
as other, doe submit my selfe to the service of hir, who I am
assured is so vertuous as even very necesfitie cannot force hir to
forget the house, whereof the tooke hir originall. Vaunt thy
selfe then O Angelica, to haue forced a heart of it selfe impreg-
nable, and giuen him a wound which the stoutest Lads might
fooner haue deprived of lyfe, than put him out of the way of his
gentle kinde: and thou, Montanine, thinke, that if thou wilt thy
selfe, thou winnest to day so heartly a frende, as only death shall
separate the unyon of vs twayne, and of all our posterity. It is I,
nay it is I my selfe, that shall excell thee in dutie, poynting the
way for the wisest, to get honor, and violently compel the mowed
myndes of those that be our aduerfaries, defiring rather vainely to
forgo myne own life, than to giue ouer the vertuous conceptis,
which be already grifted in my minde.” After this long discoursfe
seeing the tyme required dilligence, hee tooke a thousand Ducats,
and went to the Treafurer of the fines, deputed by the state, whom
he founde in his office, and sayde vnto him: “I haue brought you
ftr, the Thoufande Ducates, which Charles Montanine is bounde
to pay for his deliuerance. Tell them, and giue him an acquitaunce,
that prefently hee may come forth.” The Treafurer woulde
haue giuen him the refl, that exceeded the Summe of a Thoufand
Florens: but Salimbene refused the fame, and receuying a letter
for his difcharge, he sent one of his Servaunts therewithal to the
chiefe Gayler, who seeing that the Summe of his condemnation was
payd, immediately deliuered Montanine out of the Prifon where he
was faft fhit, and fettered with great, and weyglyt Giues. Charles
thinkinge that some Frier had bin come to confefs him, and that
they had fhewed him some mercy to doe hym to death in Prifon,
that abroade in open flame of the world he might not deface the
Noble house whereof he came, was at the first fighl aftonned,
but hauing prepared himselfe to die, prayed God, and befought
him to vouchsafe not to forget him in the forrowful paffage,
wherein the flouteft and coragious many times be faynt and in-
contrauent. He recommended his Soule, he prayed forgieuenesse
of his finnes: and aboue all, he humbly befought the goodneffe
of God, that it would pleafe him to haue pitty vpon his Sister, and
to deliuer hir from all Infamy and difhonor. When he was caried
out of Pryfon, and brought before the Chiefe Gayler, fodaynely
his Giues were difcharged from his Legges, and every of the flan-
ders by looked merily vpon hym, without fppeakinge any Woorde
that might affray hym. That Curtesie vnlooked for, made hym
attende some better thynge, and affured hym of that whych
before by any meanes hee durste not thyncke. And hys expecta-
tion was not deceiued. For the Gayler sayde vnto hym: "Bee of
good Cheare Sir, for beholde the letters of your discharge, where-
fore you may goe at liberty whether you lift." In saying so, he
opened the Pryfon, and licenced Montanine to departe, praying
him not to take in ill part his intreaty and hard imprysonment,
for that hee durste doe none other, the State of the City hauing so
enioyned hym. May not eche Wyght now behold how that the
euents of loue be diuers from other passions of the mind? How
could Salimbene haue so charitably deliuered Montanine, the
hatred beyng so long tyme rooted between the two houfes, if some
greate occaision whych hath no name in Loue, had not altrd his
Nature, and extinguisshed hys affection? It is meritoryous to fuc-
cour them whome we neuer saw before, fith nature moueth vs to
doe well to them that be lyke our selues. But faith furmouteth
there, where the very naturall inclynation seeleth it selfe confrayned
and feeth that to be broken, whych obstynately was purpoed to
be kept in mynde. The graces, gentlenesse, Beauty, mild beh-
avior and allurement of Angelica, had greater force ouer Salimb-
ene, than the humility of hir Brother, although he had kneeled
a hundred tymes before him. But what heart is so brute, but
may be made tractable and Mylde, by the Contemplation of a
thyng so rare, as the excellent Beauty of that Siena Mayden, and
woulde not humble it selfe to acquyre the good graces of so per-
fect a Damfcl? I wyll neuer accuie man for beyng in Loue wyth
a fayre and vertuous Woman, nor eseeeme hym a flame, whych
painfully ferueth a fobre Mayden, whose heart is fraught wyth
honnefte affections, and Mynd wyth defyre tending to good ende.
Well worthy of blame is he to be deemed whych is in loue wyth
the outward hew, and prayfeth the Tree onely layden with flourues,
without regard to the fruict, whych maketh it worthy of com-
mandation. The young maiden must needes resembe the flourue
of the Spryng time, vntill by hir constancy, modesty, and chastity
she hath vanquished the concupiscence of the fleth, and brought
forth the hoped fruiet of a Vertue and Chastity not Common.
Otherwyse, shee shal bee lyke the inrolled Souldyer, whose valyi-
ance hys only mind doth wytnes, and the offer whych he maketh

VOL. III.
to hym that doth register his name in the muste bookes. But
when the effect of feruyce is ioyned wyth his attempt, and profe
belyeth not hys promyse, then the Captain imbraceth him, and
aduaunceth him, as a glafse for his affaires from that time forth.
The lyke of Dames hauing passd the affaults and refisted the
attempts of theyr affaylants which be honest, not by force being
not requryred, but inclyned by ther owne nature, and the dyligence
of theyr chaft and inuincylbe heart. But tyme we againe vnto
our purpose, Montanine, when he was delyuered, forthywyth wente
home to hys house, to comfort hir, whom he was more than sure
to be in great diitrefse and beauineffe for his fake, and whych
had so mutch neede of comfort as he had, to take his rest. He
came to the gate of his Pallace (where beyng knowne that it was
Montanine) his sifter by any meanes coulde not bee made to
beleue the fame: so imposibble seeme thynges vnto vs, which we
moft defyre. They were all in doubte, lyke as wee reade that
they were when S. Peter escaped Herod's Pryfon by the Angel's
meanes. When Angelica was assured that it was hir Brother,
sobbes wer layde aside, fighes were cast away, and heavy weep-
ings converted into teares of ioy, she went to imbrace and kiffe
hir Brother, praifing God for hys delyuerance, and making
accompt that he had ben raiied from death to lyfe, considering
his stoutnes of minde rather bent to dye than to forgo his Land,
for so fmal a pryce. The Dames that wer kin vnto hym, and
tarried there in Company of the maiden half in diifpayre, leaff by
diifpayre and fury thee might fall into outrage therby to put hir
lyfe in peril, with all expedition aduartifed their hulbands of
Montanine’s Lyberty, not looked for, who repayred thither, as wel
to rejoyce with him in his ioy and good fortune, as to make their
excufe, for that they had not travayled to ryd him from that
misery. Charles whych cared nothing at al for those mouth
blessings, diisembled what he thought, thanking them neuerthe-
leffe for their visitation and good remembrance they had of hym,
for visitting and comforting his sifter which honor, he estemed no
leffe than if they had imploied the fame vpon his owne perfon.
Their friends and kinsfolk being depaerted, and assured that none
of them had payde his ransome, hee was wonderfully astonned.
and the greater was his gryef for that he could not tell what hee 
was, whych withoute requeste, had made so gentle a prooue of his 
lyberality: if he knew nothing, farre more ignoraunte was his 
fister, foromutch as he dyd thinke, that he had changed his mind, 
and that the horrour of death had made him se his countrey in-
heritance, to hym whych made the first offer to buy the fame: but 
either of them decayued of their thought went to bed. Montanie 
rested not all the Nyght, hauyng still before his eyes, the vnknowne 
image of hym that had deleyuered him. His bed ferued his tyme 
to none other purpofe, but as a large field or some long alley 
within a Wood, for walkes to make discourse of hys mynde's con-
cepts, sometimes rememyng one, sometimes another, without 
hitting the blanke and naming of him that was his deliuerer, vnto 
whome he confeffed him selue to owe hys feruice and duete so 
long as hee lyued. And when hee saw the day begun to appeare 
and that the Mornynge, the Vauncturroure of the day, summoned 
Apollo to harnesse hys Horffe to begynne his course in our Hem-
isphere, he rofe and went to the Chamberlaine or Treasurer, futch 
as was deputed for receypt of the Fines, fesse by the State, whom 
he feluette, and receyuing lyke faliuation, he prayed hym to fheue 
hym fo mutch plevure as to tell hym the partes name, that was 
so Lyberall to fayffle his fine due in the Eschequer of the State. 
To whome the other aunfwered: "None other hath caufed thy 
delyueraneunce (O Montanine) but a certain perfon of the World, 
whose Name thou mayft eaflie geffe, to whome I gaue an acquit-
tance of thyne impryfonmente, but not of the iufte fumme, bycaufe 
hee gaue me a Thoufand Ducates for a Thoufand Florens, and 
woulde not receyue the ouerplus of the debtte, whych I am readye 
to deleyuer thee wyth thyne acquytaunce." "I hue not to doe 
wyth the Money" (fayd Charles) "onely I pray you to tell me the 
name of him that hath don me thys great curtesy, that hereafter 
I may acknowledge him to be my Friend." "It is" (fayd the 
Chamberlayne) "Anfelmo Salimbene, who is to bee commendad 
and prayfed aboue all thy parents and kinne, and came hither very 
late to bryng the Money, the furplufage whereof, beholde here it 
is." "God forbid" (fayd Montaine) "that I should take awaye 
that, whych so happily was brought hither to rid me out of payne."
And so went away wyth his acquittance, his mind charged with a numbre of fancies for the fac' don by Salimbene. Being at home at his house, he was long time stayed in a deepe consideration, devious to know the cause of that gentle parte, proceeding from him whose Parents and Aunties were the capittal Enemies of his race. In the end lyke one rysing from a found sleepe, he called to mynd, that very many times he had seen Anfelmo with attentiue eye and fixed looke to behold Angelica, and in eying hir very louungly, he passed every day (before theyr gate) not shewing other countenaunce, but of good wyll, and wyth fyendly gesture, rather than any Ennimies Face, faluting Angelica at all tymes when he met hir. Wherefore Montanine was affured, that the onely loue of Salimbene towards his sister caufed that delyueraunce, concluding that when the passion doth procee-de of good loue, feazed in gentle heart and of noble enterpryfe, it is imposible but it mufte bryng forth the marvellous effects of vertue's gallantize, of honesty and curtefy, and that the fyryte wel borne, can not fo mufte hide hys gentle nourtoure, but the fyre mufte flame abroade, and that which seemeth dyfficult to bee brought to passe, is facilitye, and made possible by the conceiptes and indeuors so wel imploied: wherefore in the Ende not to bee furmounted in Honesty, ne yet to beare the marke of one, that vnthankefully accepteth good turnes, he determyned to vfe a great prodigality vpon him, that vnder the name of foe, had shewed himselfe a more faithfull friend, then thosse that bare good face, and at neede wer furthest off from afflictcd Montanine, who not knowing what presenft to make to Salimbene, but of himselfe and hys sister, purpofed to impart his minde to Angelica, and then vpon knowledge of hir wil to performe his intent. For which cause understanding that his gracius enmy was gone into the Countrey, he thoughte well to confyder of his determynatyon, and to breake wyth hir in hys abfence, the better to Execute the fame, vpon his nexte retourne to the Citye. He called Angelica alyde, and beynge bothe alone together, hee vfed thefe or futch lyke Woordes: "You knowe, deare Sifter, that the higher the fall is, the more daungerous and greater gryefe he feel eth that doth fall from highe than bee that tumbleth downe from place more low
and of leffer steepenes. I speake this, bicause I cal to mind the
condition, nobility, and excellency of our ancessters, the glorie of
our race, and riches of all our house, which contraineth me many
tymes to sigh, and sheade a fireame of teares, when I fee the
sumptuous palaces that were the homes and resting places of our
Fathers, and grand fathers, when I fee on al parts of this City, the
Armes, and Scutcheons painted and imboffed, bearyng the mark
of the Antiquity of our house, and when I beholde the stately
marble tombes and brafen Monuments, in dyuers our Temples
erected for perpetuall Memorye of many knyghtes and generalles
of warres, that forted forth of the Montanine race: and chyefly I
neuer enter thys great Palace, the remnant of our inheritance and
patrimony, but the remembrance of our auncestors, fo glaunceth
ouer mine Heart, as an hundred hundred tymes, I wyth for death,
to thynke that I am the Poft alone of the mystery and decay fallen
vppon the name and famous famlye of the Montanines, whych
maketh me thinke our life to be vnhappy, being downe fallen from
fuch felicity, to feele a mystery moft extreame. But one thing alone
ought to content vs, that amid so great pouerty, yl luck, ruine
and abasement, none is able to lay vnto our charge any thing
vnworthy of the nobility and the house, whereof we be descended,
our lyfe being conformable to the generofitie of our predeceffors:
whereby it chanceth, that although our poore esstate be gene-
rally knowne, yet none can affirme, that we have forligned the
verte of them, which vertuoufly haue lyued before vs. If so
bee wee haue receiued pleasaure or benefit of any man, neuer
disdained I with al duety to acknowledge a good turne, stil shun-
ing the vyce of ingrattitude, to foyle the reputation wherein
hitherto I haue paffed my lyfe. Is there anye blot which more
spotteth the renoume of man, than not confessing receiued bene-
fits and pleasures perfourmed in our necessity? You know in
what peril of death I was, thefe few daies past, through their falle
fruitife which neuer loued me, and how almoft miraculously I was
redeemed out of the hangman’s hands, and the cruel sentence of
the vnrighteous Magistrate, not one of our kin offryngle them-
selfes in deed or word for my defense, which forceth mee to say,
that I haue felt of my Kin, which I neuer thought, and haue tafted
futch commodity at his hands, of whome I neuer durft expect or hope for pleasure, relief, aide or any comfort. I attended my delyueraunce by fute of thofe whome I counted for Kin and frye nds, but the fame fo foon vanished, as the Neceffity and peryll were preuent. So preffed with woe, and forfaken of fryends, I was affrayde that our aduersaries (to remoue all feare and fuspition in tyme to come) would haue purchafed my totall ruine, and procured the ouerthrowe of the Montanines name, by my Death, and approched end. But good God, from the place where- of I feared the danger, the calme arose, which hath brought my Barke to the haue of health, and at his hands where I attended ruine, I haue tafted affiance and fuf tentation of myne honor and lyfe. And playnely to procede, it is Anfelmo Salimbene, the fon of our auncient and capital enimies, that hath shewed himfelf the very loyall and faithful fryend of our family, and hath deliuered your brother by payment to the State, the fumme of a Thoufand Ducats to raunfome the life of him, who thought him to be his mofte cruell aduersary. O Gentleman’s heart in dede and gentle mind, whose rare vertues do furpaffe all humaine understanding. Friends vnited together in band of Amitye, amaze the World by the effects not vulgar in things whych they do one for an other. But thy furmounteth all, a mortall Ennaimy, not reconcyled or requyred, without demaund of affuraunce for the pleasure which he doth, payeth the debts of his adu erarie: which facte exceedeth all confeideration in them, that discouer the factes of men. I can not tel what name to attribute to the deede of Salimbene, and what I ought to call that his curtefy, but this muft I needes proteft, that the example of his honefte and gentleines is of futch force, and fo much hath vanquifhed me, as whether I shal dye in payne or lyue at eafe, neuer am I able to exceede his lyberality. Now my life being ingaged for that which he hath don to mee, and hee hauynge delueryed the fame from infamous Death, it is in your handes (deare fitter) to praetize the deuy fe imagined in my mind, to the intente that I may be onely bound to you for fatisfifying the lyberalitye of Salimbene, by meanes whereof, you which wepte the death and wayled the loft liberty of your Brother, doe fee me free and in safety hauynge none other care but to be acquited of
hym, to whome both you and I be dearely bound." Angelica hearyng hir brother speake thofe words, and knowing that Salimbene was he, that had farpassed all their kinne in amity and comfort of their familye, anwered her brother, sayinge: "I woulde never haue thought (good Brother) that your deliuerance had come to paffe by him whose name even now you tolde, and that our Ennimyes breaking al remembrance of auncient quarels, had care of the health and conferuation of the Montanines. Wherefore if it were in my power I woulde satisfie the curtesy and gentlenesse of Anfelm, but I know not which way to begin the same. I being a maid that knoweth not how to recompense a good turne, but by acknowledging the same in heart: and to go to render thanks, it is neither lawfull or comely for me, and mutch leffe to offer him any thyng for the lytle acresse I have to his house, and the small familiarity I have with the Gentlewomen of his kinne. Notwythstanding, Brother, consider you wherein my power refleth to ayde and helpe you, and be assured (myne honor saued) I will spare no thyng for your contentment." "Sister" (sayd Montanine) "I haue of long time debated with my self what is to be done, and deuised what myghte be the occasion that moued this young Gentleman to vse so greate kindnesse toward mee, and haung diligently pondred and waied what I haue scene and knowne, at length I founde that it was the onely force of Loue, which contrained his affection, and altered the auncient hatred that he bare vs, into new loue, that by no meanes can be quenched. It is the courte fyr which Loue haathe kindled in his inrailles, it is loue whych hath rayed the true effectes of gentlenesse, and hath consumed the conceits of displeased mind. O the great force of that amorous alteration, which vppon the fodaun exchaung, feemeth impossible to receive any more chaung or mutation. The onely Beauty and good grace of you Syster, hath induced our gracious Enimy, the seruant of your perfections, to deluyer the poore Gentleman forlorn of all good fortune. It is the honest lyfe and commendable behauour of Angelica Montanine, that hath incyted Anfelm to doe an ahte so praife worthy, and a deede so kinde, to procure the deliuerance of one, which looked not for a chaunce of so greate conquence. Ah gentle younge gentleman:
Ah princely minde, and heart noble and magnanimous. Alas how shall it be possible that euer I can approche the honest liberalityye wherwyth thou haft bound me for euer? My lyfe is thine, myne honour dependeth of thee, my goodes be tyed to thee. What refeth then, if not that you (sister) voyde of crueltie do vfe no vnkyndnesse to hym that loueth you, and who for love of you hathe prodigally offred hys owne goodes to ryd me from payne and dyshonor? If fo be, my lyfe and sauegarde haue ben acceptable vnto thee, and the fight of me dyshchaed from Pryn- fon was joyful unto thee, if thou gauest thy willing consent that I shoule fel my patrimony, graunt prefently that I may wyth a great, rare, and precious prefent, requyte the Goodnesse, Pleafure and curtefye that Salimbene hath done for your fake: And fyth I am not able with goodes of Fortune to satiffsie his bountye, it is your perfon which may supply that default, to the intent that you and I may be quytted of the oblygation, wherein we stand bound vnto him. It behoueth that for the offer and reward of Money whych he hath employed, we make prefent of your Beautye, not felling the pryce of your chaffity, but delyueryng the fame in ex- change of curtefye, beyng assured for hys gentlenesse and good Nourtoure fake, hee wyll vfe you none otherwyse, or vsurpe any greater authority ouer you, than Vertue permitteth in eech gentle and Noble hearte. I haue none other means of satiffaction, ne larger raunfome to render free my head from the Tribute whych Salimbene hathe gyuen for my Lyfe and Liberty. Thynke (deare Sifter) what determinate aunfwere you wyll make me, and con- fider if my request be meeete to be denied. It is in your choife and pleafure to deny or confent to my demaund. If fo be that I be denied and loose the meanes by your refuse to be acquitted of my defender, I had rather forfake my Citye and Countrey, than to lyue heere wyth the title of ingratitude, for not acknowledging so greate a pleafure. But alas, with what Eye, shall I dare behold the Nobility of Siena, if by greate vnkyndnesse I passe vnder silence the rarest friendfhip that euer was deuised? What heartes forrow shall I conceyue to bee pointed at wyth the finger, like one that hath forgotten in acknowledging by effecte, the receiued pleafure of my delyueraunce? No (sister) eyther you must bee the
quyet of my Minde, and the acquaintance of vs bothe, or else muft I dye, or wander lyke a vagabond into straunge Countries, and neuer put foote agayne into Italy." At thofe words Angelica ftoode fo affonned and confused, and fo besides hir felfe, like as wee fee one distraught of fene that feeleth himself attached with fome amaze of the Palfey. In the end recouerung hir sprytes, and bee blubbered al with teares, hir stomacke panting like the Bellowes of a forge, the anfwere his hir brother in thy manner: "I knowe not louyng Brother by reafon of my troubled minde howe to aunfwere your demaund, which feemeth to be both ryght, and wronge, right for reffepect of the bond, not fo, in consideration of the requeft. But how I proue the fame, and what reafon I can alleadge and difcouer for that proofe, hearken me fo paciently, as I haue reafon to complayne and difpute vpon this chaunce more hard and difficulte to auoyde, than by reply able to be defended, fith that Lyfe and the hazarding thereof is nothing, in regarde of that which you wyll haue me to present with too exceeding pro-
digall Liberality, and I would to God that Life mighte satifffe the fame, than be fure it shoulde fo foone be imploied, as the promife made thereof. Alas, good God, I thought that when I fawe my brother out of Pryfon, the neare diftreff of death, whereunto vniuiftly he was thrown, I thought (I fay) and firmly did beleue, that fortune the Enimy of our joy, had vomitted al hir poison, and being defpoyled of hir fury and crabbed Nature had broken the bloudy and Venemous Arrowses, wherewith fo longe tyme the hath plagued our family, and that by refting of hir felfe, thee had gyuen fome reft to the Montanine houfe of al theyr troubles and misaduentures. But I (O miferable wight) do fee and feele how far I am devided from my hope, and deceiued of mine opinion, fith the furious stepdame, appeareth before me with a face more fierce and threatening, then euer she did, sharpening hir felfe againft my youth in other fort, then euer againft any of our race. If euer she perfeccuted our auncefthers, if she brought them to ruine and decay, she now doth purpofe wholly to subuerre the fame, and throw vs headelong into the bottomleff pit of all mifery, exter-
minating for all together, the remnaunte of our confumed houfe. Be it either by loffe of thee (good brother) or the vyolent death
of me which cannot hazarde my Chastity for the prye of myne
unhappy life: Ah, good God, into what anguifh is my mynde
exponed, and how doe I feele the force and Vylence of froward
infue, that is predestinated by the heauens vpon our family?
Mufte I at fo tender yeares, and of fo feeble kinde make choyfe of
a thing, which would put the wyfe vpon Earth into their shifts?
My heart doth fayle me, reafon wanteth and Iudgement hangeth
in ballaunce by continuall agitations, to fee how I am dryuen to
the extremity of two daungerous ftraits, and enuironned with
fearefull ieoperdies, forcibly compelled either to bee deuided and
separated from thee (my Brother,) whom I loue abone mine owne
life, and in whom next after God I have fyxed and put my hope
and truft, hauing none other folace, Comfort and helpe, but
thee, or else by keeping thee, am forced to giue vnto an other, and
know not how, the precious treaure which beyng once loft, can-
not be recovered by any meanes, and for the gard and conferua-
tion whereof, euery woman of good iudgement that loueth vertue,
ought a thousand times to offer hir felfe to death (if fo many
wayes she could) rather than to blot or foyle that ineftrimable
Jewell of chastity, wherewith our lyfe is a true lyfe: contrarywyfe
shee which fondly fuffreth hir felf to be diffeazed and fpoyled of
the fame, and loofeth it without honest title, albeit she be a lyue,
yet is she buryed in the moft obfcure caufe of death, hauing loft
the honour which maketh Maydens march with head vpright.
But what goodnesse hath a Ladye, Gentlewoman, Maiden, or Wyfe,
wherein the can glory, hir honour being in doubt, and reputatyon
darkened with infaume? Whereto servd the impertyall houfe of
Augustus, in those Ladyes that were intituled the Emperour's
Daughters, when for their villany, theyr were vnworthy of the title
of chaffe and vertuous? What profited Fauffina the Emperall
Crowne vpon hir head, hir chaffe through hir abhominable Life,
being rapt and defpoyled? What wronge hath bene done to many
fymple Women, for being buryed in the Tombe of dark obliuion,
which for their vertue and pudique Lyfe, meryted Eternall prayfe?
Ah Charles, my Brother deare, where haft thou bestowed the Eye
of thy foreseeing mynde, that without prouidence and care of the
fame due to honest Dames, and chaft Damofels of our Family, hauyng loفت the goodes and Fathers inheritance, wilt haue me in like fort forgoe my Chaftlty, whych hytherto I haue kept with heedeful diligent. Wilte thou deare Brother, by the pryce of my virginity, that Anfelmo shall haue greater victorie ouer vs, than he hath gotten by fight of Sword vpon the allied remnaunt of our house? Art thou ignorant that the woundes and diseases of the Mynd, be more vehement than those which affliet the Body? Ah I vnhappy mayden, and what ill lucke is referued for me, what definy hath kept me till this day to be presentd for Venus' Sacrifice, to satiffy a young manne's lust, which coueteth (peraduenture) but the spoile of mine honor? O happy the Romain maide, flayne by the proper hands of hir woeful Father Virginius, that she myght notbe foyled with infamy, by the Lecherous embracements of rauenous Appius, which desired hir acquaintance. Alas, that my brother doe not so, rather I woulde to God of his owne accord be be the infamous minifter of my life ready to be violated, if God by his grace take not my caufe in hand? Alas death, why doft thou not throwe against my hearte thy most pearcing dart, that I may goe waite vpon the shadowes of my thrice happy Parents, who knowing this my gryeue, wyll not be void of passion to helpe me wayle my woefull state. O God, why was not I choaked and strangled, so soone as I was taken forth the secret embracements of my mother's Wombe, rather than to arriue into this mishap, that either must I lose the thing I deeme mofte deare, or die with the violence of my proper hands? Come death, come and cut the vnhappy threed of my woefull Lyfe: hope the pace of teares with thy trenchant Dart that fireame outragiously downe my face, and close the breathing wind of sighes, which hynder thee from doing thyne office vpon my lyfe, by suffocation of my lyfe and it."

When she had ended those Words, hir speache dyd faile, and waxing pale and faint, (fitting vpon hir ftoole) she fared as though that very death had fitten in hir place. Charles thynking that his fifter had bene deade, mated with sorrowe, and desirous to lyue no longer after hir, seing he was the caufe of that fownyng, fell downe dead vpon the Ground, mowing neither hand nor foote, as though the foule had ben departed from the bodye. At the noyse
which Montanine made by reason of hys fall, Angelica renewed out of hir fowne, and seeing hir Brother in so pittyfull plyght, and supposing he had bene dead for care of hys requent, for beyng bereuied of hir Brother, was so moued, as a lyttle thynge would have made hir do, as Thiſbe dyd, when she viewed Pyramus to be flayne. But conceyuing hope, she threw hir selfe vppon hir Brother, cursing hir Fortune, bannyng the Starres of cruelty, and hir lauifh speach, and hir self for hir little loue to hir brother, who made no refuſfall to dye to faue his Lande for reliefe of hir: wher she denyed to yeld hir selfe to him that loued hir with fo good affeccion. In the end she applied fo many remedies vnto hir brother, sometimes caſting cold water vpon his face, sometimes pinching and rubbing the temples and pulses of his armes and his mouth with vineger, that she made hym to come agayne: and seeing that his eyes were open, beholding hir intenſively with the countenance of a man half in defpayre, she faied vnto hym: "For so mutch brother as I fee fortune to be fo froward, that by no meane thou canft auoide the cruel lot, which launceth me into the bottome of mortall misery, and that I must aduenture to folowe the indeuors of thy minde, and obey thy will, which is more gentle and Noble, than fraught with reason, I am content to satisfy the same and the loue which hitherto thou haft born me. Be of good cheere, and doe wyth mee and my body what thou list, giue and preſente the fame to whom thou pleasest. Wel be thou sure, that so fone as I shal bee out of thy hands and power, I wyl be called or esteemed thine no more, and thou shalt haue leſſe authority to stay me from doing the deuifes of my fantasie, swearing and protest ing by the Almighty God, that neuer man shall touch Angelica, except it be in mariage, and that if he affay to paffe any further, I haue a heart that shall encourage my hands to Sacrifice my Life to the Chaffitye of Noble Dames which had rather dye than live in flaundour of dyfhonesty. I wyll die a body without defame, and the Mynde voyde of content, shall receive no shame or filth that can foyle or spot the fame." In saying fo, she began againe to weepe in futch abundance, as the humour of hir brayne ranne downe by the ifue of bothe hir Eyes. Montanine albeit sorrowful beyond meauure to fee his gentle and chaſt fitter
in futch vexation and heauninefse, reioyfed yet in his mind, that she had agreed to his request, which prefaged the good lucke that afterwardes chaunced vnto him, for hys Lyberal offer. "Wherefore" (faid he to Angelica,) "I was neuer in my Lyfe fo defirous to lune, but that I rather chooſe to dye, than procure a thinge that shoulde turne thee to displeaſure and griefe, or to hazarde thine honor and reputation in daunger or peryll of damage, which thou haft euer knowne, and shouldeft haue still perceyued by effect, or more properly to ſpeak, touched with thy ſiŋer if that incomparable and rare curteſy and Lyberality of Salimbene had not provoked me to requyre that, which honeſſely thou canſt not gyue, nor I demaунde without wronge to thee, and preſuide to mine owne eſtiſmaſe and honoure. But what? the ſeare I haue to be deemed ingrāte, hath made me forget thee, and the great honeſſy of Anfelmo maketh me hope, yea and ſedfaſtly beleue, that thou shalt receive none other displeaſure, but to be preſented vnto him whome at other times we haue thought to be our mortal enimy. And I thinke it impoſſible that he wil vfe any villany to hir whome he ſo ſeruently loueth, for whose ſake he feareth not the hatred of his friends, and difdained not to ſave him whome he hated, and on whom he myght haue bene reuenged. And forfooth, according, as the face commonly ſheweth the ſigne and token of the heartes affección, I pray thee by any meanes declare no ſad countenaunce in the preſence of Salimbene, but rather cheere vp thy face, dry vp the aboundance of thy teares, that he by ſeeing thee Ioyful and merie, may be moſted to continue his curteſy and uſe thee honeſſely, being ſatified with thy liberaliſe, and the offer that I ſhall make of our ſeruice." Here may be ſeen the extremitie of two dyuers thinges, duety combatting with ſhame, reaſon being in contention with himſelfe. Angelica knew and confeſſed that hir brother did but his duetye, and that she was bound by the fame very bond. On the other ſide, hir eſtate and virgiſlall chaſtity, brake the endeuours of hir duety, and denied to doe that which she eſteemed ryght. Neuertheleſſe shee prepared hir self to follow both the one and the other: and by acquitting the duetye to hir brother, she ordained the meane, to diſcharge him of that which he was bound to his benefacter, determinynge neuer-
theleffe rather to dye, than shamefully to suffer hir selfe to be abuifed, or to make hir lofe the floure, which made hir glyfier amongs the maidens of the city, and to deface hir good fame by an acte fo vyllanous. But that special rare vertue was more fingular in hir, than was that continency of Cyrus the Perfian King, who fearing to be forced by the allurements of the excellent beauty of chaft Panthea, would not suffer hir to be brought into his presence, for feare that hie being furrmounted with folyth luftes, shoudl force hir, that by other meanes could not be perfuaded to breake the holy lawes of Mariage, and promisned faith to hir hufband. For Salimbene hauing in his presence, and at his commandement hir whome aboue al thyngs he loued would by no meanes abufe his power, but declared his gentle nature to bee of other force and effect, than that of the aforesaid king as by reading the fuccell of this historie you shal perceiue. After that Montanine and his fifter had vtted many other words vpon their determination, and that the fayre maiden was appeased of hir sorrow, attending the ifue of that which they went about to begin: Anfelmo was come home out of the Countrie, whereof Charles hauing intelligence, about the second houre of the night, he caufed his fifter to make hir ready, and in company of one of their feruants that caied light before them, they came to the lodginge of Salimbene, whose feruaut feeing Montanine fo accompanied to knocke at the Gate, if hie did maruel I leane for you to think, by reafon of the difpleaufure and hatred which he knew to bee betweene the two families, not knowing that which had already paifed for the beginning of a final peace of fo many controversies: for which caufe fo afofoned as he was, he went to tel his mafter that Montanine was at the gate, defirous secretely to talk vnto him. Salimbene knowing what company Charles had with him, was not vnwilling to goe downe, and cauing two Torches to be lighted, came to his gate to entertaine them, and to welcome the brother and the fifter, wyth fo great curtefe and friendship as he was furpryfed with loue, feeing before his eyes the fght of hir that burned hys heart incessantly, not difcoueryng as yet the secretes of his thought by making hir to vnderfand the good wyll he bare hir, and how mutch he was hir feruant.
He could not tel wel whether he was incharmed or his eyes
dafelled, or not wel wakened from sleepe when he saw Angelica,
of so amazed was he with the straungeenesse of the fact, and arriuall
of the maiden to his house. Charles seeing hym fo confused, and
knowing that the great affection he bare vnto hisifter, made him
fo perplexed and besides himself, said vnto him: "Sir, we would
gladly speake with you in one of your Chambers, that there
myght be none other witneffe of our dyfcourse, but we three
together." Salimbene which was wrapt wyth ioy, was able to make
none other aunfweare, but: "Goe we whether you pleafe." So
taking his Angelica by the hand, they went into the Hall, and from
thence into his chamber, whych was furnyshed accordinge to the
state and riches of a Lord, he being one of the welthieff and chiefe
of the City of Siena. When they were fet downe, and al the seruants
gone forth, Charles began to say to Salimbene, these words:
"You may not thinke it straunge (fir Salimbene) if against the
Lawes and customes of our Common Wealthe, I at thys tyme of the
Nyght doe call you vp, for knowyng the Bande wherewyth I am
bound vnto you, I must for euer confesse and count my selfe to be
your flawe and bondman, you having don a thing in my behalf
that defersueth the name of Lord and maister. But what vngrateful
man is he that wil forget fo greate a benefit, as that which I haue
receyued of you, holding of you, life, goods, honor, and this mine
ownifter that enioyeth by your meanes the presence of hir bro-
ther and hir rest of mind, not losing our noble reputation by the
lofe prepared for me through vnrighteous judgement, you hauing
flaied the ruine both of hir and me, and the rest of our houfe
and kin. I am ryghte glad fir, that this my duety and seruice
is bounden to fo vertuous a Gentleman as you be, but exceeding
forry, that fortune is fo froward and contrary vnto me, that I am
not able to accomplishe my good will, and if ingratitude may
lodge in mind of a neady Gentleman, who hath no helpe but of
himselfe, and in the wyll of hys chaftifter, and minde vnited in
two perfons onely faned by you, duety doeth requyre to preffent
the rest, and to submit al that is left to be disposd at your good
pleasure. And bicaufe that I am well assurred, that it is Angelica
alone which hath kindled the flame of desire, and hath caufed you
to love that which your predeceffours haue deadly hated, that fame sparke of knowledge, which our mifery could not quench with all his force, hath made the way and shewed the path whereby we shall awoide the name of ingrate and forgetfull persons, and that fame which hath made you lyberall towards me, shalbe bountifully bestowed vpon you. It is Angelica sir, which you fee present heere, who to dicharge my band, hath willingly renderd to be your owne, submittinge hir selfe to your good wyll, for euer to be yourres. And I which am hir brother, and haue receiued that great good wyll of hir, as in my power to haue hir wyll, do present the fame, and leave hir in your hands, to vse as you would your owne, praying you to accept the fame, and to consider whose is the gift, and from whence it commeth, and how it ought to be regarded.” When he had sayd so, Montanine rose vp, and without further talke, went home vnto his house. If Anfelmo were abashd at the Montanines arriuall, and astonnd at the Oration of Charles, his sodaine departure was more to be maruelled at, and therewithal to see the effect of a thing which he neuer hoped, nor thought vpon. He was exceeding glad and ioyfull to see himself in the company of hir, whom he desired aboue al things of the world, but for to see hir heauy and sorrowful for fuch chaunce. He supposd hir being ther, to procede rather of the yong mans good and gentle Nature, than of the Maiden’s will and lykynge. For whych caufe taking hir by the hand, and holding hir betwene hys armes, he vfed thefe or fuch lyke words: “Gentlewoman, if euer I had felt and knowne with what Wing the variety and lyghtness of worldly thynges do flye, and the gaynes of inconstant fortune, at this present I haue seen one of the moft manifest profes which seemeth to me fo straunge, as almoost I dare not beleeue that I see before myne Eyes. I know well that it is for you, and for the feruice that I beare you, that I haue broken the effect of that hatred, whych by inheritaunce I haue receiued against your Houfe, and for that devotion haue deliuered your Brother. But I see that Fortune wyll not let mee to haue the vpper hand, to bee the Conquerer of hir sodaine pangs. But you your self shall see, and euerie man shall know that my heart is none other than noble, and my deuifes tend, but to the exploit of
all vertue and Gentlenesse: wherefore I pray you (sayd he, kisfing hir louingly) be not sad, and doubt not that your feruaunt is any other now, hauing you in his power, than he was when he durst not dyscouer the ardent Loue that vexed him, and held him in feeble state, ful of desire and thought: you also may bee sure, that he hath not had the better hande ouer me, ne yet for his curtsey hath obtained victoy, nor you for obeying him. For fith that you be myne, and for futch yelded and giuen to me, I wyl kepe you, as hir whome I loue and esteme aboue al things of the World, makyng you my Companion and the onely mistrefe of my goodes heart, and wyll. Thine not that I am the Fryend of Fortune, and praftife pleafaunte alone without vertue. It is modestly which commaundeth me, and honesty is the guide of my conceipts. Assure you then, and repose your comfort on mee: for none other than Angelica Montanine shall be the wyfe of Anfelmo Salimbene: and during my life, I wyll bee the Fryend, the defender and supporter of your house." At these good Newes, the droufie and wandryng Spirite of the fayre Siena mayd awaked, who endyng hir teares and appeasing hir sorrow, rose vp, and made a very lowe reuerence vnto hir curteous fryend, thanking hym for hys greate and incomparable liberalitie, promyfing all ferveice, dutie, and Amitie, that a Gentlewoman ought to beare vnto him, whom God hath refuered for hir Spoufe and husband. After an infinite number of honeft imbracements and plefaunte kiffes giuen and receiued on bothe partes, Anfelmo called vnto him one of his Auntes that dwelled within him, to whom he deliuered his new Conqueft to kepe, and spedily without delay he sent for the next of his Kinne and dearest friends: and being come, he intreated them to kepe him company, in a very vrgent and weightie businesse he had to do, wherein if they shewed themselfes diligent in his request, doubtful it is not, but he addresed speede for accomplifhment of his Enterpyse. Then caufyng hys Aunte and welbeloued Angelica to come forth, he carried them (not without their great admiration) to the pallace of Montanine, whither being arrayued: he and hys Companie were well intertayned of the sayd Montanine, the Brother of fayre Angelica. When they were in the Hall, Salimbene sayd to hys Brother in law that should be: "Senio
Montanine, it is not long since, that you in company of my faire Gentlewoman heere, came home to speake wyth mee, desirous to have no man priuy to the effect of your conference. But I am come to you with this troupe to disclofe my minde before you al, and to manifeate what I purpose to doe, to the intente the whole World may know your good and honest Nature, and understand how I can be requited on them, which indenour to gratifie me in any thing." Hauing said so, and euery man being set down he turned his talk to the rest of the company in thys wife: "I doubt not my friends and Noble Dames, but that ye mutch mufe and maruell to see me in this house so late, and in your company, and am sure, that a great desire moueth your minds to know for what purpose, the caufe, and why I haue gathered this assembly in a time vnlooked for, and in place where none of our race and kinne of long time did enter, and leffe did meane to make hither their repaque. But when you doe consider what vertue and goodnesse refeth in the heartes of those men, that shunne and avoide the brutyhnesse of Minde, to followe the reasonable part, and which propely is called Spirituall, you shall thereby perceiue, that when Gentle kynde and Noble Heart, by the great mistrefse dame Nature be gryfted in the myndes of Men, they cease not to make appeare the effect of their doings, sometyme producing one vertue, sometimes another, which cease not to caufe the fruiet of that industry both to blome and beare: In that wyse, as the more those vertuous actes and commendable workes, do appeare abroad, the greater dyligence is imploied to searche the matter wherein she can caufe to appeare the force of vertue and excellency, conceu- ing fingular delighte in that her good and holy deluery, which bryngeth forth a fruiet worthy of that stocke. And that force of mind and Generofity of Noble Heart is so firme and sure in operation, as although humane thinges be vnstable and subject to chaung, yet they cannot be feuered or disparceled. And although it be the Butte and white, wheret fortune dischargeth all her darter and shaftes, threatening shooting and afflaying the same round, yet it continueth stabe and firme like a Rocke and Clyffe beaten wyth the yvolent fury of waues rifying by wind or tempeft. Whereby it chaunceth, that riches and dignity can no more ad-
uaunce the heart of a slaue and villain, than povertie make vile and abase the greatnesse of courage in them that be procreated of other stuffe than of common forte, whych daily keepe the maefty of their oryginall, and lyve after the infinithe of good and Noble Bloude, wherewith their auncenfiers were made Noble, and fucked the fame vertue oute of the Teates of Nourfies Breaffes, who in the myddes of troublefome trauayles of Fortune that doe affayle them, and defpresse theyr modesty, their face and Countenaunce, and theyr factes full well declare theyr condition, and to doe to vnder-stande, that under futch a Miferie, a Mynde is hyde which deferueth greater Guerdon than the eigre taffe of Calamitye. In that dyd glowe and shyne the Youthe of the Perffian and Median Monarch, beynge nourfled amongst the stalles and Stables of his Grandfather, and the gentle kind of the founder of flately Rome sockeled in the Shepcoates of Prynces shepehiers. Thus mutch haue I sayd, my good lords and dames, in consideration of the noble corage and gentle minde of Charles Montanine, and of his sifter, who without prejudice to any other I dare to lay, is the paragon and mirrour of all chaft and curteous maidens, well trayned vp, amonges the whole Troupe of those that lyue thys day in Siena, who beeyng brought to the ende and laft poynt of their ruine, as euery of you doth knowe, and theyr race so fore decayed as there remayneth but the onely Name of Montanine: notwyth-standing they never loft the heart, desire, ne yet the effect of the curtefy, and naturall bounty, whych euer doth accompany the mynd of thofe that be Noble in deede. Whych is the caufe that I am conveyned to accuse our Auncenfiers, of to mutch cruelty, and of the lyttle respecke whych for a controversie occurre by chaunce, haue pursuado them with futch mortall revenge, as without ceasing, with all theire force, they haue affayed to ruinate, abolyfhe, and for euer adnichilate that a ryghte Noble and illustre race of the Montanines, amongs whome if neuer any goodnesse appeared to the Worlde, but the Honesty, Gentlenesse, Curtefy and vertuous maners of these twayne here presente, the Brother and sifter, yet they ought to be accompted amonges the ranke of the Noblest and chiefeft of our City, to the intent in time to come it may not be reported, that wee haue esteemed and chearyshed
Riches and droughs mucke, more than vertue and modefty. But
imitating those excellent gouerners of Italy, whych held the
Romane Empire, let vs rather reuere the Vertuous Poore, than
prayfe or prayfe the Rich, gyuen to vice and wickednesse. And
for so mutch as I do fee you all to be desirous to knowe the
causse and argument, whych maketh me to vfe this talke, and for-
ceth mee to prayfe the curtefy and goodnesse of the Montanines,
pleafeth you to fay a lytlye with pacience, and not think the tyme
tedyous, I meane to declare the fame. Playnely to confesse vnto
you (for that it is no cryme of Death, or heinous offence) the gyfts
of nature, the Beauty and comelynesse of fayre Angelica heere
prefent, hane fo captuate my Mind, and depreued my heart of
Lyberty, as Night and Day trauailing how I might discouer vnto
hir my martirdom, I did consume in fuch wyfe, as losynge luft of
fepe and meate, I feared ere long to be either dead of forrow or
er stranged of my right wits, feing no meanes how I might auoide
the fame, bicause our two houfes and Families were at contynuall
debate: and albeit conflictes were ceased, and quarells forgotten,
yet there restet (as I thought) a certaine deire both in the one
and the other of offence, when time and occaion did ferue. And
yet mine affection for all that was not decreased, but rather more
tormented, and my gryefe increased, hopelesse of help, which now
is chaunced to me as you shall heare. You do know, and so do
all men, howe wythin thefe fewe dayes paft, the Lord Montanine
here prefent, was accused before the Seniorie, for trespas against
the flatuwtes and Edicts of the fame, and being Pryfoner, hauing
not wherewith to fatifie the condepmnation, the Law affirmed that
his lyfe shoule recompence and supply default of Money. I not
able to suffer the want of hym, which is the brother of the dearest
thing I eseeeme in the Worlde, and hauing not hir in posfeffion,
nor lyke without him to attayne hir, payed that Summe, and
delyuuered hym. He, by what meanes I know not, or how he
conieuctured the benefuolence of my deede, thynking that it pro-
ceeded of the honest Loue and affection which I bare to gracious
and amiable Angelica, wel consideryng of my curtefy, hath over-
come me in prodigalitye, he this Nyght came vnto me, with his
fister my mistresse, yelding hir my flaus and Bondwoman, leauyng
hir with me, to doe with hir as I would with any thing I had. Behold my good Lordes, and yee Noble Ladies and cosins, and con-sider how I may recompence this Benefite, and be able to fatifie a present so precious, and of sutch Value and regard as both of them be, sutch as a right puissant prince and Lord may be contented wyth, a duty so Liberall and Iewell ineffymable of two offered thynges.” The affiants that were there, could not tell what to say, the discourse had so much drawne their myndes into dyuers fantasies and contrary opinions, feing that the SAME required by deliberation to be considered, before lightly they wytred their mindes. But they knew not the intent of him, which had called them thither, more to testify his fact, than to judge of the thing he went about, or able to hinder and let the same. True it is, that the ladies viewing and marking the amiable countenance of the Montanine Damfell, woulde haue judged for hir, if they feared not to bee refufed of hym, whome the thing did touche most neere. Who without longer staye, opened to them al, what he was pur-poied to do, saying: “Sithye do spende time so long vpon a matter already meant and determyned, I wyll ye to knowe, that having regard of mine honour, and defirous to fatifie the honesty of the Brother and fifter, I mynyde to take Angelica to my wyfe and lawfull spoufe, vniting that whych so long tym hath bene denyyed, and making into two bodyes, whilom not well accorded and agreed, one like and vniforme wyll, praying you ech one, joyfully to joy with me, and your felues to rejoyfe in that alliance, whych seemeth rather a worke from Heauen, than a deedie con-cluded by the Counfell and industrie of Men. So lykewise all wedded feeres in holy Wedlocke (by reaçoñ of the effect and the Author of the fame, ewen God himselfe, whych dyd ordayne it firste) bee wrytten in the infallible booke of hys owne prescience, to the intent that nothing may decay, whych is sustayned wyth the mighty hand of that Almyghty God, the God of wonders, which verily hee hath displayed ouer thee (deare Brother) by makyng thee to fall into distrife and daunger of death, that myne Angelica, beeing the meanes of thy deluyerance, myght alfo bee caus of the attonement which I doe hope henceforth shall bee, betwene fo Noble houfes as ours be.” Thys finall de-
cree reueled in open audience, as it was, against their expectation, and the ende that the kindred of Anselmo looked for, so was the same no lese strange and basfull, as joyful and pleasaunt, feeling a sodain joy, not accustomed in theyr mynde, for that vnion and allyaunce. And albeit that their ryches was vnequall, and the dowry of Angelica nothyng neare the great wealth of Salimbene, yet all Men dyd deeme him happy, that hee had chaunced vpon so vertuous a maiden, the onely Modestie and Integritie of whome, deferred to bee coupled wyth the most honourable. For when a man hath respecte onely to the beauty or Riches of hir, whome he meaneth to take to Wyfe, hee moste commonly doth incurre the Mischiefe, that the Spyrite of dyfscention intermeddleth amyd theyr household, whereby Pleasuere vanishing wyth Age, maketh the riueld Face (beset wyth a Thoufand wynkeled fur-rowes) to growe pale and drye. The Wyfe lykewyfe when the feeth her goodes to furmount the substance of hir wedded Husband, the aduanceth hir heart, the swelleth wyth pryde, indeuoring the vpper hand and souerainty in all thyngs, whereupon it rifieth, that of two frayle and transtorie things, the building which hath fo fyckle foundation, can not indure, man being borne to commaund, and can not abyde a mayoruer over hym, beyng the chyfe and Lord of hys Wyfe. Now Salimbene, to perfourme the effect of hys curtefie, gave his fayre Wife the moytie of his Lands and goods, in favoure of the Mariage, adopting by that meanes, Montanine to bee his Brother, appointing hym to be heyre of all hys goodes in case he deceaued wythout heyres of his Body. And if God did send hym Children, he instituted him to bee the heyre of the other halfe, which rested by hys donation to Angelica his new espoufe: Whom he maried solemnely the Sunday folowing, to the great contentation and maruell of the whole City, which long time was afflicted by the ciuile diffentions of those two houfes. But what? Sutch be the varieties of worldly succeffe, and sutch is the mischiefe amongs men, that the same which honesty hath no power to winne, is furmounted by the disgrace and misfortune of wretched time. I neede not to alleage here those amongs the Romanes, which from great hatred and malice were reconciled with the indissoluble knot of Amity; forfromuthe as the dignities
and Honoures of theyr Citty prouoked one to flatter and fawne vpon an other for particular profit, and not one of them attained to futch excellencie and renoume, as the foresayd did, one of whome was vanquyshed with the fire of an amorous paffion, whych forcyng nature hir felfe, brought that to paufe, which could neuer haue bene thoughte or imagyned. And yet Men wyll accufe loue, and painte hir in the Colours of foolifh Furye and raging Madnefe. No, no, Loue in a gentle heart is the true subiect and substance of Vertue, Curtefye, and Modeft Manners, expellynge all Cruelty and Vengeance, and nourifhyng peace amongs men. But if any do violate and prophan the holy Lawes of Loue, and peruer t that which is Vertuous, the faulte is not in that holye Saincte but in hym whych foloweth it wywithout skyll, and knoweth not the perfection. As hapneth in everie operation, that of it felfe is honest, although defamed by thofe, who thinking to vfe it, doe frightly abufe the fame, and caufe the groffe and ignoraunte to condempe that is good, for the folye of futch inconstant fooles: In the other is painted a heart fo voyde of the blody and abomina ble finne of Ingratitude, as if death had ben the true remedy and meane to fatiffie his band and duety, he would haue made no confcience to offer himfelfe frankly and freely to the dreadfull paffage of the same. You fee what is the force of a gentle heart wel trained vp, that would not be vanquished in curtefye and Lyberality. I make you to be iudges, (I meane you) that be conuerfant in loue's caufes, and that with a Judgement passionelle, voide of parciaility doe dyfcourse vpon the faictes and occur rentes that chaunce to men. I make you (I faye) iudges to gyue sentence, whether of three caried away the pryfe, and moft bound his companion by lyberall acte, and curtefye not forced. You fee a mortall enmy sorrow for the mifery of his aduerfary, but solycited therunto by the ineuitable force of Loue. The other marcheth with the glory of a præfent fo rare and exquisite, as a great Monarch would haue accompted it for singuler fauor and prodigality. The maiden steppeth forth to make the third in ranke, wyth a loue fo stayed and charity wonderfull towards hir brother, as being nothyng affured whether he to whome she offered hir felfe were fo Moderate, as Curteous, she yeldeth hir felfe to the
loffe of hir chastity. The first affayeth to make himselfe a conquerour by mariage, but the diminifhyng no iote of hir Noble mind, he muft fecke elfe where hys praye of victory. To hir a defyre to kyll hir selfe (if thinges suceeded contrary to hir minde) myght haue flopped the way to hir great glory, had she not regarded hir virginity, more than hir own Lyfe. The second feemeth to go half constrained, and by maner of acquittal, and had hys affectyon bene to render hymselfe Slaue to hys Foe, hys Patron and preferuer, it would have diminished his praye. But sithens inough wee have hereof dyscourfed, and bene large in treatie of Tragicomical matters, intermyxed and suaged (in some parte) wyth the Enteruiewes of dolor, modesty, and indifferente good hap, and in some wholly imparted the dreadfull endes like to terrible beginnings, I meane for a reliefe, and after fuch fowre sweete banquets, to interlarde a licorous refection for sweeting the mouthes of the delicate: And do purpose in this Nouell infuing, to manifest a pleafant disport betweene a Wydow and a Scholler, a passing Practife of a crafty Dame, not well schooled in the discipline of Academicall rules, a furmountinge science to trade the nouices of that forme, by ware foresight, to encountre those that by laborfome trauayle and nightly watch, haue studied the rare knowledge of Mathematicalles, and other hidden and secret Artes. Wything them so well to beware, as I am defirous to let them know by this rudiment, the successe of fuch attemptes.
THE THIRTY-FIRST NOUELL.

A Wydow called Mistreffe Helena, wyth whom a Scholler was in loue, (shee louing an other) made the same Scholler to flande a whole Wynter's night in the Snow to wayte for hir, who afterwardes by a fleyght and pollicie, caused hir in Iuly, to stand vpon a Tower flanke naked amongs Flies and Gnats, and in the Sunne.

Duerf we now a little from thefe fundry haps, to solace our fелues wyth a merry deuice, and pleafaunt circumftaunce of a Scholler's loue, and of the wily guily Subtilties of an amorous Wydow of Florence. A Scholler returned from Paris to praflife hys knowledge at home in his owne Countrey, learneth a more cunning Lecture of Mistreffe Helena, than he did of the subtilleft Sorbone Doctor, or other Mathematicall from whence he came. The Scholler as playnely hee had applied his booke, and earneftly harkned his readings, fo he simply meant to be a faythfull Louer and deuout requirant to this Iolly dame, that had vowed his Devotion and promised Pilgrimage to an other Saync. The Scholler vpon the first view of the Wydowe's wandering Lookes, forgettting Ouide's Leffions of Loue's guiles, purfued his conceipt to the vttermost. The Scholler neuer remembred how many valiaunt, wise and learned men, wanton Women had seduced and deceyued. Hee had forgot how Catullus was beguiled by Lefbia, Tibullus by Delia, Propertius by Cynthia, Nafo by Corinna, Demetrius by Lamia, Timotheus by Phryne, Philip by a Greeke mayden, Alex- ander by Thays, Hanniball by Campania, Cæfar by Cleopatra, Pompeius by Flora, Pericles by Alpaga, Pfammiticus the king of Egypt by Rhodope, and divers other very famous by Women of that ftampe. Hee had not ben wel trayned in holy writ, or heard of Samfon's Dalida, or of Salomon's Concubins, but like a playne dealinge man, beleued what she promised, followed what she had him, waited whiles she mocked him, attended till she laughed him to fcorne. And yet for all thefe Iolly paftimes inuented by this Widdow, to deceyue the poore Scholler, she scaped not free from his Logike rules, not faife from his Philosophy. He was forced.
to turne ouer Arisftote, to resoluc his Porphyrie, and to gather his Wits about hym to requite this louing Peate, that had so charitably delt with him. He willingly ferched ouer Ptolome, perused Albumazar, made hafe to Haly, yea and for a shift besturred him in Erra Pater, for matching two contrary Elements. For colde in Christmæf holy dayes, and Froft at Twelftide, shewed no more force on this poore learned Scholler, than the Sunne’s heate in the Feries of Iuly, Gnats, Flyes, and Wafpes, at Noone dayes in Sommer vnpon the naked tender Corpse of this fayre Wyddow. The Scholler floode belowe in a Court, benoommed for colde, the Wyddowe preached a lofte in the top of a Tower, and fayne would haue had water to coole hir extreme heate. The Scholler in his Shyrte be-decked wyth his demiifaries. The Wyddow fo Naked as hir Grunmforther Eue, wythout vesture to shrud hir. The Wyddow by magike arte what fo euer it coft, would fayne haue recovered hir loft Louer. The Scholler well espying his aduantage when hee was asked counsell, fo Incharmed hir with his Sillogifmes, as he made hir to mount a Tower, to curfle the time that euer she knew him or hir Louer. So the Wydow not well beaten in caufes of Schoole, was whipt with the Rod, wherewith shee scourged other. Alas good Woman, had she known that olde malice had not bene forgotten, she woulde not haue trusted, and leffe committed hir selfe to the Circle of his Enchauntments. If women wit what dealings are wyth men of great reading, they would amongs one hundred other, not deale wyth one of thee meanest of thofe that be Bookifh. One Girolamo Rucellii, a learned Italyan making prey notes for the better elucidation of the Italyan Decamerone of Boccaccio, judgeth Boccaccio himfelfe to be this fcholler, whom by an other name he termeth to be Rinieri. But whatfo-ever that Scholler was, he was truely to extreme in reueng, and therein could vfe no meane. For hee neuer left the poore feeble foule, for all hir curteous Words and gentle Supplication, vntill the Skin of hir fleshe was Parched with the scalding Sunne beames. And not contented with that, delt his Almofe alfo to hir Mayde, by fending hir to help hir Mitreffe, where alfo the brake hir Legge. Yet Phileno was more pityfull ouer the 3 nymphes and fayre Goddesfes of Bologna, whose Hyftory you may reade in the
49 Nouell of my former Tome. He fared not so roughly with those, as Rinieri did with thys, that sought but to gayne what she had loft. Well, how so euer it was, and what difference betweene eyther of theym, this Hystory enfuinge, more aptly shall gicue to vnderstande. Not long sithens, there was in Florence, a young Gentlewoman of worshipfull parentage, fayre and comely of perfonage, of courage stout, and abounding in goods of Fortune (called Helena,) who being a widow, determined not to mary agayne, bicaufe she was in loue with a yong man that was not voyde of Nature’s good gifts, whom for hir owne Tooth, above other shee had specially choien. In whom (setting aside all other care) many tymes (by meanes of one of hir maydes which she trusted beft) she had great pleasure and delight. It chaunced about the same time that a yong Gentleman of that Citty called Rinieri, hauinge a great time studied at Paris, returned to Florence, not to fell his Science by retayle, as many doe, but to knowe the reasons of things, and the causes thereof, which is a speciall good exercice for a Gentleman. And being there honoured and greatly esteemed of all men, aswell for his curteous behauior, as alfo for his knowledge, he liued like a good Cittizen. But it is commonly feene, they which haue beft vnderstandinge and knowledge, are soonest tangled in Loue: euyn so it hapned with this Rinieri, who repayringly one day for his passetime to a Feaste, this Madame Helena clothed al in blacke, (after the manner of Widowes) was there alfo, and seemed in his eyes so beautifull and well favored, as any woman euer he faw, and thought that shee might bee accounted happy, to whom God did shewe fo mutch fauoure, as to suffer him to be cleped betweene hir Armes: and beholdinge her diuers tymes and knowing that the greatest and dearest things cannot be gotten with out labour, he determined to use all his endeuour and care in pleasing of hir, that thereby he might ob- tayne hir loue, and so enjoy hir. The yong Gentlewoman not very bashfull, conceyuing greater opinion of hir selfe, than was need- full, not castinge hir Eyes towards the Ground, but rolling them artificially on euery side, and by and by percyuing mutch gazing to be vpon hir, espied Rinieri earnestly beholding hir, and sayd, smilling to hir selfe: “I thineke that I hane not this day loft my
time in coming hither, for if I bee not deceyued, I shall catch a Pigeon by the Nose." And beginning certayne times stedfastly to looke vpon him, she forced hir selfe so match as she could, to seeme very ernestly to beholde him. And on the other part thinking, that the more pleasaunt and amorous she shewed hirselfe to be, the more hir beauty should be esteemed, chiefly of him whom specially shee was disposed to loue. The wife Scholler giening ouer his Philosophy, bent all his endeuour here vnto, and thinking to be hir servaunt, learned where she dwelt, and began to passe before hir house under pretence of some other occasion: whereat the Gentlewoman reioyfed for the causes before-sayde, sayning an earnest desire to looke vpon him. Wherefore the Scholler hauing found a certayne meane to be acquaynted wyth hir Mayde discouered his loue: Praying her to deale so with hir mistrefse, as he might haue hir fauor. The maide promisfied him very louingly incontinently reporting the same to hir mistrefse, who with the greatest Scoifes in the Worlde, gaue ear thereunto and sayd: "Seeft thou not from whence this Goodfellowe is come to lose al his knowledge and doctrine that he hath brought vs from Paris. Now let vs deuise therefore how he may bee handled for going about to seke that, which he is not like to obteine. Thou shalt say vnto him, when he speaketh to thee agayne, that I loue him better than he loueth me, but it behoueth me to faue mine honoure, and to keepe my good name and estimation amongs other Women." Whych thinge, if he be so wife (as hee seemeth) hee ought to Esteeme and Regarde. "Ah, poore Wench, the knoweth not wel, what it is to mingle Hufwiery with learning, or to intermeddle diffaues with bookes. Now the mayde when she had founde the Scholler, tolde him as hir mistrefse had commaunded: whereof the Scholler was so glad, as he with greater endeuor proceded in his enterpris, and began to write Letters to the Gentlewoman, which were not refuesed, although he could receyue no aunsweres that pleafed him, but such as were done openly. And in this forte the Gentlewoman long time fed him with delayes. In the ende she discouered all this new loue vnto hir frend, who was attached with such an Aking Diseafe in his heade, as the same was Fraught with the Reume of Iealousie:
wherefore she to shewe hir selfe to be suspected without cause (very carefull for the Scholler) sent hir mayde to tell hir, that she had no conuenient time to doe the thinge that should please hir, fithens he was first assured of hir loue, but hoped the next Christ-masse holly dayes to be at his commaundement: wherefore if he would vouchsafe to come the night following the first holly day, into the Court of hir house, she would wayte there for his comminge. The Scholler the beft contented man in the Worlde fayled not at the time appoynted, to go to the Gentlewoman's house: where being placed by the Mayde in a bafe Court, and that fast within the fame, he attended for hir, who Suppinge with hir friende that night, very pleasantly recited vnto him all that she had determined then to doe, saying: "Thou mayft fee now what loue I do beare vnto him, of whom thou haft foolishly conceived thys Iealousie. To which woordes hir Freende gaue eare with great delecation, desiringe to fee the effect of that, whereof she gane him to vnderstand by wordes." Now as it chaunced the day before the Snowe fell downe so thicke from aboue, as it couered the Earth, by which meanes the Scholler within a very little space after his arriuall, began to be very colde: howbeit hopinge to receyue recompence, he suffred it paciently. The Gentlewoman a little while after, sayd vnto hir Freende: "I pray thee let vs goe into my chauember, where at a little Window we may looke out, and see what he doth that maketh thee so Iealous, and herken what aunfwere he will make to my Mayde, whom of purpofe I wyll send forth to speake vnto him." When she had so sayde, they went to the Window, where they seeing the Scholler (they not seene of hym,) heard the Mayde speake thefe wordes: "Rinieri, my Mystrefe is the angriest Woman in the World, for that as yet she cannot come vnto thee. But the caufe is, that one of hir Brethren is come to visite hir this Evenyng, and hath made a long discourse of talke vnto hir, and afterwauers bad himselfe to Supper, and as yet is not departed, but I thinke hee will not tary longe, and then immediately she will come. In the meane tyme she prayeth thee to take a little Payne." The Scholler beleewiing this to be true, sayde vnto hir: "Require your Mistrefe to take no care for mee till hir leasure may ferue: But yet entreat hir to make
fo much haste as the can.” The Mayde returned and went to Bed, and the Dame of the house sayd then vnto hir frende: “Now sir, what say you to this? Doe you thinke that if I loued him, as you myftruf, that I would suffer him to tarry beneath in this greate colde to coole himfelfe?” And havinge sayd so, she went to Bed with hir frende, who then was partly satifed, and all the night they continued in greate pleafure and folace, laughing, and mock- ing the miserable Scholler that walked vp and downe the Court to chafe himfelfe, not knowing where to fit, or which way to anoyde the colde, and curfled the long taryinge, of his mistrefle Brother, hoping at euery noyfe he heard, that she had come to open the dore to let him in, but his hope was in vayne. Now she hauing sported hir felfe almoft till midnight, sayd vnto hir frende: “How think you (sir) by our Scholler, whether judge you is greater, his Wyfedom, or the loue that I beare vnto him? The colde that I make him to suffer, will extinguifh the heate of infusion whych yee conceyued of my wordes the other day.” “Yee fay true,” (sayd hir frende,) “and I do affure you, that like as you are my de-light, my ref, my comfort, and all my hope, euem fo I am yours, and fhalbe during life.” For the confirmation of which renewed amity, they sparde no delights which the louing Goddefl doeth vfe to ferue and imploie her feraunts and futers. And after they had talked a certayne time, she sayd vnto him: “For God’s fake (sir) let vs rife a little, to fee if the glowing fire which this my new louer hath dayly written vnto me, to burn in him, bee quenched or not.” And ryfing out of their Beds, they went to a little Window and looking downe into the Courte, they law the Scholler dauncing vpon the Snow, whereunto his fhiering teeths were fo good Instru- ments, as he feemed the trimmest Dauncer that euer trode a Cinquepace after fuch Musick, being forced thereunto through the greate colde which he suffered. And then she fayde vnto him: “What say you to this my frende, do you not fee how cunninge I am to make men daunce without Taber, or Pipe?” “Yes in deede,” (sayd hir Louer) “yee be an excellent Musitian.” “Then” (quod ffee) “let vs go downe to the dore, and I will speake vnto him, but in any Wife fay you nothing, and we shal heare what rea- sons and arguments he will frame to moove me to compaffion, and
perchaunce shall have no little pastime to behold him." Whereupon they went downe softly to the dore, and there without opening the same, she with a softe voyce out at a little whole, called the Scholler vnto hir. Which shee hearinge, began to praye God and thancke hym a thousande times, beleevying veryly that he shouold then be let in, and approching the dore, sayd: "I am heere mine (owne sweete heart) open the dore for God's sake, for I am like to die for Cold." Whom in mocking wife the answered: "Can you make me beleue (M. Scholler) that you are so tender, or that the colde is so great as you affirme, for a little Snow newly falne downe? There be at Paris farre greater Snowes than thefe be, but to tell you the troth, you cannot come in yet, for my Brother (the dewell take him) came yesternight to supper, and is not yetdeparted, but by and by hee wyll be gon, and then you shall obtayne the effect of your desire, affuring you, that with mutch a doe I have folne away from hym, to come hither for your comfort, praying you not to thincke it longe." "Madame" sayd the Scholler, "I befeech you for God's sake to open the dore, that I may stand in court from the Snow, which within this houre hath fallen in great aboundaunce, and doth yet continue: and there I will attend your pleasure." "Alas sweet Friend" (sayde she) "the dore maketh sutch a noyfe when it is opened, that it will easely be heard of my brother, but I will pray him to depart, that I may quickly returne agayne to open the same." "Goe your way then" (sayd the Scholler) "and I pray you cause a great fire to be made, that I may warme mee when I come in, for I can scarce feel mee my selfe for colde." "Why, it is not possible" (quod the Woman) "if it be true that you wholly burne in loue for me, as by your sundry Letters written, it appeareth, but now I perceyue that you mocke me, and therefore tary there still on God's name." Hir frende which heard all this, and tooke pleasure in those wordes, went agayne to Bed with hir, into whose eyes no slepe that night could enter for the pleasure and sport they had with the poore Scholler. The vnhappy wretched Scholler whose teeth chattered for colde, faring like a Storke in colde nights, perceyuing himselfe to be mocked, aflayed to open the dore, or if he might goe out by some other way: and seeing it impossible, talking vp and downe like a Lyon, cursed
the nature of the time, the wickednesse of the woman, the length of the Night, and the Folly and simplicy of himselfe: and conceyuing great rage, and despight agaynst hir, turned fodaynely the long and feruent loue that he bare hir, into despight and cruell hatred, deuising many and diuers meanes to bee reuenged, whych he then farre more desired, than hee did in the beginninge to lye with his Widow. After that longe and tedious night, day approched, and the dawning thereof began to appeare: wherefore the mayde instruccted by hir mistretē, went downe into the court, and feemyng to haue pity uppon the Scholler, sayd vnto hym: "The Diuell take hym that euer he came hyther this nyghte, for hee hath bothe let vs of sleepe, and hath made you to be frozen for colde, but take it paciently for this tyme, some other Nyght must be appointed. For I know well that neuer thyng coulde chaunce more displeasantly to my Mistretē than this." But the Scholler full of dysdayne, lyke a wyfe man which knew well that threats and menacyynge words, were weapons without hands to the threatned, retayned in hys Stomacke that whych intemporeate wyll would haue broken forth, and wyth fo quiet Woordes as hee coulde, not shewynge hymselfe to bee angry, sayd: "In deede I haue suffred the worste Nyghte that euer I dyd, but I knowe the fame was not throughe your mistretē fault, bicaufe shee hauing pitye vppon me, and as you say, that which cannot be to Night, may be done another time, commend me then vnto hir, and farewell." And thus the poore Scholler stiffe for colde, so well as hee coulde, retournd home to his house, where for the extremitye of the tyme and lacke of sleepe beyng almost deade, he threw hymselfe vppon his bed, and when he awaked, his Armes and Legges had no feeling. Wherefore he sent for Phyfitions and tolde them of the colde he had taken, who incontinently prouided for his health: and yet for al their best and speedy remedies, they could scarce recover his Iointes and Sinewes, wherein they did what they coulde: and had it not bene that he was yong, and the Sommer approching, it had ben to mutch for him to haue endured. But after he was come to Healthe, and grewe to be luyty, secrete Malyce still resting in his breaste, hee thought vpon reuenge. And it chaunced in a lytle tyme after, that Fortune prepared a new accident to the
scholer to satisfie his desire, because the young man which was beloued of the Gentlewoman, not caring any longer for hire, fell in loue with an other, and gaue ouer the solace and pleasure he was wont to doe to mistresse Helena, for which despite she confuemed herself in weepings and lamentations. But hire maid hauing pity vpon hire mistresse sorrowes, knowing no meanes to remoue the melancholy which she conceiued for the losse of hire friend, and seing the scholler daily passe by according to his common Custome, conceiued a foolifhe beleefe that hire mistresse friend might be brought to loue hire agayne, and wholly recovered, by some charme or other sleight of Necromancy, to bee wrought and brought to passe by the Scholler. Which deuise she tolde vnto hire mistresse, and she vndiscreetely (and without due consideration that if the scholler had any knowledge in that science, he would helpe himselfe) gaue credite to the words of hire mayde, and by and by sayd vnto hire, that shee was able to bring it to passe, if he would take it in hande, and therewithall promised assuredly, that for recompenfe he shoulde vse hire at his pleasure. The mayde diligently tolde the Scholler hereof, who very joyfull for those newes, sayd vnto himselfe: "O God, prayed he thy name, for now the time is come, that by thy helpe I shal requite the injuries done vnto me by this wicked Woman, and be recompened of the great loue that I bare vnto hire:" And aunswered the mayde: "Go tell thy mistresse that for this matter she neede to take no care, for if hire friend were in India, I can prefently force him to come hither, and ask hire forgiueneffe of the fault he hath committed agaynst hire. And the manner, and way how to vse hire selfe in this behalfe, I will gieue hire to vnderstand when it shal please hire to appoinct me: and sayle not to tell hire what I say, comfortinge hire in my behalfe." The mayde caried the aunswere, and it was concluded, that they shoulde talke more hereof at the Church of S. Lucie, whither being come, and reaasoning together alon, not rememering that she had brought the Scholler almoast to the poynte of death, she reueyed vnto him all the whole matter, and the thing which he desirde, praying him instantafully to helpe hire, to whome the scholler sayd: "True it is lady, that amongs other things which I learned at Paris, the arte of Necromancie, (whereof
I haue very great (skill,) is one: But bycaufe it is mutch displea-
faunt to God, I haue made an othe neuer to vfe it, eyther for my
felfe, or for any other: howbeit the loue which I beare you, is
of mutch force, as I cannot deny you any request, yea and if I
should be damned amongs all the deuils in hell, I am ready to
performe your pleasure. But I tell you before, that it is a harder
matter to be done, than paraduenture you believe, and specially
where a Woman shall prouoke a Man to loue, or a Man the Woman,
bycaufe it can not be done by the proper Person, whome it doth
touche, and therefore it is meete, whatfoeuer is done, in any wyle
not to be affrayde, for that the coniuration mutt bee made in the
Nyght, and in a soltytarie place wythout Companye: which thing
I know not how you shal bee disposed to doe.” To whom the
Woman more amorous than wife, aunfwered: “Loure prycketh
mee in mutch wife, as there is nothyng but I dare attempt, to haue
him againe, that caufelesse hath forsaken me. But tel me I be-
feech you wherein it behoueth that I be so bold and hardy.” The
Scholer (subtil inough) faid: “I mutte of neceffity make an image
of braffe, in the name of him that you desire to haue, which being
fent vnto you you mutt, when the Mone is at hir ful, bath your self
fark naked in a running riuier at the first houre of sleepe vii.
times with the fame image: and afterwards beyng ftil naked, you
muft go vp into some tree or house vnhabited, and turning your
felfe towaerdes the North fide thereof wyth the image in your hand
you shal fay vii. times certain words, that I wil glue you in writ-
ing, which when you haue done, two damfels shal come vnto you,
the faireft that euer you law, and they shal salute you, humbly
demaundering what your pleasure is to command them: to whom
you shal willingly declare in good order what you desire: and take
hede aboue al things, that you name not one for an other: and
when they begonne, you may defcend downe to the place where
you left your Apparel, and array your felfe agayne, and afterwardes
retourne home vnto your house, and affure your felf, that before
the mid of the neste Nyghte folowing, your Fryend shal come vnto
you weepyng, and crying Mercye and forgyuenesse at youre
Handes. And know yee, that from that tyme forth, he wil neuer
forfake you for any other.” The gentlewoman hearing thofe
words, gaue great credyte thervnto: and thought that already she helde hir fryend betweene hir Armes, and very ioyfull sayd: "Doubt not fir, but I wyl accomplish al that you haue iuoyned me: and I haue the meeteft place in the World to doe it: for vppon the valley of Arno, very neare the Ryuer fyde I haue a Manor houfe, secretely to woork any attempt that I lift: and now it is the moneth of Iuly, in which tyme bathing is moft pleafaunt. And also I remembre that not far from the Ryuer, there is a lyttle Toure vnhabited, into which one can scarce get vp, but by a certaun Ladder made of chesnut tree, which is already there, where- upon the shephierds do sometime ascende to the turrafe of the fame Toure, to looke for their cattell when they be gone aflray: and the place is very solitarie out of the way. Into that Toure wyll I goe vp, and truft to execute what you haue requyred me." The Scholler which knew very well both the village whereof she spake, and also the Toure, right glad for that he was assured of his purpofe, sayde: "Madame, I was neuer there, ne yet do knowe the village, nor the Toure, but if it bee as you fayde, it is not possible to finde anye better place in the Worlde: wherefore when the tyme is come, I wyll fende you the Image, and the prayer. But I heartily befeech you, when you haue obtained your defire, and do perceyue that I haue well ferued your turne, to haue me in remembraunce, and to keepe your promyfe." Which the Gentlewoman assured hym to doe withoute fayle, and taking hir leaue of him, she retired home to hir houfe. The Scholer ioyfull for that hys deuife shoulde in deede come to paffe, caufed an image to be made with certaine Characters, and wrote a tale of a Tubbe in ftede of the prayer. And when hys fawe tyme he fent them to the Gentlewoman, aduertifing hir that the Nyght folowyng, she must doe the thing he had appoynted hir. Then to procede in his enterprife, he and his man went secretely to one of his fryends houfes that dwelte harde by the towne. The Woman on the other fide, and hir Mayde repaired to hir place: where when it was nyght, makyng as though she would go slepe, she fent hir Mayde to Bed: afterwords aboute ten of the Clocke she conueyed hirself very softly out of hir lodgyng, and repayred neare to the Towne vpon the riuer of Arno, and looking aboute hir, not seeing or perceiu-
ing any man, she vnclouched hir selfe, and hidde hir apparell vnder a bush of Thorne\es, and then bathed hir selfe vii. tymes with the Image, and afterwastes firke naked, holding the same in her hand, she went towards the Toure. The Scholler at the beginning of the Nyghte beying hydden wyth hys servaunt amongst the willowes and other trees neere the Toure, saw all the aforesayde thinges, and hir alfo paffing naked by him, (the whitenesse of whose body surppasse\d as he thought, the darkness of the night, so farre as blacke exceedeth white) who afterwastes behelde hir Stomack, and the other partes of hir body, which seemed unto him to be very delectable. And remembrance what would shortly come to passe, he had some pitty vp\on hir, on the other side, the temptation of the Flesh sodaynely assayled hym, provoking him to issue forth of the secret corner, to Surprize hir, and to take his pleazure vpon hir. But calling to hys rememberaunce what sh\e was, and what great wrong hee had suflayned, his malice began to kindle agayne, and did remove his pitty, and luft, continuing still steadfast in his determination, suffring her to passe hir Iorney. The Wydow being vp\on the Toure, and turning hir face towards the North, began to say the wordes which the Scholler had giuen hir. Within a while after the Scholler entred in very softly, and tooke away the ladder whereupon she got vp, and flode still to heare what she did say and doe. Who hauing vii. times recited hir prayer, attended the comming of the two damfels: for whom she wayted so long in vayne, and therewithall began to be extremely colde, and perceyued the dawning of the day appeare. Wherefore taking great displeasure that it came not to passe as the Scholler had tolde hir, she spake these wordes to hir selfe: “I doubt much least this Scholler will rewarde mee with such another night, as wherein once I made him to wayte: but if he haue done it for that respect, he is not well reuenged, for the nights now want the third part of the length of those, then, besides the colde that he indured, which was of greater extremity.” And that the day might not discouer hir, she woulde haue gone downe from the Toure, but she found the Ladder to be taken away. Then as thou the Worlde had molten vnder hir Feete, hir heart began to fayle, and Fayntinge, fell downe vp\on the tarrasfe of the toure,
and when hir force resuued agayne, she began pitifully to weepe and compayn. And knowing well that the Scholler had done that deede for reuenge, she grew to be angry wyth hir selfe, for that she hadde Offended another, and to mutch trusted hym whom she ought (by good reason) to have accompted hir enimy. And after she had remayned a great while in this plight, then looking if there were any way for hir to goe downe, and perceyuinge none, she renued hir weeping, whose minde great care and sorrow did pierce saying thus to hir selfe: "O vnhappy wretch, what will thy brethren say, thy Parents, thy Neyghbors, and generally all they of Florence, when they shal vnnderstande that thou haft bene found heere naked? Thy honesty which hitherto hath bene neuer flayned, shal now bee blotted with the flayne of shame, yea, and if thou were able to finde (for remayed hereof) any matter of excuse (lutch as might be founde) the wicked Scholler (who knoweth all thy doings) will not sufer thee to ly: ah miserable wretch, that in one houre’s space, thou haft loft both thy freende and thyne honour. What shal become of thee? Who is able to couer thy shame?" When she had thus compayned hirselfe, hir forrowe was not so great as shee was like to caft hirselfe headlong downe from the Toure: but the Sunne being already rifen, she approched neare one of the corners of the Walle, espying if she could see any Boy keeping of cattell, that she might send him for hir Mayde. And it chaunted that the Scholler which lay and slept in couert, awaked, one espying the other, the Scholler saluted hir thus: "Good morow, Lady, be the Damfels yet come?" The Woman feeing, and hearing him, began agayne bitterly to weepe, and prayed him to come vp to the Toure, that she might speake with him. The Scholler was thereunto very aagreeable, and she lying on hir belly vpon the terrasse of the Touer, discouering nothing but hir head ouer the side of the same, sayd vnto him weeping: "Rinieri, truly, if euer I caufed thee to endure an ill Night, thou art now well revenged on me; for although it be the moneth of Iuly, I thought (because I was naked) that I shoulde haue frofen to death this night for cold, besides my great, and continuall Teares for the offence which I have done thee, and of my Folly for beleewing thee,
that maruell it is mine eyes do remayne within my head: And therefore I pray thee, not for the loue of me, whom thou oughtest not to loue, but for thine owne sake which art a gentleman, that the shame and payne which I haue suffayned, may satify the offence and wrong I haue committed agaynst thee: and cause mine apparell I befeech thee to be brought vnto me, that I may goe downe from hence, and doe not robbe mee of that, which afterwards thou art not able to reioyce, which is, myne honor: for if I haue deccyued thee of one night, I can at all times when it shall please thee, render vnto thee for that one, many. Let it suffice thee then with this, and like an honest man content thy selfe by being a little reuenged on me, by making me to know now what it is to hurt another. Do not, I pray thee, praftife thy power against a woman: for the Egle hath no fame for conquering of the Doue. Then for the loue of God, and for thine honor fake, haue pitty and remorfe vpon me.” The Scholler with a cruel heart remembering the injury that he hath receyued, and seeing hir fo to wepe and pray, conceyued at one instant both pleasure and griefe in his minde: pleasure of the reuenge which he aboue all things deaired, and griefe moued his manboode to haue compassion vpon the myferable woman. Notwithstanding, pitty not able to ouercome the fury of his reuenge, he aunswered: “Mistresse Helena, if my praiers (which in deede I could not moyffen with teares, ne yet sweeten them with fugred woordes, as you doe yours nowe) might haue obtained that night wherein I thought I should haue died for colde in the Court full of fnowe, to haue bene conveying by you into some couert place, an easie matter it had bene for mee at this instant to heare your suite. But if now more than in times past your honor do waxe warme, and that it greeueth you to stand starke naked, make your prayers to him, betweene whose Armes you were not offended to be naked that night, wherein you heard me trot vp and downe your Courte, my Teeth chattering for colde and marching vpon the Snow: And at his handes seekke releefe, and pray him to bring your Clothes, and fetch a Ladder that you may come downe: Force your selfe to fet your honor’s care on him for whom both then, and now besides many other times, you haue not feared to put the fame in perill,
Why doe you not cal for him to come and help you? And to
whom doth your help better appertayne than vnto him? You are
his owne, and what things will he not prouye in this distresse of
yours? Or else what perfon will hee seeke to succour, if not to
helpe and succour you? Call him (O foolish woman) and proue if
the loue which thou bearest him, and thy wit together with his,
be able to deliuer thee from my Folly, where (when both you were
togethers) you tooke your Pleasure. And now thou haft Experi-
ence wheather my Folly or the Loue which thou diddest beare vnto
him, is greatest. And be not now fo Lyberall, and Curteous of
that which I go not about to seeke: referre thy good Nights to thy
beloved freende, if thou chance to escape from hence alius: for
from my selfe I cleerely discharge you both. And truly I haue
had to mutch of one: and sufficient it is for mee to bee mocked
once. Moreouer by thy crafty talke vtttered by subtill speache,
and by thyne vntimely prayse, thou thinkst to force the getting
of my good will, and thou callest me Gentleman, valiaunt man,
thinkeinge thereby to withdrawe my valyaunte minde from puni-
ishing of thy wretched body: but thy flatteries shall not yet bleare
mine vnderstanding eyes, as once wyth thy vnfathyfull promisses
thou diddest beguile my ouerweening wit. I now to well do
know, and thereof thee well assure, that all the time I was a Schol-
er in Paris, I never learned fo mutch as thou in one night diddest
teach mee. But put the Cafe that I were a valiaunt man, yet thou
art none of them vpon whom valianness ought to shewe his effects:
and for the end of futch tormenting and passing cruell bearts, as
thou art, only death is fittest rewarde: for if a Woman made but
halfe these playnts, there is no man, but woulde affwage his re-
uenge. But yet as I am no Eagle, and thou no Doue, but a moft
venomous Serpent, I intend fo well as I can to perfecute thee mine
aucient enimy, wyth the greatest mallice I can deuise, which I
cannot.fo properly,cal reuenge, as I may terme it Correction: for
that the reuenge of a matter ought to surmount the Offence, and
I will bestow no reuenge on thee: for if I were disposd to apply
my mynde therevnto, for repect of thy displeasure done to me,
thy Lyfe should not suffife, nor one hundred more like vnto thine:
which if I tooke away, I shoule but rid the Worlde of a moft vile,
and wicked woman. And to say the truth, what other art thou then a Deuill accept a little beauty in thy Face, which within few yeares will vanishe and confume: for thou tookeft no care to kill, and destroy an honest man (as thou euen now diddeft terme me) whose Life, may in tyme to come bee more profitable to the Worlde, than an hundred thousand futch as thyne, so long as the World indureth. I wil teach thee then by the paine thou suffreft, what is it to mock futch Men as bee of skyll, and what maner of thyng it is to delude and Scorne poore Schollers, gyuing thee warning hereby, that thou never fall into futch folly, if thou escapeft this. But if thou haue fo great a will to come downe as thou fayeft thou haft, why doeft thou not throwe downe thy felfe head-longe, that by breaking of thy Necke (if it pleafe God) at one insiante thou rid thy felfe of the payne, wherein thou fayeft thou art, and make mee the beft contented man of the Worlde. For this tyme I will fay no more to thee, but that I haue done enough to make thee clime so high. Learne then now fo wel how thou maift get down, as thou didft know how to mock and deceuie me." Whyle the Scholler had preached vnto hir these words, the wretched woman wepte continually, and the time stil did paffe away, the Sunne increafing more and more: but when the Scholler held his peace, she replyed: "O cruell man, if that cursed nyght was grieuous vnto thee, and my fault appeared great, cannot my youth and Beauty, my Teares and humble Prayers bee able to mitigate thy wrath and to moue thee to pity: do at leaft that thou mayst be moued and thy cruell minde appeased for that onely act, let me once again be trufted of thee, and fith I have manifefted al my defire, pardon me for this tyme, fith thou haft sufficiently made me feele the penance of my finne. For, if I had not repofed my truft in thee, thou hadst not now revenged thy felf on me, which with defire moft sypetefull thou doeft full well declare. Gyue ouer then thine anger, and pardon me henceforth: for I am determined if thou wilt forgeue mee, and caufe me to come downe out of this place, to forfake for ever that vnfaithfull Louer, and to receive thee for my only friend and Lord. Moreover where thou greatly blameft my beauty, esteeming it to be short, and of smal accompt, futch as it is, and the like of other women I know, not
be regarded for other cause but for pastime and pleasure of youthly Men, and therefore not to be contemned: and thou thy self truly art not very old; and albeit that cruelly I am intreated of thee, yet can I not beleue that thou wouldest haue me so miserably to die, as to cast my selfe down headlong, like one desperate, before thine eyes, whom (except thou were a lier as thou seemest to be now) in time past I did wel please and like. Haue pitye then upon me, for God’s sake, for the Sunne begins to grow exceeding hot, and as the extreame and bitter cold did hurt me the last Night euen so the heat beginneth to moleft me.” Whereunto the Scholler which kept hir there for the nonce, and for his pleasure, answered: “Mistresse you did not now commit your faith to me for any loue you bare, but to get that again which you had lost, wherfore that deserueth no good turne, but greater pain: and fondlye thou thynkest this to be the onely meanes, whereby I am able to take defired reuenge. For I haue a thousand other wayes and a thousand Trappes haue I layed to tangle thy feete, in makynge thee beleue that I dyd loue thee: in such wise as thou shouldest haue gone no where at any tyme, if thy haue not chanced but thou shouldest haue fallen into one of them: and surely thou couldest haue falne into none of them, but would haue bred thee more anoynaunce and shame than this (which I chosse not for thyne eafe, but for my greater pleasure.) And besides if all these meanes had fayled me, the pen should not, wherewith I would haue displayed thee in such Colours, as when the simple brute thereof hadde come to thyne eares, thou wouldest haue defired a thousand times a Day, that thou hadst never bene born. For the forces of the pen be farre more vehement, than they can esteeme that haue not proved them by experience. I swear vnto thee by God, that I doe reioyse, and so wil to the ende, for this reuenge I take of thee, and so haue I done from the beginning: but if I had with pen painted thy maners to the Worlde, thou shouldest not haue ben so much ashamed of other, as of thy selfe, that rather than thou wouldest haue loked mee in the Face agayne, thou wouldest haue plucked thyne Eyes oute of thy head: and therefore reprove no more the Sea, for being increased wyth a lyttele Brooke. For thy loue, or for that thou wilt be mine own, I
care not, as I haue already told thee, and lone him again if thou canft, fo mutch as thou wilt, to whome for the hatred that I haue borne, I presently bear fo mutch good wyll agayne, and for the pleasure that he hath don thee now. You be amorous and couet the loue of young men, bicaufe you see theyr Colour somewhat fresh, their beard more black, their bodies well shaped to daunce and runne at Tylt and Ryng, but al these qualities haue they had, that be growne to elder yeares, and they by good experience know what other are yet to learn. Moreouer you deeme them the better horffemen, bicaufe they can iourney more myles a day than thofe that be of farther yeares. Truely I confesse, that with great paynes they pleafe futch Venerial Gentlewomen as you be, who doe not perceyue (like fauage Beastes) what heapes of euill doe lurke vnder the forme of fayre apparence. Younge men be not content with one Louer, but fo many as they behold, they do desire, and of fo many they think themfelles worthy: wherefore their loue cannot be fiable. And that this is true, thou mayeft now be thine owne wytnesse. And yonge men thykyng themfelles worthy; to be honoured and cherisheed of theyr Ladies, haue none other glory but to vaunt themfelles of thofe whome they have enjoyed: whych fault maketh many to yeld themfelles to thofe that be difereete and wise, and to futch as be no blabbes or Teltales. And where thou fayeft that thy loue is knowne to none, but to thy mayde and me, thou art deceived, if thou beleue the fame, for all the inhabitants of the ftreete wherein thy Louer dwelleth, and the ftreete alfo wherein thy houfe doth f tand, talke of nothyng more than of your Loue. But many times in futch cafes, the party whome futch Brute doth touch, is the laft that knoweth it. Moreouer, young men do robbe thee, where they of elder yeares do gyue thee. Thou then (which haft made futch choyfe), remayne to him whome thou haft chofen, and me (whom thou flouette) gyue leave to apply to an other: for I haue found a Woman to bee my fryend, which is of an other discretion than thou art, and knoweth me better than thou doft. And that thou mayft in an other world be more cer-
taine of myne Eyes desire, than thou bitherto art, throwe thy felfe downe fo soone as thou canft, that thy foule already (as I fuppose) receiued betwene the armes of the diuel hym felse may
fe if mine eyes be troubled or not, to view thee breake thy Necke. But bicaufe I think thou wilt not do me that good turne, I say if the Sunne begin to warme thee, remember the cold thou madest me suffer, which if thou canst mingle with that heat, no doubt thou shalt feele the fame more temperate.” The comfortlesse Woman seeing that the Scholler’s words tended but to cruell end, began to wepe and saide: “Now then sith nothing can moue thee to take pity for my sake, at left wife for the loue of hir, whom thou faileft to be of better discretion than I, take some compaffion: for hir sake (I say) whom thou caileft thy friend, pardon mee and bryng hither my clothes that I may put them on, and cause me if it pleafe thee to come downe from hence.” Then the Scholler began to laugh, and seing that it was a good while past III. of the clocke, he anwered: “Well go to, for that woman’s sake I cannot wel say nay, or refuse thy request, tel me where thy garments be, and I will go feke them, and cause thee to come downe.” She beleuing hym, was some what comforted, and told hym the place where she had befowled them. And the Scholler going out of the Toure, commaunded his fernaunt to tarry there, and to take heede that none went in vntil he came againe. Then he departed to one of hys friends houfes, where he wel refreshed himfelfe, and afterwards when he thought time, he layd him downe to flepe. Al that space mistresse Helena whych was flyll vp on the Toure, and recomforted with a lyttle foolish hope, sorrowful beyonde meafure, began to fit downe, seeking some shadowed place to befofe hir felfe, and with bitter thoughts and heavy cheare in good deuotion, wafted for his comming, now mufing, now wepyng, then hopyng, and fodaynely difpayring the Scholler’s retourne wyth hir Clothes: and chaunging from one thought to another, like one that was weary of travele, and had taken no reft al the Nyght, she fel into a little flumbre. But the Sun whych was paffing hote, being aboute noone, glaunced his burning beames vpon hir tender body and bare head, with futch force, as not only it finged the flefh in flight, but alfo did chip and parch the fame with futch rofting heat, as the which soundly flepte, was conffrayned to wake: and feling that raging warmth, defirous somewhat to remoue hir felf, she thought in turning that all hir tofted flefh had
opened and broken, like vnto a skyn of parchement holden against the fire: besides with payne extreme, hir head began to ake, with futch vehemence, as it seemed to be knocked in pieces: and no maruel, for the pament of the Toure was fo paffing hotte, as neither vpon hir feete, or by other remedy, shee could find place of reft. Wherefore without power to abide in one place, she fil removed to and fro wepyng bitterly. And moreover, for that no Wynd did blow, the Toure was haunted wyth futch a swarne of Flies, and Gnats, as they lighting vpon hir parched flesh, did fo cruelly byte and flinge hir, that every of them seemed worfe than the prycke of a Nedle, which made hir to bestirre hir hands, incessantly to beate them off curfing fill hir felfe, hir Lyfe, hir friend and Scholler. And being thus and with futch pain bitten and afflicted with the vehement heat of the Sun, with the Flies and gnate, hungry, and much more thyrfty, affailed with a thousand grievous thoughts, the merefe vp, and began to loke about hir if she could heare or see any perfon, purpoing whatsoeuer came of it to call for helpe. But hir ill fortune had taken way at this hoped meanes of hir reliefe: for the Husbandmen and other Laborers were al gone out of the fields to shrowd themselues from the heate of the day, sparing their trauail abrod, to threafe their corn and doe other things at home, by reaon whereof she neither faw nor hearde any thing, except Butterflies, humble bees, crickets, and the riuier of Arno, which making hir luft to drink of the water quenched hir thirst nothing at al, but rather did augment the fame. She sawe besides in many places, woodes, shadoys and houfes, which lyke-wyfe did breede hir double grief, for defire she had vnto the fame. But what fhal we speake any more of this vnhappy woman? The Sunne aboue, and the hot Toure paiment below, wyth the bitings of the flies and gnats, had on euery part fo dresed hir tender corps, that where before the whitenesse of hir body did passe the darkenesse of the Night, the fame was become red, al arayed and spotted wyth gore bloud, that to the beholder and viewer of hir fiate, she feemed the moft yll fauored thyng of the Worlde: and remayning in thys plyght without hope or councel, she loked rather for death than other comfort. The Scholler after the Clocke had founded three in the afternoon, awaked, and remem-
bring his lady, went to the Toure to see what was become of hir, and sent his man to dinner, that had eaten nothing all that day. The Gentlewoman hearing the Scholler, repayed so feeble and tormented as she was, vnto the trap doore, and fitting vppon the same, pityfully weeping began to say: "Rinieri, thou art beyonde meaure euenged on me, for if I made thee freee all night in mine open Court, thou hafte tosted me to day vppon this Toure, nay rather burnt with heate, confumed me: and besides that, to dye and sterue for hunger, and thirst. Wherefore I pray thee for God's fake to come vp, and fith my heart is saynt to kill my selfe, I pray thee heartely speedily to do it. For aboue all things I defire to dy, so great and bitter is the torment which I endure. And if thou wilt not shewe me that favour, yet caufe a glasse of Water to be brought vnto me, that I may moyften my mouth, fith my teares bee not able to coole the fame, so great is the drouth and heate I haue within." Wel knew the Scholler by hir voyce, hir weake estate, and fawe besides the moft part of hir body all tosted with the Sunne: by the viewe whereof, and humble fute of hir, he conceiued a little pitty. Notwytshstanding he aunfweared hir in this wise: "Wicked woman thou shalt not dye with my hands, but of thine owne, if thou defire the fame, and so mutch water shalt thou haue of me for cooinge of thine heate, as dampned Dines had in hell at Lazarus handes, when he lifted up his cry to Abraham, holding that saued wighte within his bleffed bosome, or as I had fire of thee for easing of my colde. The greater is my grieue that the vehemence of my colde muft be cured with the heate of futch a flincking carion beaft, and thy heate healed with the coldneffe of moft Soote and fauerous Water distilled from the orient Rose. And where I was in daunger to loose my Limmes, and life, thou wilt renew thy Beauty like the Serpent that cafteth his Skin once a yeare." "Oh myferable wretch" (sayd the woman) "God gieue him futch Beauty gotten in this forte, that witheth me futch euill. But (thou more cruell than any other beaft) what heart haft thou, thus like a Tyraunte to deale with me? What more grieuous payne coulde I endure of thee, or of any other, than I do, if I had killed, and done to death thy parents or whole race of thy ftocke and kin with moft cruell torments?
Truely I know not what greater tyranny coulde be vfed agaynft a Trayter that had facced or put a whole Citty to the sword, than that thou hafte done to me, to make my flesh to bee the foode and roft meate of the Sunne, and the baite for licorous flies, not vouch-fafing to reach hither a fimple glaffe of Water whych would haue bene graunted to the condemped Theefe, and Manqueller, when they be haled forth to hanging, yea wine moft commonly, if they afke the fame. Now for that I fee thee still remayne in obstinate mind, and that my passion can nothinge moone thee, I wyll prepare paciently to receiue my death, that God may haue mercy on my foule, whom I humbly befeech with his rigourous eyes to beholde that cruel act of thine.” And with thofe woords, fie approched with payne to the middle of the terraffe, deſpayring to escape that burning heate, and not onely once, but a thoufande times, (befides hir other forowes) fie thought to fowne for thirth, and bitterly wept without ceaſing, complayning hir mishap. But being almoft night, the Scholler thought fie had done inough, wherefore he tooke hir clothes, and wrapping the fame within his Seruaunt’s cloke, he went home to the Gentlewoman’s houfe where he founde before the gate, hir mayde fittting al fad and heauy, of whom he afked where hir Miftræwe was. “Syr,” (fayd fie) “I cannot tell, I thought this morning to finde hir a Bed, where I left hir yeſter night, but I cannot finde hir there, nor in any other place, ne yet can tell wheather to goe feeke hir, which maketh my hearte to throb fome miſfortune chaunced vnto hir. But (fir quod fie) cannot you tell where fie is?” The Scholler aunſwered: “I would thou haddeft bene with hir in the place where I left hir, that I might haue bene reuenged on thee fo well, as I am of hir. But beleue affuredly, that thou shalt not eſcape my handes vntill I pay thee thy deſert, to the intent hereafter in mocking other, thou mayft haue caufe to remember me.” When fie had fayde fo, fie willed his man to gieue the mayde hir Miftræwe Clothes, and then did bidde hir feeke hir out if fie would. The Seruaunte did his Mayſters commaundment, and the Mayde hauinge receyued them, knewe them by and by, and markinge well the scholler’s wordes, fie doubted leaſt fie had flayne hir Miftræwe, and mutch adoe fie had to refrayne from crying out. And the Scholler being gone,
she tooke her Mistresse Garments, and ran vnto the Toure. That day by hap, one of the Gentlewoman's labouring Men had two of his hugges runne a stray, and as he went to secke them (a little while after the Scholler's departure) he approached neare the Toure looking round about if he might see them. In the busie searche of whom hee heard the miserable playnt that the vnhappy Woman made, wherefore so loude as he could, he cried out: "Who weepeth there aboue?". The Woman knew the voice of hir man, and calling him by his name, she sayde vnto him: "Goe home I pray thee to call my mayde and cause her to come vp hither vnto me." The fellow knowing his mistresse voice sayd vnto hir: "What Dame, who hath borne you vp so hygh? Your mayde hath fought you al this day, and who would haue thought to finde you there?" He then taking the staves of the Ladder, did set it vp against the Toure as it ought to be, and bounde the steppes that were wanting, with fastenings of Wyllowe twigges, and futch like pliant stuffe as he could finde. And at that instant the mayde came thither, who so foone as she was entred the Toure, not able to forbear hir voyce, beating hir hands, shee began to crye: "Alas sweete Mistresse where be you?" She hearing the voyce of hir Mayde aunswered so well as shee could: "Ah (sweete Wench) I am heere aboue, cry no more, but bring me hither my clothes." When the mayde heard hir speake, by and by for ioy, in haste she mounted vp the Ladder, which the Labourer had made ready, and with his helpe gat vp to the Terrasse of the Toure, and seeing hir Mistresse refemblign not a humayne body but rather a wodden Faggot halfe consumed with fire, all weary and whithered, lying a long farke naked vppon the Grounde, she began with hir Nayles to wreke the grieue vpon hir Face, and wept over hir with futch vehemency as if she had beene deade. But hir Dame prayed hir for God's sake to holde hir peace, and to help hir to make hir ready: and vnderstanding by hir, that no man knewe where she was become, except they which caried home hir clothes, and the Labourer that was present there, shee was somewhat recomforted, and prayed them for God's sake to say nothing of that chaunce to any person. The Labourer after mutch talke, and request to his Mistresse, to be of good cheere, when shee was ryfen vp, caried
hir downe vpon his Necke, for that she was not able to goe so farre, as out of the Toure. The poore Mayde which came behinde, in goinge downe the Ladder without takinge heed, hir foote fayled, and fallinge downe to the Grounde, shee brake hir Thigh, for griefe whereof shee roared, and cryed out lyke a Lyon. Wherefore the Labourer haung placed his Dame vpon a greene banke, went to see what hurt the Mayde had taken, and perceyued that she had broken hir Thigh, he caried hir likewise vnto that banke, and placed hir besides hir mistresTe, who seeinge one mischiefe vppon another to chaunce, and that she of whom shee hoped for greater help, than of any other, had broken hir Thigh, sorrowfull beyonde measure, renewed hir cry so miserably, as not onely the Labourer was not able to comforte hir, but he himself began to wepe for company. The Sunne hauinge trauayled into hys Westerne courfe, and taking his farewell by settling himselfe to rest, was at the poynt of goinge downe. And the poore defolate woman vnwillinge to be benighted, went home to the Labourer's house, where taking two of his Brothers, and his Wyfe, returned to fetch the Mayde, and caried hir home in a Chayre. Then cheering vp hys Dame with a little fresh water, and many fayre Wordes, he caried hir vpon his Necke into a Chaumber, afterwaards his Wyfe made hir warme Drinks and Meates, and putting of hir clothes, layd hir in hir Bed, and tooke order that the mistresTe and maide that night were caried to Florence, where the MistresTe ful of lies, deuifed a Tale all out of order of that which chaunced to hir, and hir Mayde, making hir Brethren, hir Sifters, and other hir neighbours beleue, that by fluff of lightning, and euill Sprites, hir face and body were Blitfered, and the Mayde broken vnder the Arfe bone with a Thunderbolt. Then Physitians were sent for, who not without greate griefe, and payne to the Woman (which many tymes left hir Skin sticking to the Sheets) cured hir cruel Feuer, and other hir diseases, and lykewise the mayde of hir Thigh: which caufed the Gentlewoman to forget hir Louer, and from that time forth wifely did beware and take heed whom she did mocke, and where she did bestow hir loue. And the Scholler knowing that the Mayde had broken hir Thigh, thought himselfe sufficiently reuenged, joyfully paffing by them both many times in silence.
Beholde the reward of a foolish wanton widow for her Mockes and Flouts, thinking that no greater care or more provident heed ought to be taken in jesting with a Scholler, than with any other common person, nor well remembering how they doe know (not all, I say, but the greatest parte) where the Diuell holdeth his Tayle: and therefore take heed good Wyues, and Wydowes, how you give your selves to mockes and daliaunce, specially of Schollers. But nowe turne we to another Wydow that was no amorous Dame but a sober Matrone, a motherly Gentlewoman, that by pitty, and Money Redeemed, and Raunfomed a King's Sonne out of myserable Captiuitie, that was utterly abandoned of all his Friendes. The manner and means how the Nouell ensuing shall shewe.
A Gentlewoman and Wydow called Camiola of hir owne minde Raunfomed Roland the Kyng's Sonne of Sicilia, of purpose to have him to hir Husband, who when he was redeemed unkindly denied hir, agaynst whom very Eloquently she Imuyed, and although the Law proved him to be hir Husband, yet for his unkindnes, she utterly refuseth him.

BvsA a Gentlewoman of Apulia, maynetayned ten Thoufande Romayne fouldiers within the walles of Cannas, that were the remnaunte of the army after the ouerthrow there: and yet hir State of Rycheffe was faulfe and nothynge dimynished, and left therby a worthy Teflimony of Lyberality as Valerius Maximus affirmeth. If this worthy woman Busa for Liberality is commended by aunclent Authors: if she deferue a Monument amongs famous Wryters for that splendent vertue which so brightly blafoneth the Heroicall natures of Noble dames, then may I bee so bolde amongs thefe Nouels to bring in (as it were by the hand) a Wyddow of Messina, that was a Gentlewoman borne, adorned with passing beauty and vertues. Amongs the rancke of which hir comely Qualities, the vertue of Liberality gliftered lyke the morninge Starre after the Night hath caft of his darke and Cloudy Mantell. This Gentlewoman remayning in Wyddowes state, and hearing tell that one of the Sonnes of Federicke, and Brother to Peter that was then King of the fayd Ilande called Rolande, was caried Pryfoner to Naples, and there kept in miserable Captiuity, and not like to bee redeemed by his Brother for a displeaſure conceyued, nor by any other, pittyng the state of the young Gentleman, and moued by hir gentle, and courageous disposition, and specially with the vertue of liberality, raunfomed the fayd Rolande, and craued no other interest or fury for the fame, but him to husband, that ought upon his knees to haue made fute to be hir flaye and seruaunte for repsect of his miserable state of Imprisionment. An affiaunce betweene them was concluded, and he redeemed, and when hee was returned, hee falled his former fayth, and cared not for hir:
for which vnkinde part, she before his Frends innyeth agaynft that ingratitude, and ytterly forsaketh him, when (fore ashamed) he would very fayne haue recouered hir good wil. But she like a wife gentlewoman well waying his inconstant mynde before mariaighe, lufted not to taffe or put in prooffe the fruiets and succeffe thereof. The intire Difcours of whom you shal briefely and presently vnderfiand. Camiola a widow of the City of Siena, the Daughter of a gentle Knight called Signor Lorenzo Torinio, was a Woman of great renoume and fame for hir beauty liberality and thamefaftneffe, and led a life in Messina, (an auncient Citty of Sicile) no leffe commendable than famous, in the company of hir parentes, contenting hirself wyth one only Hubbande, while she liued, which was in the tyme when Federick the thirde was Kyng of that Ile: And after their death she was an heyre of very great wealth and riccheffe, which were alwayes by hir conferred and kept in marvellous honest fort. Nowe it chaunced that after the death of Federick, Peter succedinge by his Commandement, a great Army by Sea was equippd from Messina, vnder the condut of Iohn Countee of Chiaramonte, (the most Renoumed in those dayes in Feats of Warre,) for to ayde the people of Lippayre, which were so strongly and earnestly besieged, as they were almoft all dead and consumed for hunger. In this Army, ouer and besides those that were in pay, many Barons and Gentlemen willingly went vpon their own proper costes, and charges, as well by Sea as Lande, onely for fame, and to be renoumed in armes. This Castell of Lippari was assualted by Godefry of Squilatio a valiaunt Man, and at that time Admiral to Robert Kyng of Jerusalem and Sicile: Which Godefry by long siege and assault, had so famished the people within, as dayly he hoped they would surrender. But hauing aduertifement (by certayne Brigandens which he had sent abroade to seour the Seas) that the Enimies Army (which was farre greater than his) was at hand, after that he had assembled all his Naue together in one sure place, he expected the event of Fortune. The Enimies so soone as they were seaed and possesed of the place, without any resistaunce of the places abandoned by Godefry, caried into the Citty at their pleasure all their victualles, which they brought wyth them, for which good happe and
chaunce the sayde Countee Iohn being very mutch encouraged and puffed vp wyth pryde, offred Battell to Godefrey. Wherefore he not refuing the fame, being a man of great corage, in the Night time fortifie his Army with Boordes, Timber, and other Ram-piers, and hauing put his Naui in good order, he encouraged his Men to fight, and to doe valiantly the next day, which done, hee caufed the Ankers to bee wayed, and gieuing the figne, tourned the prowes of hys Shyppes agaynft the Sicilians Army, but Countee Iohn who thought that Godefrey would not fight, and durft not once looke vpon the great army of the Sicilians, did not put his Fleete in order to fight, but rather in readineffe to pursue the enimies. But seeing the Courage, and the approch of theym that came agaynft him, began to feare, his heart almoft faying him, and repented him that he had required his Enimy to that which he thought neuer to have obtayned. In fuch wife as mistruffing the Battayle with troubled minde, changing the order giuen, and notwithstanding not to feeme altogether fearefull, incontinently caufed his Ships to be put into order after the beft maner he could for fo little tyme, himfelfe gieuing the figne of battell. In the meane while their enimies being approched neere vnto them, and making a very great noyfe with Cryes and Shoutes, furiously entred the Sicilians, which came flowly forth, and hauing fift throwne their Hookes and Grapples to flay them, they began the figh with Darles, Croffe-bowes, and other Shot, in fuch fort as the Sicilians being amazed for the fodayne mutation of Councell, and all enuironned with fear, and the Souldiers of Godefrey perceyuing the fame, entred their enimies Ships, and comming to blowes, even in a moment all was filled with bloud, by reafon whereof the Sicilians, then defpayring of themfelves, and they that feared turning the prowes fled away: But neuerthelesse the Victoye reclininge towards Godefrey, many of their Ships were drowned, many taken, and diuers Pinnaffes by force of their Oares ecape. In that fighd died fewe people, but many were hurt, and Iohn the Captayne Generall taken Pryfoner, and with him almoft all the Barons, which of their own accordes repayred to thofe Warres, and besides a great number of Souldiers, many Ensignes as well of the field, as of the Galleyes, and specially the
mayne Standerd was taken. And in the ende, the Caftell being
rendred after long Voyages, and great Fortunes by Sea, they were
al chayned, caried to Naples and there imprisoned. Amongs those
Prifoners, there was a certayne Gentleman named Rowlande, the
Naturall Sonne of King Federick deceased, a yong prince very
comely and valyaunt. Who not being redeemed, taried alone in
prison very sorrowfull to fee all others discharged after they had
payd their Raunfome and himfelfe not to have wherewith to fur-
nish the fame. For king Pietro (to whom the care of him apper-
tayned by reafon he was his Brother), for that his warres had no
better succeffe, and done contrary to his commaundement, con-
ceyued displeasure fo wel againft him, as all others which were
at that battell. Nowe hee then being prifoner without hope of
any liberty, by meanes of the dampifhe pryfon, and his feete
clogged with yrons, grewe to bee ficke and feeble. It chaunced
by fortune, that Camiola remembred him, and seeing him forfa-
ken of his brethren, had compaffyon vppon his miffehappe in futch
wise, as she purposed (if honestly she might doe the fame) to fet
hym at liberty. For the accomplisment whereof without preiu-
dice of hir honour, she lawe none other wayes but take him to
husband. Wherefore shee sent divers vnto him secretely, to con-
ferre if he would come forth vpon that condition, whereunto he wil-
ingly agreed. And performing ech due ceremonie, vnder pro-
mised faith, vpon the gift of a ring willingly by a deputy espoused
Camiola, who with fo mutch diligence as she could, payed two
thousand Crownes for his ransome, and by that means he was
deliuerd. When he was retourned to Meffina, he repayred not
to his Wyfe, but fared as though there had neuer bene any futch
talke beatwene thenym: whereof at the begynninge Camiola very
mutch maruelled, and afterwrdes knowinge his vnkindenesse
was greatly offended in hir heart against him. Notwithstanding
to the intent she might not seeme to be grieued without reafon,
before she proceeded any further, caufed him louingly to be talked
withal, and to be exhorted by folowing his promyfe to confum-
mate the mariage: and seeing that he denied euer any futch Con-
tract to be made, she caufed him to be summoned before the
Ecclesiafticall Iudge, by whome fentence was giuen that hee was
hir husband evidence of his owne letters, and by witnesse of certayne other perfonages of good reputation, which afterwards he himself confessed, his face blushing for shame, for that he had forgotten such a manifest benefit and good turne. When the kynde part of Camiola done vnto him was thoroughly known, he was by hys Brethren reproued and checked for hys villany, whereupon by their instigation, and the persuasion of his frends, he was contented by humble request to desire Camiola to perform the Nuptials. But that gentlewoman which was of great corage in the presence of diuers that were wyth him, when he required hir thereunto, answered him in this maner: "Rowland I haue great cause to render thankes to almyghty God, for that it pleased him to declare vnto me the proofe of thine vnfaithfulnesse, before thou didst by any meanes contaminate (vnder colour of mariage) the purity of my body, and that through his favoure, by whose most holy name thou wentest about to abuse me by falso and periured Oth, I haue foreseene thy Trumpery and deceit, wherein I beleue that I have gayned more than I shoulde have done by thee in mariage. I suppose that when thou were in pryson, thou didst meane no leffe, than now, by effect thou shewest, and diddest thinke that I, forgetting of what house I was, presumptuously desired a Husband of the Royal bloud, and therefore wholly inflamed with thy love, did purpose to beguile mee by denying the Truth, when thou haddest recouered lyberty thorough my Money, and thereby to referue thy selfe for some other of more famous Aliaunce, being restored to thy former degree. And thereby thou haft gieuen proofe of thy will, and what minde thou haddest so to do if thyne ability had bene correspondent. But God, who from the lofty Skyes doth beholde the humble and low, and who forfaketh none that hopeth in him, knowing the sincerity of my Conscience, hath gieuen mee the grace by little travayle, to breake the bands of thy deceipts, to disconuer thine ingratitude, and make manifeft thine infidelity, which I haue not done only to display the wrong towards me, but that thy Brethren and other thy friends might from henceforth know what thou art, what affiaunce they ought to repose in thy fayth, and thereby what thy frends ought to looke for, and
what thine enemies ought to feare. I have loft my Money, thou thy good name: I haue loft the hope which I had of thee, thou the fauour of the Kinge, and of thy brethren: I the expectation of my mariage, thou a true and constant Wife: I the fruits of charity, thou the gayne of amity: I an vnfaithful husband, thou a most pure and loyall Wyfe. Now the Gentlewomen of Sicilia doe maruayle at my Magnificence, and Beauty, and by prayses aduance the fame vp into the heauens: and contrary-wise euerie of theym doe mock thee, and deeme thee to be Infamous. The Renoumed Wryters of ech Countrey will place me amongs the ranke of the noblest Dames, where thou shalt be depresed, and throwne downe amonges the Heapes of mofte vnkynde. True it is, that I am somewhat deceyued by deliuering out of Pryfon, a yong man of Royal, and noble race, in steede of whom I have redeemed a Rafcall, a Lier, a Falsifier of his faith, and a cruell Beast: and take heede hardly how thou do greatly esteme thyselfe, and I wish thee not to think that I was moud to draw thee out of Pryfon, and take thee to Husbande for the good qualities that were in thee, but for the memory of auncient benefits which my father receyued of thine (if Federick, a king of moft sacred remembrance were thy father, for I can scarly beleue, that a sonne so dishonest should proceede from so noble a Gentleman as was that famous Prince.) I know well thou thinkest that it was an vnworthy thing, that a Widow not being of the Royal bloud should have to husband, the sonne of a Kinge, so strong and of so goodly personage, which I willingly confesse: but I would have thee a little to make me aunfwere (at the leaft wife if thou canst by reason) when I payd so great a sum of money to deliuer thee from bondage and captiuitie, where was then the nobility of thy Royall race? Where was thy force of Youth? And where thy Beauty? If not that they were closed up in a terrible Pryfon, where thou waft detayned in bitter griefe, and forrowe, and there with those naturall qualities, covered also in obscure darknesse, that compassed thee round about. The ill fauoured noyse and iangling of thy chaines, the deformity of thy Face forced for lack of light, and the stench of the infected Pryfon that prouoked sicknesse, and the forsaking of thy Frends, had quite de-
basted all these perfections wherewith now thou seemest to be so lufty. Thou thoughtest me then to be worthy, not onely of a young man of a royall bloud, but of a God, if it were possible to haue him, and so soon as thou (contrary to all hope) didst once visit the natural Countrey, like a most pestilent person without any difficulty, haste chaunged thy mynde, and neuer since thou waft deliuered, once did call into thy remembranuce how I was that Camiola, that I was theee (alone) that did remembre thee: that I was theee (alone) that had compassion on thy mishap, and that I was onely theee, who for thy health did imploy all the goods I had. I am, I am (I say) that Camiola, who by hir Money raunfomed thee out of the hands of the Capitall enimies of thine Auncetters, from Fetters, from Pryfon: and finally deliuered thee from Misery extreme, before thou were altogether settled in dispayre. I reduced thee agayne to hope, I haue resouked thee into thy Countrey, I haue brought thee into the Royal Palace, and refored thee into thy former Estate, and of a Prifoner weake, and ill fauoured, haue made the a yonge Prynce, strong, and of fayre aspect. But wherefore haue I remembred theee things, whereof thou oughtest to bee very mindefull thy selfe, and which thou art not able to deny? Sith that for so great benefits thou haft rendered me fuch thanks, as being my husband in deede, thou haft the Face to deny me mariage, already contracted by the deposition of honofit Witnesses, and approv'd by Lettres, Signed with thine owne hand. Wherefore diddest thou despise me that hath deliuered thee? Yea and if thou couldst haue slayned the Name of hir with Infamy, that was thine onely Refuge, and Defender, thou wouldst gladly haue giuen caufe to the common people, to thinke lesse than Honesty of hir. Art thou ashamed (thou Man of little Judgement) to haue to Wyfe a Wyddowe, the Daughter of a Knight? O how farre better had it ben for thee to haue bene ashamed to breake thy promisfed fayth, to haue dispiised the holy and dreadfull name of God, and to haue declared by thy curfed vnkindnes, how full fraught thou art with Vice. I doe confesse in deede that I am not of the Royall bloud: notwithstanding from the Cradle, being Trayned, and brought vp in the Company of kings Wyes, and Daughters, no great maruayle it is, if I haue
indued and put on a Royall heart and manners, that is able to get, and purchase royall Nobility: but wherefore doe I multiply so many wordes? No, no, I will be very facile, and easie in that wherein thou haste ben to me so difficult and hard by refisting the fame with all thy power. Thou haste refued heretofore to be mine, and hauing vanquished thee, to be futch, frankly of myne owne accorde, I doe graunt that thou art not. Abide (on God's name) with thy royall Nobility, neuerthelesse defiled with the spot of Infidelity. Make much of thy youthly luftineffe, and of thy tranitory beauty, and I shal be contented with my Wyddow apparell, and shal leaue the riches which God hath geuen me to Heyres more honest than thofe that might haue come of thee. An aunent thou wycked yong man, and 5th thou art coumpted to be vnworthy of me, learne with thine own experience, by what subtilty and guiles thou maiest betray other dames, suffifeth it for me to be once deceyued. And I for my parte fully determine neuer to tary longer with thee, but rather chaftly to lyue without hufband, which lyfe I deeme farre more excellent than with thy match continually to be coupled." After thefe had spoken thefe wordes, thefe departed from him, and from that time forth, it was imposible eyther by prayers, or Admonitions to caufe hir chaunge hir holy intent. But Rowland al confused, repenting himfelf to late of bys Ingratitude, blamed of ech man, his eyes fixd vpon the grounde, auoyding not onely the presence of his brethren, but of all forts of people, dayly led from that time forth, a moft miserable life, and neuer durft by reafon to demaunde hir againe to Wife, whom he had by difloyalty refued. The King and the other Barons, marueyling of the noble heart of the Lady, singularly commended hir, and exalted hir prayfes vp into the Skyes, vnceartayne neuerthelesse wherein thee was moft worthy of prayfe, eyther for that (contrary to the couetous nature of Women) the had raumfomed a yong man with fo great a Summe of Money, or else after the had deliuered him, and sentence geuen that he was hir Hufbande, the fo couragiously refued him, as an vnkinde man, vnworthy of hir company. But leaue we for a tyme, to talke of Wydowes, and let vs fee what the Captayne, and Lieute-
naunt of Nocera can alledge vpon the discourse of his cruelties, which although an ouer cruell History, yet depaynteth the success of those that apply their myndes to the Sportes of Loue, futch Loue I meane, as is wantonly placed, and directed to no good purpose, but for glutting of the Bodye's delight, which both corrupteth nature, maketh feeble the body, lewdly spendeth the time, and specially offendeth him who maketh proclamation, that Whoremongers and adultrers shal neuer Inherit his Kyngdome.
THE LORDS OF NOCERA.

THE THIRTY-THIRD NOUELL.

Great cruelties chaunced to the Lords of Nocera, for adultery by one of them committed with the Captayne's wyfe of the forte of that Citty, with an enterprize mowed by the Captaine to the Cittyzens of the fame for Rebellion, and the good and dutyfull aunfwere of them: with other pityfull euents ryfing of that notable and outragious vyce of whoredom.

The furious rage of a Husband offended for the chastity violated in his Wyfe, furpafeth all other, and ingendreth mallice agaynst the doer whatsoeuer he be. For if a Gentleman, or one of good nature, cannot abyde an other to doe him any kinde of displeaure, and mutch leffe to hurt him in his Body, how is he able to endure to haue his honour touched, fpecially in that part which is fo neere vnto him as his owne Soule? Man, and Wyfe being as it were one body and one will, wherein Men of good Judgement cannot well like the Opinion of thofe which say that the honour of a lulty and couragious perfon dependeth not vpon the fault of a foolish woman: for if that wer true which they fo lightly vaunt, I would demaund why they be fo animated and angry against them which adorne their head with braunched Hornes, the Ensignes of a Cuckolde: and truely nature hath fo well provided in that behalfe, as the very fauage Beafles doe fight, and fuffer death for fuch honest Jealouſie. Yet will I not prayfe, but rather accuse aboue al faulty men, thofe that be fo fondly Jealous, as eche thinge troubling their mindes, be afrayde of the Flyes very shadowe that buzzze about their Faces. For by payning and moleftinge themſelues with a thinge that fo little doth pleafe and content them, vntill manifeſt, and evident proofe appeare, they diſplay the folly of their minde's imperfection, and the weakesneſſe of their Fantaty. But where the fault is knowne, and the Vyce discouered, where the husband feeth himſelſe to receyue Damage in the foundeſt part of his moveable goods, reafon it is that he therein be aduifed by timely deliberation and sage foreſight, rather than with headlong fury, and raging raſhneſſe
to hazard the loss of his honour, and the ruin of his life and goods. And lyke as the sayd and fidelity of the undefiled Bed hath in all times worthily been commended and rewarded: even so he that polluteth it by Infamy, beareth the peneance of the fame. Portia the Daughter of Cato, and wife of Brutus shall be prayed for euer, for the honest and inviolable love which she bare vnto hir beloved husband, almost like to lose hir life when she heard tell of his certayne death. The pudicity of Paulina the wife of Seneca appeared also, when she layed to dy by the same kinde of death wherewith hir Husband violently was tormented by the vniust commaundement of the most cruel and horrible Emperoure Nero. But Whores and Harlottes, having honest Husbands, and well allied in Kin, and Ligneage by abandoning their bodies, doe prodigally consume their good Renome: yea but if they escape the Magistrates, or auoyde the wrath of offended husbandes for the wrong done vnto them, yet they leaue an immortality fmauder of their wicked life, and youth thereby may take example aswell to shun fuch vamelefse Women, as to followe those Dames that be Chafe, and Vertuous. Now of this contempt whych the Wyfe beareth to hir Husband, do rife very many times notorious flaunders, and fuch as are accompanied with passing cruelties: wherein the Husbande ought to moderate his heate, and calme his choler, and soberly to chaftifie the fault, for so much as exceeding wrath, and anger, doe Eclipse in man the light of reaon, and fuch rages doe make them to be semblable vnto Brute, and reaonleffe Beastes: meete it is to be angry for things done contrary to Right, and Equity, but Temperaunce, and Modefty is necessarie in all occurrentes, bee they wyth vs, or against vs. But if to refift anger in thoes matters, it be hard and difficulte, yet the greater impossibility there is in the operation, and effect of any good thinge, the greater is the glory that vanquisheth the affection and mastereth the first motion of the minde which is not so impossible to gouerne, and subdue to reasone, as many do esteeme. A wise man then cannot so farre forget his duety, as to exceede the Boundes, and Limits of reasone, and to suffer his mynde to wander from the fiege of Temperaunce, which if he doe after he hath well mingled Water in his Wyne, hee may chaunce to
finde cause of Repentaunce, and by desire to repayre his Offenfe augment his fault, finne being so prompt and ready in man, as the crime which might bee couered with certayne Justice, and coloured by some lawe or righteous cause, maketh him many tymes to fall into detestable Vice and Synne, so contrary to mildneffe and modesty, as the very Tyraunts themselues woulde abhorre futch wickedneffe. And to the ende that I do not trouble you with Allegation of infinite numbres of examples, fering to this purpoſe, ne render occasion of tediousnes for you to resolve so many bookes, I am contented for this prefent, to bring in place an Hyſtory fo ouer cruell, as the caufe was not mutch unreasonable, if duty in the one had bene considered, and rage in the other bridled and forefeene, who madly murthered and offended thofe that were nothing guilty of the Facte, that touched him so neare. And although that thofe be matters of loue, yet the Reader ought not to bee grieued nor take in evill parte, that we bee till in that Argument. For we doe not hereby goe about to erect a Schoolehouſe of Loue, or to teache Youth the wanton Toyes of the fame. But rather bryng forth thofe Examples to withdraw the pleyant, and tender Age of this our time, from the pursuite of like Follies, which may (were they not in this fort warned) ingender lyke effects that thofe our Hyſtoryes do recoumpt, and whereof you shall bee Partakers by reading the discoure that followeth. Yee must than vnderstand, that in the time that Braccio Montone, and Sforza Attendulo florished in Italy, and were the chiefest of the Italian men of warre, there were three Lords and brethren which held vnder their authority and Puiffance Foligno, Nocera, and Treuio, parcell of the Dukedome of Spoleto, who governed fo louingly their Landes together, as without diuision, they maynestayned themselues in great Eſtate, and lyued in Brotherly concorde. The name of the Eldeſt of theſe three Lordes was Nicholas, the second Cæfar, the yongeft Conrade, gentle Personages, wife and wel beloued fo well of the Noble men their Neyghbours, as alfo of the Citytzens that were vnder their Obeyſaunce, who in the ende, fhewed greater loyalty towards them, than thofe that had sworne their fayth, and had giuen Pleadges for confirmation, as yee fhal perceyue by reading what inſueth. It chauſed that the eldeſt
oftentimes repaying from Foligno to Nocera, and lodging still in the Caftell, behelde with a little to mutch wanton Eye, the Wyfe of his Lieutenaunt whych was placed there with a good number of dead payes, to Guard the Fort, and kepe vnder the Cittizens, if by chaunce (as it happeneth vpon the new erection of Estates) they attempted some new enterprife agaynst their Soueraygne Lordes. Nowe this Gentlewoman was very fayre, singularly delighting to be looked vpon: which occasioned the Lord Nicholas, by perceyuing the wantoneffe and good wyll of the Mystreffe of the Caftell, not to refufe fo good occasion, determining to profecute the injoying of hir, that was the Bird after which he hunted, whose Beauty and good grace had deeply wounded his Mind, wherin if he forgot his duety, I leaxe for al men of good judgement to confider. For me thinke that this young Lorde ought rather singularly to loue and cheryfli his liuetenaunt that faithfullye and truftily had kept his Caftell and Forte, than to prepare agaynst him fo Trayterous an Attempt, and Ambufe. And if fo bee hys sayd Lieutenaunt had bene accused of felony, misprison, or Treafon (yet to speake the truth) hee might haue deliuered the charge of his Caftell vnto an other, rather then to suborne his Wyfe to folly. And ought likewife to haue confidered that the Lieutenaunt by puttinge his truft in him, had iust caufe to complayne for Rauifhing hys Honour from hym in the Perfon of hys Wyfe, whom hee ought to haue loued wythout any affeccion to Infringe the Holy Lawe of Amitye, the breakinge whereof diſfolueth the duety of eche Seruaunt towards his Soueraygne Lord and mayfter. To be short, this blinded Louer yelding no resiflance to loue, and the foolifh conceipt which altereth the judgements of the wiseft, fuffered his fanie to roue fo farre vnto hys Appetites, as on a daie when the Lieuentenaunte was walked abroade into the Caftel to view the Souliours and deade payes (to pleasure him that fought the meanes of his displeasure) hee spake to the Gentlewoman his Wyfe in this manner: “Gentlewoman, you being wife and courteous as eche man knoweth, needefull it is not to vfe long or Rethorical Orations, for fo much as you without further supply of talk do clearely perceyue by my Looks, Sighes, and earnest Viewes, the loue that I beare you, which without comparifon nippeth my
THE LORDS OF NOCERA.

Hearte so neare as none can feel the parching paynes, that the same poore portion of me doth suffer. Wherefore hauing no great leysure to let you further understand my mynde, it may please you to shewe me so mucht Favour as I may be receyued for him, who hauing the better right of your good grace, may therewithall enjoy that secret Acquayntance, which fuch a one as I am deferveth: of whom yee shall have better experience if you please to accept him for your owne.” This mistresse Lieutenant which compted hir felfe happy to be beloued of hir Lorde, and who tooke great pleasure in that aduenture, albeit that fhee defyrde to lette hym knowe the good will that the bare vnto him, yet difemblled the matter a little, by aunswering him in this wise: “Your diseafe Sir is fodayne, if in fo little time you have felt fucht exceffe of malady: but perchance it is your heart that being ouer tender, hath lightly receyued the pricke, which no doubt will fo soone vanishe, as it hath made fo ready entry. I am very glade (Sir) that your heart is so merily disposed to daliaunce, and can finde some matter to contrive the superfluittie of tyme, the same altering the diuersitie of man’s complexion, accordingly as the condition of the hourly Planet guideth the nature of euery wight.” “It is altogether otherwise (aunswered hee) for being come hither as a master and Lord, I am become a fernaunt and slaue: and briefly to speake my minde, if you haue not pitty vpon me, the diseafe which you call fodayne, not only will take increafe, but procure the death and finall ruine of my heart.” “Ah sir,” (sayd the Gentlewoman) “your griefe is not so deeply rooted, and death so present to succeede as you affirm, ne yet so ready to gieue ouer the place, as you protest, but I fee what is the matter, you desire to laugh mee to fcorne, and your heart craueth something to solace it felle which cannot be idle, but must imploy the vacant tyme vpon some pleaunt Toyes.” “You haue touched the pricke (aunswered the Louer) for it is you in deede wherevpon my hearte doth ioy, and you are the caufe of my Laughter and passetime, for otherwise all my delights were difpleasures, and you also by denying me to be your fernaunt, shall abbreviate, and shorten my liuing dayes, who only rejoyseth for choyse of futch a mystresse.” “And bow (replied fhe)
can I be assured of that you say? The disloyalty, and infidelity of man being in these days so faste render'd, so hastily following one another, as the Shadow doth the Body, wherefoever it goeth."

"Onely experience" (sawd he) "shall make you know what I am, and shall teach you wheather my heart is any thing different from my wordes, and I dare bee bold to say, that if you vouchsafe to doe me the pleasure to receyue mee for your owne, you may make your vaunt to have a Gentleman so faithfull for your friend, as I esteeme you to be discrete, and as I desire to let you taste the effect of mine affection, by such some honest order as may be denified." "Sir" (sawd she) "it is well and aduisedly spoken of you, but yet I thinke it strange for such a Gentleman as you be, to debafe your honer to so poore a Gentlewoman, and to goe about both to dishonor me, and to put my life in pearill." "God forbid" (answer'd the Lord Nicholas) "that I be cause of any slander, and rather had I dye my selfe than minister one simple occasion whereby your fame should be brought in question. Only I doe pray you to have pitty vpon me, and by vsing your curtefie, to fatifie that which my seruice and faithfull friendship doth constrain, and binde you for the comfort of him that loueth you better than himselfe." "We will talke more thereof hereafter" (answer'd the lieutenants Wyfe) "and than will I tell you mine aduise, and what resolution shall follow the summe of your demand." "How now Gentlewoman" (sawd he) "have you the heart to leae me voyde of hope, to make me languish for the prorogation of a thing so doubtfull, as the delayes bee which loue deferreth? I humbly pray you to tell me whereunto I shal truft: to the intent that by punishing my heart for proofe of this enterprize, I may chaste all mine Eyes by reuing from them the meanes for euer more to bee that which contenteth me best, and wherein resteth my solace, leauing my minde full of defires, and my heart without final stay, vpon the greatest Pleasure that euer man could choose." The Gentlewoman would not loose a Noble man so good and perfect: whose presence already pleased hir aboue all other things, and, who voluntarily had agreed to hys request, by the onely signe of hir Gefts, and Lookes, sayde vnto him smillinge with a very good grace: "Doe not accuse my heart of lightnesse, nor
my minde of infideli		y and treason, if to pleafe and obey you, I
forget my duty, and abuse the promis made unto my Husband,
for I fwear unto you (Sir) by God, that I have more forced my
thought, and of long time haue confrayed mine appetites in
diffembling the loue that I beare you, than I haue receiued plea-
Sure, by knowing my felfe to be beloud by one agreeable to mine
affection. For which caufe you shall finde me (being but a poore
Gentlewoman) more ready to do your pleasure, and to be at your
commandement, than any other that liueth be fhee of greater
Port, and regarde than I am. And who to fatifie your request,
shal one day sacrifice that fidelity to the Jealous fury of his hus-
bond." "God defend" (fayd the young Lord) "for we shal be fo
difcrete in our doings, and fo feldome communicate, and talke
togerather, as impossible for any man to difcry the fame. But if
mithap will have it fo, and that fome ill lucke doe difcouer our
dealinges, I haue shift of wayes to colour it, and power to ftop
the mouthes of them that dare presume to clatter and haue to do
with our priuate conference." "All that I know wel inough Sir"
(fayd fhe) "but it is great simplicitie in futch thinges for a man
to truft to his authority, the forced inhibition whereof shall pro-
voke more babble, than rumor is able to fpreade for all his tattling
talk of our secret follies. Moreouer I would be very glad to do
what pleafeth you, fo the fame may be without flaender. For I
had rather dy, than any should take vs in our priuities and fami-
lier paftimes: let vs be contented with the pleasure that the eafe
of our joy may graunt, and not with futch contention as hall
offend vs, by blotting the clereneffe of our good name." Conclud-
ing then the time of their new acquayntaunce, which was the next
day at noone, when the Lieutenaunt did walke into the Citty, they
ceafed their talke for feare of his enteruiew. Who (upon his re-
tourne) doing reverence vnto his Lord, tolde him that hee knewe
where a wilde Boare did haunte, if it pleafed him to fee the pas-
time. Wherunto the Lord Nicholas fayned louingly to gieue care
(although agaynft his will) for fo mutch as hee thought the fame
Huntinge shoulde be a delay for certayne dayes to the enjoying,
(pretended and affured) of his beloved. But fhe that was fo mutch
or more epryued with the raging and intollerable fire of loyue,
speedily found means to satisfie hir lover’s fute, but not in such manner as was desired of eyther partes, wherefore they were con-
strayned to defer the rest vntill an other time. This pleasauant
beginning so allured the Lord of Nocera, as vnder the pretence of
huntinge, there was no weeke that passed, but hee came to visite
the Warrener of hys Lieutenant. And this order continuing with-
out any one little supposition of their love, they governed them-
selues wisely in pursuete thereof. And the Lord Nicholas vsed
the game and sporte of Hunting, and an infinite number of other
exercifes, as the running of the Ring, and Tennis, not so much
thereby to finde means to enjoy his Lady, as to auoyde occasi-
on of Jealousie in hir Hufband, being a very familiar vice in all Italians,
the Cloake whereof is very heauy to beare, and the diseafe troubl-
some to suftayne. But what? Like as it is hard to beguile an
Vfurer in the accoumpt of his money, for his continuall watch
ower the fame, and flumbring sleepees vpon the Bookes of his
recknings and accoumpts, so difficult it is to deceuye the heart of
a iealous man, and specially when he is affured of the griefe which
his head conceueth. Argus was neuer so cleere eyed for all his
hundred Eyes ouer Jupiter’s Lemman, as those Louers be, whose
opinions be ill affecteuer over the chastity of their Wyues. Moreouer
what Foole, or Asle is hee, who seeing such vndiscreete familiarite-
y of two Louers, the priuy gestures and demeanors without witnesse,
theyr folne walkes at vntymely houres, and sometimes theyr
embracements to, strayght and common before seruants, that would
not doubt of that which moft secretly did passe? True it is that
in England (where liberty is so honeftly obferved as being alone
or secreete conversat[ion gueth no cause of supposition) the same
migh te haue bene borne withall. But in Italy, where the Parents
themelues be for the moft part supers[ected, (if there had bene no
faute in deede committted) that familiarity of the Lord Nicholas,
with hys Lieutenant’s Wyfe was not suffrable, but exceede the
Bounds of reaon, for fo much as the Commoditie which they had
chofen for possess]ing of theyr loue, (albeit the same not suf-
pitions) animated them afterwards to frequent their familiarity and
dysporte to frankly, and wyhout discretion: which was the
cau[e that fortune (who neuer leaueth the ioyes of men wyhout
giving thereunto some great alarme,) being envious of the mutuall delightes of those two louers, made the husband to doubt of that which hee would haue dissembled, if honor could so easily be loose wythoute reproch, as bloud is shed without peryll of Lyfe, but the matter being so cleare, as the fault was euident, specially in the party which touched him so neare as hymselfe, the Lieuetenaunt before he would enterpryse any thing, and declare what he thought defired throughly to bee resolued of that whych hee sawe as it were but in a Cloude, and by reafon of hys conceyued Opynion hee dealt so warely and wisely in those affaires, and was so subtile an epiall, as one day when the louers were at theyr game, and in their moft ftraite and fecrete embraçements, he viewed them coupled with other leashe, than he would haue wifhed, and coll'd with ftraighter bands then reafon or honesty did permit. He faw with out being fene, wherein he felt a certaine eafe and contentment, for being affured of that he doubted, and purpofed to ordeyne a fowre refeflion after their delightfome banket, the simle louers ignorant by figne or coniecutur, that their enterpryfes were dyfcouered. And truely it had ben more tollerable and leffe hurteful for the Lieuetenaunte, if euue then hee had perpetrated his vengeaunce, and punyshed them for theyr wyckednesse, than to vie the Cruelty wherewith afterwarde he blotted his renoume, and foyled his hands by Bedlem rage in the innocent bloud of thoefe that were not priue to the folly, and leffe guilty of the wronge don vnto him. Now the Captain of the Caffel for al his diffimulation in couering of his grieve, and his fellony and Trefon intended againft his soueraigne Lord, which he defired not yet manifeftly to appeare, was not able any more from that time forth to speake so louingly vnto hym, nor with fuch refeect and reuerence as he did before, which caufed his Wife thus to say vnto hir Louer: "My Lord I doubt very mucht leaft my husband doth perceiue these our common practizes, and fecrete familiar dealings, and that he hath some Hammer working in his heade, by reafon of the Countenaunce, and vnecheareful enteraynment which he sheweth to your Lordhip, wherefore myne aduife is, that you retire for a certaine tyme to Poligno. In the meane space I wil marke and efpie if that his alteration be conceiued for any matter
against vs, and wherefore his wonted lookes haue put on this new alteration and chaunce. All which when I haue (by my espial and secret praftize founded) I will spedly aduertife you, to the end that you may provide for the fauegard of your faithfull and louing feruant.” The young Lord, who loued the Gentlewoman wyth al his heart, was attached with fo great gryefe, and dryuen into futch rage by hearyng those wycked Newes, as euen preffently he would haue knowne of hys Lieuetenaunte, the caufe of his dyswonted cheare. But weyghing the good aduyfe whych his woman had giuen him, paufed vpon the fame, and promyféd hir to doe what she thought best. By reafon whereof, gyyynge warnynge to his Servantes for hys departure, he caufed the Lyeuetenaunte to be called before him, vnto whome hee fayd: “Cap-tayne, I had thoughte for certayne Dayes to fporte and paffe my tyme, but hearing tell that the Duke of Camarino commeth to Foligno, to debate with vs of matters of importaunce, I am con-straigned to departe, and do pray you in the meane time to haue good regard vnto our affaires, and if any newes doe chaunce to aduertife the fame wyth all Expedytion.” “Sir” (fayd the Cap- tayne) “I am forrye that now when our paffetime of hunting myght yeilde some good recreation vnto your honour, that you doe thus forfake vs, notwithstanding fith it is your good plea- sure, we will ceafe the chafe of the wylde Bore till your retourne. In the meane time, I will make ready the Coardes and Tramelles, that vpon your comming, nothing want for the Furniture of our fport.” The Lord Nicholas, seeing his Lieuetenaunt fo pleafauntly difpofed, and fo litle bent to Choller, or jealous fantafie, was persuaded, that some other toy had rather occupied his Minde, than any fufpition betweene his Wife and hym. But the subtyll Hufband searched other meanses to be reuenged, than by kylling him alone, of whom he receyued that difhonour, and was more craftie to enterpryfe, and more hardie to execute, than the Louers were wyfe or well aduifed to preuent and wythfaunte his fleightes and pollicies. And albeit that the Wyfe (after the departure of hir Fryend) affayed to drawe from him the caufe of his altered cheare yet could he neuer learne, that hir husband had any ill opinion of their Loue. For fo many tymes as talke was moued of the
Lord Nicholas, hee exalted his prayse vp into the Heauens, and commended hym aboue all his Brethren. All whych hee dyd to beguyle the pollicies of hir, whome hee faw to blu fh, and many times chaunge Colour, when shee heard him spoken of, to whom shee bare better affection than to hir Husband, vnto whom (in very dede) she did owe the faith and integritie of hir body. This was the very toile which he had laid to intrap those amorous persons and purposed to rid the world of them by that meanes, to remoue from before his eyes, the flame of a Cuckolde’s title, and to reuenge the injuriie don to his reputation. The mistrefse of the Castel feeyng that hir husband (as shee thought) by no meanes did vnderstande hir follies, defired to continue the pleazure, which either of them defired, and which made the third to die of phrenesie, wrote to the Lord Nicholas, the letter that followeth.

“My Lord, the feare I had, that my husband shoulde perceyue our loue, caused me to intreat you certaine dayes paft, to discontinue for a time, the frequention of your owne house, whereby I am not little agrieued, that contrary to my wil, I am defraued of your preffence, which is far more pleasaunt vnto me, than my husband’s flatteries, who ceafleth not contynually to talke of the honest behaiour, and commendable qualitie that be in you, and is sorry for your departure, bicause he feareth that you mislyke youre entertainement, whych shoulde be (fayth he) fo gryeuous and noy-some vnto him, as death it selfe. Wherefore, I pray you sir, if it be poiffible, and that your affayres doe suffer you, to come hither to the ende I may enjoy your amayable preffence, and vfe the Liberty that our good hap hath prepared, through the litle iealoufe of my husband your Lieuentenaunt: who I suppofe before it be long wil intreat you, fo great is his desire to make you passe time of hunting within your owne Land and territory. Fayle not then to come I befeech you, and we will so well confider the gouernment of our affaires, as the best fighted shal not once defyre the leaft suspicion thereof, recommending my selfe moft humbly (after the best maner I can) to your good Lordshipp.”

This Letter was deliuered to a Lackey to beare to the Lord Nicholas, and not so priuily done, but the Lieuentenaunt immediately espied the deceit which the sooner was disciphred, for so much as he
dayely lay in wayte to find the meanes to revenge the wrong done vnto him, of purpose to beate the iron so long as it was hotte, and to execute hys purpoe before his Wife tooke heede, and felte the en-
deuor of his Enterprye. And bicause that shee had assayed by diuers
wayes to found his heart, and fele whether he had conceiued dis-
pleasure against the Lord hir louer, the Day after wherein she had
wrytten to hir friend, hee sent one of his Men in pofte to the three
Lorde, to requyre them to come the nexte Day to see the pastime
of the fayreft and greatest wild Bore, that long tyme was bred in
the Forrefts adiowing vnto Nocera, Albeit that the Countrey was
fayre for courfinge, and that dyuers tymes many fayre Bores haue
ben encountred there. But it was not for this, that he had framed
his errand, but to trap in one toyle and snare the thre brethren,
whom he determined to sacrifie to the aultor of his vengeance,
for the expiation of theyr elder brother's trespasse, and for soyl-
ing the Nuptial bed of his feruaunt. He was the wylye Bore
whome he meant to strike, hee was the pray of his vnfaciable and
cruell Appetite. If the fault had ben generall of all three togethers,
he had had some reafon to make them passe the bracke of one
equall fortune, and to tangle them within one net, both to prevent
thereby (as he thought) his further hurt, and to chaflife their
leade behauiour. For many tymes (as lamentable experience
teacheth) Noble men for the onely respeete of their Nobility, make
no Confcience to doe wrong to the honor of them, whose reputation
and honesty, they ought so wel to regard as their owne.
Herein offended the good Prynce of the Iewes Danid, when to vfe his Befabe without fuspition, he caufed innocent Vrias to
bee flyayne, in lieu of recompence for his good seruice, and diligent
execution of his behiefs. The children of the proud Romane
king Tarquinius, did herein greatly abuse them selues, when they
violated that noble Gentlewoman Lucrece, whom al histories do so
much remembre, and whose chaflity, al famous writers do com-
mend. Vppon futch as they be, vengeance ought to be don, and
not to defile the hands in the bloud of innocents, as the Parents and
Kinfemen of deade Lucrece did at Rome, and this Lieutenaunt at
Nocera, vppon the brethren of him that had sent him into Corn-
wal, without paffing ouer the Seas. But what? Auger proceding
of futch wronge, furmounteth al phrenesie, and exceedeth al the bounds of reafon, and man is so denyed of Wyts, by seeing the blot of defamation, to lyght vpon him, as he seeketh al meanes to hurt and dipleafe him that polluteth his renome. Al the race of the Tarquines for like fadt were banyfhed Rome, for the onely brute whereof, the husband of the faire rauifhed wife, was conffrayned to avoid the Place of his nativity. Paris alone violated the body of Menelaus, the Lacedemonian kyng, but for reuenge of the rauifhed Greeke, not onely the glory and Rycheffe of stately Troy, but alfo the moft parte of Asia and Europa, was ouertourned and defaced, if credyte may be gyuen to the recordes of the Auncyent. So in this fadt of the Lieutenaunt, the Lord Nicholas alone, had polluteth his bed, but the reuenge of the cruel man extended further, and his fury raged fo farre, as the guiltlffe were in greate Daunger to beare the penaunce, which fhall be well perceived by the difcourfe that foloweth. The Captaine then hauing fent his meffage, and beyng sure of his intent (no leffe than if he already had the brethren within his hold, vpon the point to couple them together with his wife, to fend them all in pilgrimage to vifite the faithfull forte, that blafon their loues in an other worlde, with Dydo, Phyllis, and futch like, that more for difpayre than loue, bee past the flraiftes of death) caufed to be called before him in a secrete place, al the fouldiers of the Fort, and futch as with whom he was sure to preuayle, to whom not without fheading forth fome teares, in heauie Countenaunce, he fpake in this maner: "My Companions and Fryends, I doubt not but yee bee abafhed to see me wrapt in fo heauy plyght, and appeare in this forme before you (that is to fay) bewept, heauy, panting with fighes, and all contrary to my cuftome, in other flate and maner, than my Courage and degree requyre. But when ye fhall vnderfand the caufe I am assured that the caufe whych feemeth ftraunge to you, fhall be thought iuft and ryght and fo will perfourme the thing wherein I fhall employe you. Ye knowe that the firft point that a Gentleman ought to regarde, conffiteth not onely in repelling the injury done vnto the body, but rather it behoueth that the fight begin for the defense of his honor, which is a thinge that proceedeth from the Minde, and reforfteth to the
Body, as the Instrument to worke that which the spyryte appoindeth. Now it is honour, for conservacion whereof, an honest man and one of good Courage feareth not to put hymselfe in all perill and daunger of death and losse of goodes, referring himselfe also to the guarde of that whych toucheth as it were owne reputeation. In futch wyfe as if a good Captaine do suffer hys foullier to be a wycked man, a Robber, a Murderer, and an exacter, he beareth the note of dyshonor albeit in all his doings he gouerneth his estate after the rule of honesty, and doth nothing that is vnworthy his vocation. But what? he being a head vnited to futch members, if the partes of that vnited thing be corrupt and naught, the head must needs bear the blot of the fault before referred to the whole Body. Alas (sayd he sifting) what parte is more neare, and dearer to Man, than that which is giuen vnto him for a Pledge and Comfort duryng his Life, and which is conioyned to be bone of his bone, and fleshe of his fleshe, to breath forth one Mynde, and to think with one heart and equall wil. It is of the Wyfe that I speake, who being the moytie of hir husband, ye ought not to mufe if I say, that the honoure of the one is the rest of the other, and the one infamous and wycked, the other feeleth the troubles of futch mischife, and the Wyfe being carelesse of hir honour, the husband's reputation is defiled, and is not worthy of prayse, if he suffer futch shame vn-reuenged: I muft (Companions and good friends) here dyfcover that whych my heart would faine kepe secrete, if it were possiblle, and muft reheare a thing vnto you, which so fone as my Mouth would faine kepe clofe, the Minde affayeth to force the ouerture. And loth I am to do it, were it not that I make so good accompt of you, as ye being tied to me with an vnseparable Amity, will yeld me your comfort and Ayde against him that hath done mee this Villany, futch as if I be not reuenged vpon, needes muft I be the Executioner of that vengeance vpon my selfe, that I am loth to lyue in this dishonor, whych all the dayes of my life (without due vltion) like a Worne wyll torment and gnaw my conscience. Wherefore before I goe any further, I woulde knowe whether I myght so well trust your aide and succour in this my businesse, as in all others I am affured you would not leaue mee so long as
any breath of life remained in you. For without such assurance, I do not purpose to let you know the pricking nails that pierceth my heart, nor the gryefe that grieveth me so neere, as by uttering it without hope of help I shall open the Gate to death, and dye without reliefe of my desyre, by punishing him, of whome I haue receyued an injury more bloudy than any man can doe."

The Souldiers whych loued the Captaine as theyr owne Lyfe, were forry to see him in such estate, and greater was theyr dolour to heare wordes that tended to nothing elxe but to fury, vengeance, and murder of hymselfe. Wherefore all wyth one accord Syriales theyr helpe and mayne force towards and against all men for the byngyng to paife of that whych hee dyd meane to require. The Lieutenaunt affured of his Men conceyued heart and Courage, and continuing his Oration and purpose, determyned the slaughter and outthrowe of thre Trinicien Brethren, (for that was the surname of the Lordes of Foligno,) who pursued his Oration in this manner: "Know ye then (my Companions and good Friends) that it is my Wife, by whome I haue indured the hurt and losse of myne honour, and she is the party touched, and I am he that am most offended. And to the ende that I do not hold you longer in suspence, and the party be concealed from you, whych hath don me thys Outrage: ye shall vnderstand that Nicholas Trinicio, the elder of the three Lordes of Folingno and Nocera, is he, that against all ryght and equity hath suborned the Wife of his Lieutenaut, and foyled the Bed of him, whereof he ought to haue ben the defender and the very bulwarke of his reputation. It is of hym my good Fryends, and of his that I meane to take such Vengeance, as eternall memory shall display the same to all posterity: and neuer Lord shal dare to doe a like wrong to mine, without remembrance what his duety is, which shall teach hym how to abuse the honest service of a Gentleman that is one of his owne trayne. It resteth in you both to holde vp your hand, and keepe your promife, to the end that the Lord Nicholas, deceiuyng and mocking me, may not truft and put affiance in your force, vnto whych I heartily do recommend my seife." The Souldiers moued and incited with the wickednesse of the yer Lord and with the wrong
done to him, of whom they receyued wages, fware agayne to ferne his turne in any exploit he went about, and requyred him to be assured, that the, Trinicien Brethren should be ouerthrowne, and suffer deferedu penance, if they might lay hands vnpon them, and therefore willed him to feke meanes to allure them thither, that they might be dispatcht. The Lieuetsenaunt at these words rening a chearefull Countenaunce, and shewing himself very ioyfull for futch successe after he had thanked his Souldyers, and very louingly imbraced the chiefest of them, revealed hys deuised pollicy, and hoped shortly to have them at his commaundement within the Fort, alleaging that he had dispatcht two Messengers vnvo thome, and that his wife also priuily had sent hir page: vnvo whom he purposed to gyue fo good a recompenfe, as neuer more the should plant his hornes fo hygh, vnder a colour of gentle entertainement of hir ribauld and Friend. They were scarce re-folued vpon this intent, but newes were brought him, that the next day morning, the three lords accompanied with other nobility would come to Nocera, to hunt that huge wylde Bore, whereof the Lieutenant had made fo greate auant. These newes did not greatly please the Captaine, for fo mutch as he feared, that his purpose could not (conueniently) be brought to paffe, if the company were fo great. But when he considered that the Lords alone, shoulodge within the Fort, he was of good cheare again, and staied vpon his first intent. The Triniciens the next day after came very late, bicaufe the Lord Berardo of Verano duke of Camerino, defired to be one, and also the two brethren taried for Conrade, who was at a mariage, and could not affist the Tragedie that was played at Nocera, to his great hap and profit. So this troupe came to Nocera late, and hauing supped in the City, the Lord Nicholas, and the Duke of Camerino went to Bed in the Fort, Cæsar the brother of Trinicio tarying behind with the Trayne, to lodge in the city. Stay here a while (ye Gentlemen) ye I say, that pursue the secrete leths of loue, neuer put any great trust in fortune, which feldome kepeth hir promise with you. Ye had neede therfore to take goode heede, leaft ye be furpryfed in the place, wher priuily you giue the assault, and in the acte
wherein ye desire the assistence of none. See the barbarous cruelty of a Lieutenant, which loued rather to kill his corriual in his cold bloud, than otherwise to be reuenged, when he saw him a bed with his Wife, purposely that the example of his fury myght be the better knowne, and the secret scander more euident, from the roote whereof did spryng an infinite number of Murders and mischiefs. About midnight then, when all things were at reft vnder the darke silence of the nyght, the Lieutenant came to the Chamber of the Lord Nicholas, accompanied with the moft part of the Watch, and hauyng stopty vp the yeoman of hys Chaumber, hee fo dressed the Companion of hys Bedde, as for the fift profe of his courtesie, he caufed hys Membres and priuy partes to be cut of, faying vnto him with cruell disdayne: "Thou fhalt not henceforth (wycked wretch) weld this launce into the reft, thereby to batter the honour of an honefster man than thy felf." Then lanching his fiomacke with a piercing blade, he tare the heart out of his belly, faying: "Is this the trayterous Heart that hath framed the plot and denyed the enterprize of my shame, to make this infamous villaine without Life, and his renoume without prayfe?" And not content with this Cruelty, he wreakt the like vpon the remnaunt of his body, that fometimes the runnagate Medea did vpon hir innocent brother, to faue the Lyfe of hir felle, and of hir friend Iafon. For he cut him into an hundred thoufand pieces, gyuing to every Membre of the poore murded foule hir word of mockery and conteempt. Was it not fufficient for a tirannous husband to be reuenged of hys shame, and to kill the party which had defamed him, without vffing fo furious Anotamie vpon a dead body, and wherein there was no longer feeling? But what? Ire beynge wythout meaure, and anger wythout Brydle or reafon, it is not to be wondred, if in al his actes the Captayne ouerpasft the iuft meaure of vengeance. Many would thinke the committed murder vpon Nicholas, to be good and iuft: but the Iustice of an offenfe, ought not fo longe time to be conceyled, but rather to make him feele the imart at the very tyme the deed is done, to the ende that the nypping gryefe of pelifent treafon wrought againft the betrayed party, be not obscured and hydden by fodayne rage and lacke of
reason rising in the minds first motions, and thereby also the fault of the guilty, by his indiscretion couered: otherwyse there is nothyng that can colour futh vice. For the law indifferently doth punish every man, that without the Magiftrates order taketh authority to venge his own wrong. But come we againe vnto our purpose. The Captayne all imbrued in bloude, entred the Chaumber of the Duke of Camerino, whom with al the rest of the strangers that were within the Castle, hee lodged (without speakyng any worde) in a deepe and obscure pryfon. Beholde, what rest they tooke that nyghte, whych were come to hunt the Wylde Boare. For wythout trauaylyng farre, they were intrapped in the subtil engines and Nettes of the furious Lieuetenaunte, who when the morning bedecked with hir vermillion cleare began to shewe hir selfe, when all the Hunters dyd put them selues in readynesse, and coupled vp theyr Dogges to marche into the Fielde, beholde, one of the Captayne's cruell Ministers wente into the City, to cause the Lord Cæfar to come and speake with his brother Nicholas, and intreated him not to tarry, for that he and the Duke were dysposed to shewe hym some diport. Cæfar whych never suspected the leaft of these chaunced murders, defired not to be prayed agayne, but made haste to the Butcherie like a lamb, and in the company of the Wolues themselues that were in readynesse to kyll hym. He was no sooner in the Court of the Castle, but seuen or eyght Varlets apprehended hym and hys Men, and carryed hym into the Chaumber (bound lyke a thefe) wherein the Membres of hys Myferable Brother were cut of and difpered, whose corpe was pitifully gored and arrayed in Bloud. If Cæfar were abashed to see himself bound and taken pryfoner he was more aftsone when he perceyued a body fo dysmembred, and which as yet he knewe not. "Alas," (sayd he) "what fighte is this? Is thys the bore whych thou haft caused vs to come hyther to hunt within our very Fort?" The Captayne rising vp, al imbrued wyth bloude, whose face and voyce promisfed nothing but Murder to the miserable young Gentleman sayd: "See Cæfar, the Body of thine adulterous brother Nicholas, that infamous whoremonger, and marke if this be not his head: I woulde to God that Conrade were here also that ye might all three
be placed at this sumptuous Banquet, which I have prepared for you. I swears unto thee then, that this should be the last day of all the Trinicien race, and the end of your Tirannies and wicked Life. But thy I cannot get the effect of that which my heart defireth, my mind shall take repast in the triumph which Fortune hath ordained. Curfied be the marriage and Wedding at Trevio, that hath hyndred me of an occasion so apte, and of the means to dispatch a matter of such importance as is the overthrow of so many tirants. Cæsar at this sentence stode so still, as whilom dyd the wyfe of Loth, by feigning the City on fire, and confume into ashes: by the sight whereof she was converted into a stone of Salt. For when he saw that bloody Pageant, and knew that it was his brother Nicholas, pity and feare doo stop the pipes of his speach, as without complayning himself or framing one word, he suffered his throte to be cut by the barbarous captaine, who threw him halfe dead vpon the corps of his brother, that the bloud of either of them might cry vp to the heauens for so loud vengeance as that of Abel dyd, being slain by the treason of his nearest brother. Beholde the dreadful begynnings of a heart rapt in fury, and of the mind of him that not resfiting his fond affections, executed the terrible praftizes of his owne braine, and preferring his fantasie above reason, deuiled such ruine and decay, as by these Examples the Posteritye shall have good caufe to wonder. The lyke Cruelty vfed Tiphon towards his brother Ofyris by chopping his body in xxvi. gobbets, whereby ensued the decay of him and his, by Orus whome some doe surname Apollo. And troweth the Captayne to loke for lesse mercy of the Brother of the other twayne that were murdered and of the Dukes kindred whome he kept Prysoner? But he was so blynded with Fury, and it may be, led by ambition and defyre to be made Lord of Nocera, that he was not contented to venge his shame on hym whych had offended, but asfayed to Murder and extinguysh all the Trinicien bloud: the inheritaunce only remaining in them. And to come to the end of his Enterprize, this Italian Nero, not content wyth these so many slaughters, but thereunto adioyned a new Treason asfaying to win the Citizens of Nocera to moue rebellion agaynst their Lord, caufing them to assemble before the Forte, vnto whome
vpon the Walles, he vfed this or like Oration: "I haue hitherto (my Maifters) diſſembled the lyttle pleſure that my heart hath felt to see fo many true and faithful Citizens, ſubieſte vn더 the wyll and unbrydeled luftes of two or three Tyraunts: who hauing gotten Power and authority over vs, more through our owne folly and cowardye, than by valianſe, vertue and iuſtice, either in them or thofe which haue diſpoyled this countrey of their auncient liberty. I will not deny but pryncipalities of longe entraunce and Foundation deryued by fueceffion of inhereſtaunce, haue had some ſpyce and kynde of Equity, and that Lordes of good lyſe and converſation ought to be obeyed, defended and honored. But where inuafion and feaſure is againſt ryght, where the people is ſpoyled and Lawes violated, it is no conſcience to diſſobey and aboliſh ſuch monſters of nature. The Romanes in the prime age of their Com‐mon Wealth ful wel declared the fame, when they banifhed out of their City that proud race of the Tirant Tarquines, and when they went about to exterminate al the rootes of cruelty and tyrannical power. Our Neighbors the Sicillians once dyd the like vnder the conduct of Dion, againſt the diſruled fury and wilful cruelty of Denis the tyrant of Syracusa, and the Atheniens againſt the Chyl‐dren of Phiftratus. And ye that be forted from the ſtocke of thofe Samnites, which in times paſt fo long heald vp their Heads against the Romane force, will ye be fo very cowardes and weake hearted for reſpect of the title of your feigniorie as ye dare not with me to attempt a valiant enterprife for reducing your felues into libertye, and to expell that vermyne broode of Tyraunts which swarme through out the whole regyon of Italy. Wyll yee bee fo‐mated and dumped, as the shadow alone of a fond and incon‐ſtant young man, ſhall holde your Noſe to the Grindſtone, and drawe you at his luſt lyke an Oxe into the ſtall? I feare that if ye faw your Wifes and Daughters haled to the paffetyme and plea‐ſure of theſe Tirantus, to glute the whoredome of thofe ſtynecking Goate Bucks, more Lecherous and filthy than the ſenfeles ſpar‐rowes: I feare (I say) that ye durſt not make one Sygne for demonstrayon of your Wrath and dyſpleaſure. No, no (my maſtery of Noce,;) it is hughe tyme to cutte of the Hydra hyſ heads, and to ſtrangle hym wythin hyſ Caue. The tyme is come
(I say) wherein it behoueth you to shewe your selues lyke Men, and no longer to dissemble the cafe that toucheth you so neare. Confyder whether it bee good to follow myne aduyse, to reposse the thyng whych is your owne, (that is) the Freedome wherein your Auncestres glorysied so mutch, and for which they feared not to hazarde theyr Goodes and Lyues. It wyll come good cheape, if you be ruled by me, it wyll redound to your treble Fame, if lyke Men ye follow my aduyse, whych I hope to let you shortly fee wythoute any great peryll or loss of your Citizens Bloud. I haue felt the effect of the Trinicic Tirannye, and the rigor of their vnrighteous government, which hauing begonne in me, they will not faile, if they be not chaftifed in time, to extend on you alfo, whome they deeme to be their flues. In lyke manner I haue first begun to repreffe their boldnesse, and to wythfande their lead behauior: yea and if you Mynde to vnderstande rught from wrong, an eafe matter it will be to perfourme the reft, the time beinge so commodious, and the discouery of the thinge whereof I haue made you so priuy, so convenient. And know ye, that for the exploit of mine intent, and to bryng you agayne altogether in Liberty, I haue taken the two Lords Nicholas and Caesar prysonners, attending till fortune do bryng to me the third, to pay him with like money and equall guerdon, that not onely you may bee free and setled in your auncient priuiledge, but my heart alfo fatified of the wrong which I haue receiued by their iniuice. Beleue (Maisters) that the thing whych I haue done: was not wythoute open inuiy receiued, as by keepynge it clofe I burft, and by telling the fame I am afhamed. I wil kepe it secrete, notwithstanding, and thal pray you to take heed into your selues, that by vniuersal confent, the mishiefe may be preuented. Deuise what anfwer you wyll make me, to the intent that I by following your aduyse, may alfo be refolued vpon that I haue to do, without Preiudice but to them to whome the cafe doth chyefly appertayne." Duryng al this discouerfe, the wycked Captayne kept clofe the Murder which hee had committed, to drawe the Worme out of the Nocerines Nose, and to see of what Mynde they were, that vpon the intelligence thereof, he myght woorke and follow the tyme accordingly. Hee that had seene the Cytzens of Nocera after that sedyti-
ous Oration, would have thought that he had heard a murmur of Bees, when issuing forth their Hues, they light amidst a pleasant Herber, adorned and beautified with divers coloured floures. For the people flocked and assembled together, and began to grudge at the imprisonment of their Lord, and the treason committed by the Lieutenants, thinking it very strange that he which was a household servant durst be so bold to seafe on those to whom he dyd owe all honour and Reuerence. And do assure you that if he had been below, as he was vpon the rampire of the Walles, they had torne him into so many pieces, as he had made Gobbets of the Lord Nicholas body. But feing that they could not take him, they went about to secke the deliuerance of them, whom they thought to be yet alive: and one of the chiefe of the City in the Name of them all shortly and bryefly, aunswered him thus: “If malice did not well discover it selfe in the fugred and Traiterous composition of thy woordes (O Captayne) it were easie enough for an inconstant People (bent to change, and desirous of innovations,) to heare and do that, which futch a traitor and flatterer as thou art dost propone: but we hauing til now indured nothing of the Triniciens that fauoreth of Tiranny, cruelty, or exceffe, we were no leffe to be accused of felony, than thou art guilty of Rebels cryme, by seafyng vpon the Persons of thy Lords, if we shoulde yelde credyt to thy Serpents hissing, or lend aide to thy traiterous practife, thou goest about against them who innoblyng thee are trysterously berieued of that which concerned their reputation and greatnesse. We be an honest People and faithfull Subjects. We wyll not be both Wicked and vnhappy at once, and without cause expell our heads out of our common Wealth. No though they shoulde perpetrate the mischieves which thou hast alleadged. Vpon futch Newelties and strange facts we shal take newe aduise and Councell. To be short, thou shalt pleasure vs to fet our Lordes at Lyberty, and thou like a wyfe man shalt doe thy duety, and fatify a People which easily can not endure that a subjecte doe wrong to those to whom he oweth obedience. And feare not to receive any euill of them, nor yet to seele anoyauce, for we wyll take vpon vs by honest meanes to craue pardon for thy fault how haynous so euer it be. But if thou continue thine
offence, be sure that the Lord Conrade shall be aduartised, and with all our power we shall succour him by force, to let thee feel the Nature of Treason, and what reward is incydent to the practizers of the same." The Captaine albeit he was abashed with that aunfwer, and saw that it would not be wel wyth him if he did not proud spedy remedy and order for his affayres, awell for the comming of the Lord Conrade, as of the brother of the Duke Camerino, told the Citizens that within three or foure dayes he would give them a resolute aunfwer, and so it might be, yelde vnto theyrr wylls, and delyuer them whom he had in holde. Thys gentle aunfwer were dyd nothyng stay the Citizens for the accomplishing of that which they thought best to do, knowing also that the gallant had not commenced that Tragedy, but for other toyes whych his vngracious head had framed for a further intended Mychief, for which cause they assembled their Councell, and concluded that one shold ryde in poffe to the Lord Conrade, (the third and remnaunt of the Brethren,) that hee myghte come to take order for the delyuerance of Nicholas and Cæfar whom they thought he had refereued still aluye in Captiuity. The Nocerines shewed this curtesie (not but that they woule gladly haue bene at lyberty, if the way had bene better troden,) awell for the lyttle trust they repofed in the Captayne, who they thoughte would be no more gentle and faithfull, than he shewed himselfe to be loyall to his Maisters, and for that Conrade was well beloved of the Lordes his Neighbors, and spacially of the impryfoned Duke and his Brother Braccio Montone, who had the Italian men of Warre at his pleasure, and that the Noble men woulde afflifie him wyth all their power. Wherefore they confidered that theyr fairest and best way, for avoiding of factions, was to kepe themselues trufty and true, and by not hearkening to a Traitor, to bynd their soueraigne Lord with futch duety and obedience, as the vnkindest man of the world would confesse and acknowledg for the consequence of a matter of futch importance. The feditious captaine on the other side, void of hope, and in greater rage than hee was before, perffited in hys folly, not without foresseeing howe hee myghte faue himselfe, which hee had politikely brought to passe, if God had not shortened his waye, by payment of V fury
for his Wickednesse, and by very diligence of them in whom he reposed his trust, the manner and howe, immedeately doeth follow. So soone as he had gaze ouer the Councell of the Citizens and a lyttle bethought him what he had to do, he called before him two yong Men, whom aboue al others he trusted best. To thes yong men he deliuered all his Gold, Syluer and Jewels, that they mighte conveye the fame out of the jurisdiction of his Lords, to the intent that when he saw hymself in daunger, he might retorne to the place where thosse gallants had before carrierd his furniture, and mountinge them vpon two good steedes, he let them forth at the Poferne gate, praying them so soone as they could to retournge aduerterfement of their abode, and that spedily he would send after them his Chyldren and the rest of his moneables, tellyng them that he specially committed his Lyfe and goodes into their hands, and that in time and place he would acknowledg the Benefite don vnto him in that difterfe. The two that were thus put in trauft for favegard of his thyngs, promifed vnto him Golden Hilles and Miracles: but so soone as they had loft the fght of theym maifter, they deuifed another complotte and determined to breake faith to him, which was forsworne, and who made no conscience not onely to reuolt, but also cruellly to kill his foueraigne Lordes. They thought it better to ryde to Treuio, to tell the Lord Conrade the pitifull end of his brethren, and the imprifonment of the Duke of Camerino, than to seeke rest for him, whom God permitted not to be fained, for his heinous sinne already committed, and for that which he mente to do vpon his Wyfe. For all the diligence that the Nocerines had made, yet were the Lienetenaunte's Men at Treuio before them, and hauyng filled the Eares of Conrade with thosse heauy Newes, and his Eyes with Teares, his Mynde with forrow, and Spyrite with defyre to be reuenged, and as Conrade was about to mount on horfe backe wyth the Trayne hee had, the Citizens were arryued to desclore the Impryfonment of his brethren. To whome Conrade made aunswere: "I would to God (my friends) that the tirant had ben contented with the little crueltie wherof you speake, for then I would find the means to agree the parties vpon the knowledge of their variance. But (alas) his malice hath paffed further, and hath beaftly flain my brethren: but I swear
by the almighty God, that if he give me life, I wil take futch, and so cruel vengeaunce on him, as he shall be a Glasfe to all his lyke, for punishment of a fault so horrible. Depart my frends, depart and get you home, dispose your watch and gard about the Castell, that the traitor do not escape: and assure your selues that this your loue shall never be forgotten, and you shall haue of me not a Tirant as he maliciously hath protested, but rather futch a Lord, and better alfo, than hytherto ye haue me proued." If Conrade had not ben pressed with beauinesse, he had chaunted goodly Songes againft the Treason of the Lieuetenaunt, and would haue accused his Brother of indifferention, for trusting him, whose wyhe hee had abused, and wel did know that he espyed the same. But what? The buiinesse requyred other things than Words: and extreme folly it is to nippe the Dead with taunts, or with vayne words to absue the absent, speciall where vltion and reuenge is easie, and the means manifest to chaufse the temerity of futch, and to be acquited of the wrong done vnto him that cannot do it hymselfe. Conrade then toke his way to Tuderto, where then remained the Lord Braccio, and thereof was Lord and Gouernour, and had alfo vnder his gouernement Perugia, and many other Cityes of the Romane Church, and who wyth the dignity of the great Conftable of Naples, was alfo Prynce of Capua, to him the Trinicien Brother, all be spent wyth Teares and transported wyth choller and griefe, came to demaunde succor for reuenge of the Lieuetenaunt's trefpasse, sayyng: "For what affurance (my Lord) can Prynces and great Lordes hope henceforth, when their very feruaunts shall ryse, and by constraining their Maisters, make assay to vsrup their seigniories wherein they haue no title or interef? Is this a reuenge of wrong, in steede of one to kill twaine, and yet to wifhe for the third to dispatch the World of our race? Is this to pursue his ennemy, to seecke to catch hym in trappe, whych knoweth nothing of the quarrell, and to make hym to suffer the payne? My two Brethren be dead, our Cousin Germaine the Duke is in pryfon, I am heere confortlesse, all sad and pensife before you, whome lykewyse this matter toucheth, although not so near as it doeth me, but yet with lyke dishonor. Let vs go (my Lorde) let vs goe I befeech you to visite our good hofte that so rudely in-
treateth his Ghosts which come to visite him, and let vs beare him a reward, that he may taffe of our comming, let vs goe before hee faue himselfe, that with little traual ye and leffe harme to an other the ribauld may be punished, who by his example if he longer liue, may increase courage both in Seruants to disobey, and in Subiects to rebell, without conscience, agaynft their heads, and gouerners? It is a case of very great importaunce, and which ought to be followed with all rigor and crueltie. And he ought neuer to bee supported, comforted or sauored, which shal by any meanes attempt to reuolt or arme himselfe agaynft his Prince, or shal conftrayne him or hir that is his Soueraygne Lord, or Mis-treff. Is not a Prynce constituted of God to be obeyed, loued, and cherished of his Subiects? Is it not in him to make and ordaine lawes, futch as shalbe thought needfull and necessaie for Com-mon wealth? Ought not he then to be obeyed of his subiectes and vassals? Ought they then to teach the head, and command the chiefest Member of their body? I do remember a tale (my Lord) recited by Menenius Agrippa that wyfe, and Notable Romayne, who going about to reconcile the commons with the Senate, alleaged a fit and conuenable example. In time past (quod he) when the partes of Mankinde were at variaunce, and every mem-ber would be a Lord generally confpiring, grudging and alleaging how by their great traual ye, paynes, and carefull minifterie, they provided all furniture, and mayntenance for the belly, and that he like a sluggishe Beast floode still, and enjoyed futch pleasures as were geuen him, in this murmure and mutine, al they agreed that the hands should not minifter, the Mouth should not feede, the Teeth should not make it seruiceable, the Feee should not traual ye, nor Heade deuife to get the fame: and whyles every of them did forfake their seruice and obedience, the belly grew fo thin, and the Members so weake and feeble, as the whole body was brought to extreme decay, and ruine, whereby (fayd Agrippa) it appeareth that the seruice due vnto the Belly (as the chiefe portion of man) by the other Members is moft necessary, the obeying and nurffing of whom doth infilt force and vigor into the other parts through which we doe liue, and bee refreshed, and the fame disgefted and dispierfed into the vaynes,
and vitall powers ingendreth mature and fine bloud, and mayntaineth the whole state of the body, in comely forme and order. By which trim comparison, applied to ciuile warre was deflected and mollified the stout corage and attempts of the multitude. Euen so agreing with Agrippa, if the Members grudge, and disobey against their chiefe, the state must grow to ruine. To be short, in certaine haps a Trayter may be cheerished, and that hath falsified his first fayth: but treason and periury euermore be detested as vices execrable. In this deede neyther the thing, nor yet the doer hath any colour of excufe, the trefpaſfe and caufe for which it is don being considered. Suffiſeth it Sir, for so mutch as there is neyther time nor caufe of further difcourse, what neede we to decide the matter, whych of it felfe is evident? Beholde mee heere a poore Trinician Brother without brethren, iovelleſſe without a Fort at Nocera. On the other part confider the Duke of Camerino in great diftreffe and daunger, to paſſe that trait of death my Brethren did. Let vs goe (I pray you) to deliuer the Captiue, and by reuenging these offenses and murders, to settle my Citty in former State, and freedome, which the villayne goeth about to take from me, by encouraginge my Subiefts to revolt and enter armes, thereby to expel ourhouſe from the Title of the fame." As Conrade fpake these woords, and wyth great grauity, and constancy pronouncing sundry tokens of forrow, the Conſtable of Naples, wroth beyond measure for these vnpleaſant newes, and full of griefe and choller against the trayterous Lieute- naunt, fpoke in the hearing of them all, that he would neuer reſt one good sleepe vntill that quarell were auenged, and had quited the outrage done to the Lord Conrade, and the wrong which he felt in him for the imprizonment of the Duke of Camerino. So he concluded, and the Souldiours were assembeld thorough out all the parts of the Conſtable's Lands, vpon the ende of the weeke to march againſt the Fort of Nocera, the Cittizens whereof had layd diligent Scout, and watch for the escape of the Captayne, who without baſhfulneſſe determined with his men to defend the same and to proue fortune, making himſelfe beleeue that his quarell was good, and caufe iuft to withstand them that shoulde have the heart to come to affayle him. The Conſtable in the mean time

THE LORDS OF NOCERA.
fent a Trumpet to Nocera to summon the Captaine to surrender, and to tell the cause of his revolt, and at whose provocation hee had committed so detestable a Treason. The Captaine well assured and boldned in his Wyckednesse, answered that he was not so well fortified to make a surrender so good cheape, and for so small a pryce to forgo his honor and reputation: and furthermore, that his wit was not so slender, but hee durft deuife and attempt such a matter without the counsel of any other, and that all the deede and deuifes pasted till that time, were of his owne invention. And to be enen with the wrong done to his honor by the Lord Nicholas Trinicio, for the violation of his Wifes Chastity, he had committed the Murders (tolde to Braccio) beyng angry, that all the Tirannous race was not in his hand to fpyll, to the end he mighte deliuer his Countrey, and put the Citizens in Liberty, albeit that fondly they had refuued the fame as vnworthy of such a Benefite, and well defered that the Tyrants should take them at theyr pleasure, and make them also theyr common slaues and Drudges. The Trumpet warned hym also to render to hym the Duke, bicause he was guyltlesse of the facte, whych the Captayne regarded so little as he did the first demaundes, whych was the cause (the Company being arriued at Nocera, and the Conftable vnderftandyng the litle accompte the Caftell Gentleman made of his summons) that the battre the very day of theyr arriuall was laid and shott against the place with such thunder and dreadfull thumpes of Canon shot, as the hardieft of the Mortpayes within, began to faint. But the courage and little feare of theyr chyefes, retired theyr hearts into theyr bellies. The breach being made againe, the Conftable who feared to lose the Duke in the Captaine's Fury, caufed the Trumpet to summon them wythin to fall to Composition, that Bloudshed might not fittre theyr Souldeiours to further cruelty. But so mucht gayned this second warnyng as the first, for which cause the nexte day after the assault was gyuen, where if the assaulte was valiant, the resistaunce was no lesse than bolde and venturous. But what can Thirtie or Fortie Men doe agaynste the Force of a whole Countrey, and where the Generall was one of the most valiaunte, and wiseft Captaynes of hys tyme and who was accompanied with the floure of the Neapolitane
Fotemen. The assault continued four or five Hours, but in the end the Dead payes not able to sustayne the force of the assailants, forsooke the Breache, and assaying to sustayn themselues, the Lieuetenaunt retired to the Kipe of the Fort, where his Wife continued prisoner, from the time that the two brethren were slaine. Whiles they without, ruffled in together in heapes amongs the defendauntes, the Duke of Camerino, with his Men, found meanes to escape out of Pryfon, and therewithal began furiously to chastifie the minifters of the disloyal Captaine, which in little tyme were cut al to pieces. Conrade being within found the Captayn's Father, vpon whom he was reuenged, and killed him with his owne hands. And not content with that, caried into further rage, and fury, he slashed him into gobbets, and threw them to the dogs. Truly a strange maner of reuenge, if the Captains cruelty had not attempted like inhumanity. To bee shorte, horrible it is to repeate the murders done in that strue, and hurly burly. For they that were of the Captayne's part, and taken, receyued all the strangest and cruellef punishment that man could devise. And were it not that I have a desire in nothing to beely the Author, and lesse will to escewe that which he had wrytten vpon the miserable end of those that were the minifters and seruants to the barbarous tirrany of the Captayne, I would passe no further, but conceale that which doth not deferue remembrance, except to auoide the example, which is not strange, the Cruelty of reuenging heart in the nature of Man, in all times growing to fuch audacity, as the torments which seeme incredible, be lyable to credite as wel for those we reade in auncient Historyes, as those we heare tell of by heare fay, and shauncyng in our tyme. Hee that had the upper hand of his Enimy, not content to kyll, but to eate with his ravenous teeth the heart difentraylde from his aduerfary, was hee lesse furious than Conrade, by makinge Anatomy of the Captayn's Father? And he that thrust Galleazze Fogafe in to the mouth of a Canon, tying his Head vnto his Knees and causyng him to be caried by the violent force of Gunpouder into the City from whence he came, to bribe and corrupt certayne of his enemies army, did he shew himselfe to be more curteous than one of these? Leaue we a part those that be past,
to touch the miserable ende wherewith Conrade caused the last tribute of the Captain's souldyers to bee payd. Now amongst these some were tied to the Tayles of wilde Horfes, and trayned ouer Hedges, and Buses, and downe the stiepnes of high Rocks, some were haled in pieces, and afterwards burnt with great Martyr-dome, some were deuyded and parted alione in four quarters, other foued naked wythin an Ox Hyde, and so buried in Earth, vp to the Chin, by which torments they finished their Liues with fearfull groanings. Will ye say that the Bull of Perillus, or Diomedes Horfes, were afflictions more cruell than these? I know not what ye call cruelty, if these acts may beare the title of modesty. But all thys, proceeded of wrath and dislayne of eyther partes. The one dyfdayned that the feruaunt should be his head, and the other was offended, that his foueraygne Lord shou'd aßay to take that from him, which his duty commandred him to keepe. Conrade toke in ill part the treafon of the Captayn, who beyond meafure was angry, that the Lord Nicholas had made him a brother of Vulcan's order, and regeftrd him in the booke of husbands, which know that they dare not speake. 'In fumme, the one had right, and the other was not without some reafon, and notwithstanding both fumrned the boundes of man's milde nature. The one ought to content hymfelfe (as I have fayd) for being reuenged on him that had offended him, and the other of the murder done, duringe the aßalt without shewing fo bloudy tokens of cruelty and fo apparent evidence of tyranny, vpon the minifters of the brutall and bloudy Captayne, who feeing his father put to death with futch Martirdome, and his men fo ftraungely tormented, was vanquished with choller, dispayre and impacyence. And albeit the Captayne had no greate desire to hurt his Wyfe, yet was he furmounted with futch rage, as apprehending hir, and binding hir hands and feete, she ftyl crying him mercy, and crauing pardon for hir faultes at the hands of God and hir, he threw hir downe from the highest Toure of the Kipe vpon the pavement of the Castle courte, not without teares and abafment of al, which saw that monftrous and dreadful sight, which the Souldiers viewing, they fired the Toure, and with fire and fmoke forced the Captaine to come forth, and by lyke meanes
made him, his Brother and Chyldren to tread the daunce that his Wyfe before had don. Conrade by and by caused thoshe bodies to be throwne forth for Foo de to the Wolues, and other raueninge Beasts, and Byrdes liuing vpon the pray of Carrion, causing also his Brethren honourably to bee buryed, and the Gentlewoman that had borne the penaunce worthy for hir fault. Sutch was the end of the moft myerable, and worsft governed loue, that I thinke man hath euer red in wryting, and which doth clearely witneffe, that there is no pleafure fo great but Fortune by chaunging and turning hir Wheele maketh a hundred times more bitter than desire of such joy doth yelde delyght. And farre better it were (besides the offence done to God) neuer to caft Eye on Woman, than to bord or proue them, to rayfe such Sclaunders and Factes which cannot be recounted but with the horrore of the Hearers, nor wrytten but to the great grieve of thoshe that mufe and study vpon the fame: Notwithstanding for instruction of our life, both good and bad Examples bee introduced and offered to the view of ech degree, and flate. To the end that Whoredome may bee auoyded, and bodily Pleafure eschued, as moft Mortal and pernicious Plagues that doe infect as well the Body and Reputation of man, as the integrity of the Minde. Besides that ech man ought to possesse his own Vessel, and not to couet that is none of hys, vnfeemely also it is to folicite the Neyghbor's Wyfe, to procure thereby the diffunction and defaite of the whole bond of mariage, which is a Treasure fo deare and precious, and carieth fo greate grieve to him that feeth it defaced, as our Lord (to declare the gravity of the Fact) maketh a comparifon of his Wrath agaynste them which run after straunge Gods, and applyeth the honour due vnto him to others that doe not deferue the fame, with the iuft disdayne, and ryghtfull Choller of a Iealous Husbande, Fraught wyth defpyght to see himselfe dispoyle of the Seafure, and Possession onely giuen to him, and not subieçt to any other, whatfo- euer he be. Learne here also (O ye ke husbands) not to fly with so nimble Wing, as by your owne authority ye ke f eeke rueng without fearing the follies and sclaunders that may infue. Your sorrow is iuft, but it behoueth that rea fon doe guide your fantasies, and bridle your owrer fodayne passions, to the intent that ye come
not after to sing the doleful Song of repentance, like vnto this foolish man, who hauing done more than he ought, and not able to retire without his overthrow, threw himself into the bottom-leffe gulf of perdition. And let vs all fixe faft in memory, that neuer vnruled rage, and wilful choller bringeth other benefit than the ruine of him that suffereth himselfe to runne headlonge into the fame, and who thinketh that all that is naturall in vs, is also reasonable, as though Nature were so perfect a worckwoman, as in man's corruption she could make vs Aungels, or halfe Gods. Nature following the instinct of that which is naturall in vs, doth not greatly stray from perfection, but that is giuen to few, and those whom God doth loue and chooseth. And Vertue is so sel-dome founde, as it is almost impossible to imitate that perfection. And briefly to say, I will conclude with the Author of this present Hystory.

Angre is a fury shott,
To him that can the same excell;
But it is no laughing sport
In whom that fenfelesse rage doth dwell.
That paug confoundeth eche man's wits
And shameth him with open shame,
His honour fades in frantike fits,
And blemisfheth his good name.
THE THIRTY-FOURTH NOUELL.

The horrible and cruel murder of Soltan Solyman, late the Emperor of the Turkes and father of Selym that now raigneth, done upon his eldest Sonne Mystapha, by the procurement, and means of Rafa his mother in lawe, and by the speciall instigation of one of his noble men called Rysianvs: where also is remembred the wilful death of one of his Sons named Giangir, for the grieve he conceived to see Mystapha so miserably strangeld.

Twenty two yeares past or thereabouts I translated this present History out of the Latine tongue. And for the rares of the Fact, and the disnaturall part of that late Furiose Enemy of God, and his Sonne Christ: I dedicated the same to the right honorable, my speciall good Lord, with al vertues, and nobility, fully accomplisshed, the Lord Cobbam Lorde Warden of the cinque Portes, by the name of Sir VVilliam Cobham Knyght. And bycause I would haue it continue in man's remembreunce thereby to renue the auncient detestation, which we haue, and our Progenitors had against that horrible Termagant, and Persecutor of Christyans, I haue infused the same amongst the rest of these Nouels. For of one thing I dare make warrantife, that auncient Writers haue not remembred, nor old Poets reported a more notorious or horyble Tragedy or fact executed against nature, then that vnnaturall murder done by the sayd enemy of Christianny, the late Soltan Solyman, otherwys called the great Turke. I remember the description of Nero's Parricide vppon his louynge Mother, of purpose to behold the place of his byrth. I call to memory alfo the wycked Murther of Orestes, on his Mother Clytemnestra. I also confider the vnfatherly part of Tantalus, who wyth the fleshe of his owne Sone Pelops, feastèd the Gods. All which are not farre dyfferent from this pestiferous Fury, and may wyth the same, and the lyke bee comparable by any Man heeretofore committed. This Hellysh Champyon hys owne Sonne, of hys owne Seede, Naturally conceaued wythin hys mother's Wombe, vnnaturally in his owne presence mosfe Myserably did kill. O pityfull cafe, But alas, voyde of pityy
to a pyttyleffe man. O cruell fact, but not ouer cruell to him that liued a cruell Man. What Beast be he never so woode, or Sauage, can suffer his Yonglings to take harme, mutch lesse to doe them hurte himselfe? What fierce Lyoneffe can infefte his owne Whelpe, which with Naturall paines brought it into light? But what doe I stand vpon Lamentation of the cafe and leave the bruteneffe of this Madman far bruter then Lyons vnconsidered? The bruteneffe of this fury so farre ecceedeth Beasts, as Reasonable passeth Vnreasone-
able. The fury of the Deuill, whom he serueth, so raged in his tirannous life, as loe, he fleue his owne Sonne. The care of God, and Chrifte was so farre out of his Sichte as hee subuerted Nature. The libidous luftes of this Lecherous Infidell, fo furmounted the bounds of reafon, as the fire thereof conffumed his owne flesh. This Enemy of Chrifte was so bewytched as the dotage of his infidelity contented to murder. And as tiranny like a Lord pos-
seffed his Brayne in huntinge after the bloud of Chriftians, so Tiranny like an Enchaunter with the Sorcery of Feminine adula-
tion fhed the bloud of his owne begotten. Thus as tiranny was the Regent of his life moft wicked, fo Tiranny was the Plague of his owne generation. For as the Wryter of this Hystory reporteth, it was thoughte that the fame was done by Diuyne Prouydencc. And lyke as this vnhappy Father was a deadly Enemy vnto Chryft and his Church, fo this yonge Whelpe was no leffe a fhered of Chriftian Bloud. No doubt a very froward Impe, and a towarde Champion for the diuel’s Theatre: and as it is fayd hereafter, fo goodly a yong man in Stature and other externe qualities of the body, as Nature could not frame a better. So excellent, and courageous in Feates of armes as Bellona hirselfe could not pro-
create a luftier. This Hystory in the Latin tongue is written by Nicholas Moffan a Burgonian borne, a man fo well in the war-
fare of good learning (as it appeareth) as in the fervice of the warres well expert. Who being a Souldiour in Hercules warres (the old Champion of Chriftendome, and Pagan Enimy, Charles the fifte) was fore wounded and taken Pryfoner in Bulgaria, in the yeare of our Lord 1552, and continued Captiue till September, 1555, almoft three yeares. Whoſe Misery, Trouble, Famine, Colde, and other Torments by him fuftayned, during the fayd time
if it should be declared, perhaps would seem incredible. But when the Turk had kept him in miserable bands two years, and faw he could not obtaine the Raunsome, whch he immem-
urably requyred, at length sent him to the Castell of Strigon, where
for a certayne time he remayned hampered with double chaynes
von his Necke, Handes, and Feete. And within sometime after
hys comming thither he was made to toile in the day, like a com-
mon flawe, to hew and carry Woode, keepe Horse, swepe Houses,
and futch other busines. Which Drudgery, he was glad to doe
afwell for exercyfe of his Members, whch with colde yrons were
benommed, as also to get Bread to relieue his hunger. For when
hee had done his flinte, his Maifter gaue him Bread, Onions, Gar-
licke, Cheefe, and futch other fare: and at Night he was sent agayne
to Pryfon, where he was matched with a Mate, that for Debte
was condempned to perpetual Pryfon, of whom he learned many
things, afwel of their Lawes, Religion, warlike Affayres, and other
maners of the Turkes, as also of the order of this horrible Facft don
by Solyman. And by the report of his sayd Companion in pry-
fon, he digested the fame into the forme of this history. And
after this man had payed hys Raunsome, and was fet at lyberty, he
arrived into the partes of Chryftedome. The Verity of whych is
futch, as it is not onely credyble bycaufe thys Man dyd wryte it,
who was three Yeares there refiaunt, and in manner aforesaid,
heard the truth thereof, but also is warranted, by sundry Mar-
chant Men, Travellers into farre Countreyes, faithfully verifying
the fame to bee true. And before I drawe to the dyfcourse of the
Story, I will fet downe some of the manners of Solyman's greatest
states and favorites, and the pryncipal offices and honors of that
hellish Monarchy. As Mustapha, Machomet, Baiasith, Selim,
Gianger, Chruftam, and Hibrahim. This Hibrahim was fo
dearly beloved with the Emperour Solyman as he exercyfed
the Office of Vefiri, whch is nexte to the Emperour, the chyefest
in degree of honor. Who by increafe of that Office, became more
wealthy in Treasure then Solyman himselfe, whch when he per-
c eyued, without any respect of the honorable office, or the honor
of the party, neglecting in respect of riches (according to the
natural desire of Auarice, wherewith the greedy Appetites of the
flocke are endued) all religion, honour, Parents, countrey, friends or amity, he caus'd in his own presence, his head to be striken of, adding the treasures of the said Hibrahim to his owne Coaers, and placed one Ruftanus to succeede in his office. Besides which honorable places ther be diuers degrees of honor, as Mutchty, which is of that honor with them as the chief bishop or Pope in other Countreies, and of such authority with the Emperour, that awel in time of Peace, as also in Warres, he determineth vpon nothing without the counsel of Muchti. Bascha (which we commonly call VVaecho) is the Lieuetenaunt of a Prouince. But formonutch as all other offices and dignities, depend only vpon the Emperour, and are bestowed as he listeth, none of them hauing any thing proper that he may call his owne: the sayd Baschas in all Prouinces, every three yeare are chaunged after the disposition of the Emperour, and continue no longer Gouernors, than the sayd terme, without his special decree, and commandement. And this chaunge and seueral mutation, is done for two caufes. First that notwithstanding the sayd Offices are bestowed by turnes, yet they which are most excellent in prowess of Armes, and Valiaunce, are best in fauour, and are placed in the most fertile Countreyes. But the maner in the disposition of the fame Office is now degnerated, for where in tyme past the fame were bestowed vpon the beft Captaynes and Souldyers, in these Days, are through Fauoure and Money, throughly corrupted. So that now amonges them all thynges for Money are venalia, ready to be folde, and yet the fame vnknowen to the Emperour hym selfe. The other cause, of the alteration and chaunge of the sayd Bascha, and the Chyefefl cause, as I haue learned is, leaft through theyr longe abode in the sayd Prouinces fo to them assigned, by some incident occasion they myght entre familiarilie wyth the Christians, and in succeffe of tyme be converted. The Turkes haue also amonges them certayne Noble Men which in theyr Language they call Spahy, and it is the first degree of honour, but it hath no decent or succesion to the Posterity, and they only defere the tytle thereof, whych in Warrelyke Affayres behauie them felues moft Manfully, and who at length are preferred to another degree of honour, and are called Subafoche, which worde fo farre as I can vnderstande, may be referred to the Title of Baron. Next
to the same Subascbæ here is another called Begg. But here is
meete to be knowne howe that woorde is taken amongst them two
ways, for generally all they which excell other in any promotion
are called Beggi. That is to say Lordes or Maysters: but if it be
meant singularly or properly, then it signifieth not simply a Cap-
taine (for they call a Captaine Aga) but also an Earle. And if the
sayd Begg chance to be endued by the Emperour with the order
of Knyghthoode, then hee is called Sanggakbegg. And they like-
wife are accustomed to bee transposed from County to county, as the
Bafochæ are, and the same do not descend to the heir, but when
the Earle is deade. And then both the promotion and county, are by
the Emperour giuen to another. And hereby it appeareth that no
man hath any thynge proper or his own, and therefor they call
theselfes, Padicahumcfullari. That is to say, the Emperour's
bondmen. Here also I ought to entreat of the manners of the
Turkes in their Warres, and the sundry offices therein. In what
forte they leuy, and muster their Souldiers, the order of their
marching, the order in putting the same in array, and by what
diligence they vfe their Skouts, and Wardes, all which had bene
necessary to haue bene spoken of, but that I might not be tedious.
And yet of one thing for a conclusion I entend to speake of, which is
of the Ianiishchari. The sayd Ianiishchari are the whole strength
of the Turkes battell, who never obtayne victorie, but the same is
attributed to their valiaunce. They bee very expert, and skilfull
in the vfe of smale shot, and great Ordinaunce, and in that kinda
of defence and munition, they chieflie excell. And as I haue red,
the Turke hath continually in wages thirty m. of the sayd Iani-
shari. They haue aboue other many singuler Pryuiledges, in so
mutch as the name of a Ianiishcharus is in futch reverencce amongs
them, that notwithstanding any offence, or crime, done by them
worthy capitall death, they in no wise shalbe punished, except
before the comming of the offence, they be depriued of their
estate by their Captaynes. Thys Pryuiledge also they haue aboue
others, that vnlefe they lye in Campe, they bee neuer compelled
to watch nor warde, without great necessity do force them. And
for this they be hatefull and odious to other Souldiours. It is
sayd, that all they be Chrifian men's children. And in thefe
countreyes which he vanquisheth, he choofeth out the Boyes of
the fame, futch as he thinketh meete, and carrieth them away, and bringeth them vp in his owne trade, and lawes, with exercife of feates in armes, and being growen to ripe yeares, and man’s state, they be alloted amongs the number of Ianifchari. And thus mutch touching the maners, dignities, and offices of that Turkifh broode: Now to the Hyftory. Bee it knowne therefore, that Solyman had of a certayne bonde Woman this Muftapha, to whom from his Youth hee gaue in charge the Countrey of Amafia. Who with his Mother continually refiaunt in the fayd countrey, became fo forwards in Feates of armes, as it was fuppofed of all men, that hee was giuen vnto their countrey by fome heauenly prouidence. This Muftapha, with his Mother being placed in the fayd Countrey, it chaunced that the Kyng his Father was beyonde meaure wrapt with the beauty of another of his Concubins called Rofa, of whom hee begat fourefonnes, and one daughter. The eldeft of the Sonnes was called Machomet, to whom the Province of Caramania was affigned. The second, Baiafith, who enjoyed the countrey of Magnesia. The third called Selymus, to whom after the death of Machomet the eldeft, the fayd Countrey of Caramania was appointed. The fourth Iangir, whose surname, by reafon hee was croke backed, notwithstanding his pregnant wit, was Gibbus. And the daughter he bestowed in mariage vppon Ruftanus Bascha, who when Hibrahim was put to death, exercifed the office of Vefiri as is aforefayd (which office we vfe to call the Pre- fident of the Counfayle) and according to his natural difpo ftion to couetoufneffe, abufing the fayd office, altered and chaunged all maner of thinges belonging to the fame. He diminifhed the Souldiours wages, being by them called Ianifchari. He abated the stipends of the Captayns, whom they nominate Saniachi. Hee alfo feafted vpon the Provinces yearely Taxes and Tributs. And herewith being not fattiied, he ordayned a flint vpon the charges of the king’s houfhold, Werby he fought, but to accumulate vnto himfelfe, infinite treaures, gotten by deceitfull extortion, through occafion whereof, he was fuppofed to be a faughtyfull, and diligent Seruaunte, and thereby greatly infinuated himfelfe into the king’s fauour, little regardinge the hatred and difpleafure of others. In the meane time, this Rofa of whom mention is made
Whereunto Muchty answered: that the worke to God was acceptable, although to hir soule it was nothing auailable. Adding further, that not onely all hir Substance was at the Kinge's disposition, but hir Life also, being a Bondwoman. And therefore that worke would be more profitable to the Kinge. With which aunswere the woman in hir mind dayly being troubled, became very pensiffe, like one that was voyde of all comfort. The King being aduertised of hir sorrow very gently began to comfort hir, affirming that shortly he would finde fuch meanes, as she shou'd enjoy the effect of hir desire. And forthwith manumifed hir and made hir free, a writing and instrument made in that behalfe, according to their custome, to the intent she might not be at commaundement any more to be yoked in bondage. Hauinge in this forte obtayned this fauoure, the fayd Rofa, with a great Maffe of Money determined to proceede in hir entended purpofe. In the meane feasen, the Kyng wythout meafeure being incenfed with the desire of the fayd Rofa, as is aforefayd, fent for hir by a messenger, willing hir to repayre to the Court. But the crafty Woman, vnskilful of no pollicy, returned the Messenger with subtile aunswere, which was, that he shou'd admonifh the King hir Lord and Soueraygne, to call to his remembraunce afwell the lawe of honefry, as alfo the precepts of his owne lawes, and to remembre she was no more a Bondwoman and yet she could not deny but hir life remained at the disposition of his maiesty, but touching Carnall copulation to be had agayne with his person, that could in no wife be done, without committing of finne moft heynous. And to the intent he shou'd not thinke the fame to be fayned or defuiled of hir felfe, she referred it to the judgement of Muchty. Which aunswere of repulf, so excited the inflamed affections of the Kyng, as fetting all
other busineffe a part, he caus'd the Muchty to be sent for. And giuing him liberty to aunfwere, he demaundd whether his Bondwomen being once manumifed, could not be knowne carnally without violation of the lawes? Whereunto Muchty aunfwered: that in no wife it was lawfull, vnleffe before he shoulde with his contract matrimony. The difficulty of which Lawe in fuch forte augmented the Kyng's defires, as being beyond measure blinded with Concupifcence, at length agreed to the marriage of the faid manumyfed woman, and after the Nuptial writinges according to the cuftome were ratified, and that he had giuen vnfo hir for a Dowry 5000 Soltan Ducats, the marriage was concluded, not without great admiration of all men, especially for that it was done contrary to the vs of the Ottomane Ligneage. For to eschew Society in gouernment, they marry no free or lawfull Wyues, but in their steades to fatiffy theryr owne pleafures, and libidinous Appetites (wherein moft vily, and filthely aboue any other Nation they chiefly excell) they chose out of diuers Regions of the World the moft Beautifull, and fayrefl Wenchcs, whom after a Kyngly forte very honourably they bring vp in a place of their Courte, which they call Sarai: and instruct them in honeft, and ciuile maners, with whom also they vs to accompany by turnes, as theyr pleafure moft lyketh. But if any of them do conceyue, and bring forth childe, then she aboue all other is honoured, and had in reuerence, and is called the Soltanes moft worthy. And futch after they have brought forth childe, are beftowed in marriage vppon the Pieres and Nobility, called Bafchse, and Sangace. But now to returne to our purpofe. This manumifed Woman being aduaunced through Fortune's benefit, was esteemed for the chiefe Lady of Asia, not without great happineffe succeeding in al hir affayres. And for the fatiffying of hir ambitious entents, there wanted but only a meane and occation, that after the death of Solyman, one of hir own children might obtayne the Empire. Where vnfo the generofity and good behauiour of Muftapha was a great hinderaunce, who in deede was a yong man of great magnanimity, and of Wit moft excellent, whose Stomach was no leffe courageous, than he was manly in perfon, and force. For which qualityes he was meruaylously beloued of the Souldiors
and Men of warre, and for his wisedome and iustice very acceptable to the people. All which things this subtile woman considering, the priuely vfed the counsayle of Ruftanus for the better accomplishing of hir purpose, knowing that he would rather seeke th’aduancement of his kinffman and the brother of his owne Wyfe as reafon was, then the preferment of Muftapha, with whom she certaynely knew that Ruftanus was in displeaure. For in the beginning, as he fought meanes to extenuate the livings of all other (as is aforefayd) fo alfo he went about (but in vayne) to plucke somewhat from Muftapha. Whereby he thought that if he should once obtayne the governement, he would fkarce forget futch an injury, and thereby not only in hazarde of his Office, and dignity, but alfo in daunger of loffe of his heade. All which things, this wicked woman pondering in hir vngratious Stomacke went about to infect into the King’s mynde, no small fufpitions of Muftapha, faying that he was ambitione and bolde vpon the Fauour and good wil of all men (wherewith in deede he was greatly endued) and rejoying in his force, let no other thing to be expected, then opportunity of time to aspire to the Kingdome, and to attempt the flaughter of his Father. And for the better cloaking of the matter, he caufed Ruftanus at convenient tyme, more at large to amplifie and fet forwards hir mallice, who alwayes had in charge all principall and weyghty affayres. In whom alfo was no lacke of matter to accelerate the accusation and death of the yong man. Moreover to futch as were appoynted to the administration of the countrey of Syria, he priuely declared, that Muftapha was greatly fufpected of his Father, commaunding every of them dilligently to take heed to his estate, and of all futch things as they eyther faw or perceyued in him, with all expedition to fend aduertifement, affirming that the more fprightfully they wrote of him, the more acceptable it shoule be to the Kinge. Wherefore dierers times Ruftanus being certified of the kingly Estimation, Magnanimity, Wyfedom, and Fortitude of Muftapha, and of his beneuolence and liberality towards all men, wherewith he greatly conciled their faviour, and how the ardent desires of the People, were inclined to hys election: he therefore durft not take vpon him to be the first that should fow the feede of that wicked conspiracy, but deliuering his Letters to the
Vngratious Woman, left the rest to the device of his unhappy brayne: But Rofa epying opportunity of time to succeede her unhappy defyre, ceased not to corrupt the Kyng's mynde, sometimes with promise of the vse of other Women, and sometimes with sundrie other adulations. So that if mention was made of Muftapha at any time, she wou'd take such occasion to open the Letters, as might serue most apt for her purpose. And she was not deceyued of hir expectation. For taking a convenient time not without tears (which Women never want in cloaked matter) she admonished the Kinge of the pearill wherein he stoo'de, remembering amongs other things, how his Father Selymus, by such means depayed his owne Father both from his Kingdome, and Life, instantly requiring him by that example to beware. But these Arguments of suspicion, at the first brunt seemed not probable to the Kyng, and therefore by this means the deuilifhe Woman could little prouye, which when her enuous Stomacke perceyued, she began to direct her mischievous mynde to other devices, seeking means with poyfon to destroy the yonge man. And there wanted not also, gracelesse persons, prompt and ready to accomplish that mischievous fact, had not divine providence resisst the fame. For Rofa sent vnto Muftapha a fute of Apparell in the name of his Father, which by maruaylous craft was enuenimed with Poyfon. But Muftapha in no wyse would weare the sayd apparell before one of his slaves had affayed the fame, whereby he prevented the Mischiefe of his vngratious Stepmother, opening to all men the deceipt of the poyfon. And yet this pestilent Woman ceased not to attempt other Enterprizes. She went about to purchase vnto hir the good will and familiarity of the Kyng in such fort as the like never obtayned in the Courte of Ottoman, (for she vshed certayne Sorceries through the helpe of a Woman a Jewe borne, which was a famous Enchauntresse, to wyn the loue of the Kyng, and thereby perfwaded hir selfe to procure greater things at his hands) in so mutch as she obtayned that hir Children by course shou'd be resiant in their Father's Courte, that by theyr continuall presence and affidual flattering, they might get the loue of their Father. So that if Muftapha did at any time come to the Court, by that meanes she might have a better meanes to rid him of his life, if not, to tary a time, wherein she should be dispatched
by the help of others. But Muftapha not repaying to the Courte
(for the Kyng's children do not vie to go out of their Countreys
affigned vnto them, without their Father's knowledge, nor to re-
payre to Conftantinople with any number of men of Warre, to
receyue their Inheritance till their Father be deade) he deuised
another milchief. For enjoying hir former request, she recovered
another, also hauing brought to passe that not onely in the City,
but also in the countrey, hir children should attend vpon thehir
Father. Yea, and Giangir the crookebac'd should alwayes attend
on his father in his Warres. But the Stepmother's deuise for cer-
tayne yeares hanging as it were in ballance, at length Fortune
throughly fauoured hir wicked endeavours. For the Bafcha which
had the protection of Muftapha, and the government of the Pro-
vince of Amafia, (For euery one of the Kyng's chyldren haue one
Bafcha, that is to say a Liutenaunt, which doe aunfwerd the people
according to the lawes and gieue orders for the administration
of the Warres, and also euery one of them haue a learned Man to
Infrauct them in good dyfcipline, and Pryncely qualities) the sayd
Bafcha I say deuised Letters wherein was contayned a certayne
treatise of Marriage, betwene Muftapha and the Kyng's Daughter
of Perfia, and how he had referred the matter to the Minifters
of the Temple, to the intent that if it had not good succeffe, he should
be free from all fuppiration, and sent the same Letters to Ruftanus
who greatly recoiiered for that he hoped to bring his defyred pur-
pofe to good effect. And fearing the matter no longer, incontinent-
ly he vterted the fame to Rofa, who both together, forthwith
got into the Pallace, and discoverd the whole matter to the
King. And to the intent they might throughly incende the Kyng's
mynde with fupscriptions, that before was doubtefull, and delibe-
ratius in the matter, to put him out of all doubt, they affyrmed that
Muftapha like an ambitioufe man, sought meanes to confpyre his
death being incenfed like a Madman to the government of his
large Empyre, contrary to nature, and Law diuine. And to the
intent better creditt might be gieuen to their subtile Suggestion,
they alleges the Treaty of Marriage betwene Muftapha and the
Kyng of Perfia, the deadly and auncent enimy of the Ottoman
Ligneage. For respect whereof, he ought diligently to take heede
left by conioyning the power of the Persians with the Sangachi, and Ianischari, which are the Captayns, and Souliours, whose good wille he had with his lyberality already tyed to his fauour, in short time, would go about to deprive him of his Kyngdome and Lyfe. With these accusations and futch lyke they had so farre flurred the king, as he himfelfe fought the Death of his owne Sonne, in manner as foloweth. Therefore in the yere of our Lord 1552, he caufed to be publiflied with al expedition throughout his provinces, that the Persians had made their vauntes how they woulde inuade the Countrey of Syria, win the Cityes there, and carry away the Captiues, and alfo would deffroy euery place with fier and Sword, in futch fort as no man fhould withfand them. Wherefore to prouide againft: the feyd proude and haultie Bragges, hee was forced to fend Ruftanus thyther with an Armie. The Souliours being leuied, hee pryvily commaunded Ruftanus in as secret manner as hee could and without any Tumulte to lay handes vpon Muftapha, and to bryng hym bound to Canftantinople. But if hee could not conveniently bryng that to pafle, then to diſpatch hym of hys Lyfe by futch meanes as hee could. Ruftanus receuyng thys wycked and cruell Commandement, marched towards Syria wyth a power. Wher when he arryued Muftapha, hauing knowledge thereof fetting all other buſineffe a parte, beying accompanied with the Luftyeft and beft appoynted Men of Warre in al Turkey to the Numbre of feuen Thoufande, hee directed his Iorney alfo towards Syria. Whereof when Ruftanus had vnderftandyng, and perceyued hee could not well accomplyfh the wycked defire of the Kyng, immedyately returned backe agayne to Canſtantinople in futch haffe that hee durfte not abyde the fight of theDufte rered into the Ayre by Muſtaphae's Horfe Men, and mutch leffe hys commyng. When the Souldyers were retyred Ruftanus declared to all Men that the Countrey was in good quyet, and pryuely repayred to the Kyngge, and uttered to hym the caufe of hys retourne, addynge further, that as farre as hee could fee by manyfeffe Sygnes, and Conieſtures, the good Wylles of all the Armye were inclyned to Muftapha, and for that caufe in fo daungerous an Enterpryfe, hee durfte not adventure with open Warres, but lefte all to the confideration of hys Maiefty. This
reporte bred to the cruell Father (who nothyng degenerated from the Naturall Tiranyny of hys Auncestors) greater Suspiciouns: for reuengement whereof he moft wickedly toke further aduise. The yeare folowyng he commaunded an huge Army to be leuyd once againe makyng Proclamation that the Persians with a greater Power would inuade Syria, and therefore thought it mete that he himself for the Common fauegarde of them all, ought personaily to repayre thyther with a power to withfstande the indeuors of his Ennimies. The Army being assembled, and al furnitures prouyded in that behalfe, they marched forwarde, and within fewe dayes after the cruell Father folowed. Who beynge come into Syria, addrefled a mesflenger to Muftapha, to commaund him forthwith to repayre vnto him, then being encamped at Alepes. And yet Solymane could not keepe secret the mortall hatred he bare to hys Sonne from others, although he imployed dilygent care for that purpofe, but that the knowledge thereof came to the Eares of one of the Bafchæ, and others of Honour. Emonges whome Achmet Bafcha pryuly fent Woorde to Muftapha, to the intent he myght take the better heede to hymfelf. And it feemed not without Wonder to Muftapha, that his Father, wythout neceffary caufe, flioulde arryue in thofe partes wyth fo great a Number. Who notwithstanding, knowing hymfelfe innocente, although he in extreame sorrow and penfifenes of mynd determyned to obey hys Father's Commaundement although he shoulde stand in Daunger of hys Lyfe. For hee efteemed it a more honeft and laudable part to incurre the Peryll of death in Obedience to hys Father, than to lyue in contumelye by difobedyence. Therefore in that great anxious and care of Mynde, debatyng many things wyth hymfelfe: At length he demaunded of a learned Man whych contynually was conuerfaunt wyth hym in his Houfe (as is aforesayde,) whether the Empyre of the whole World or a vertuous Lyfe ought rather to be wyflied for. To whom this Learned Man moft Godly aunfwered. That hee which dilygently weyed the Gouernement of this Worlde, shall perceiue no other Felicytye therein then a vayne and foolyfyh apparence of goodneffe. “For there is nothyng” (quod he) “more frayle or vnfure then the Worlde’s prosperitye. And it bryngeth none other Fruicts but Feare,
forrow, troubles, suspicions, murders, Wickedness, vnrighteousness, spoyle, Pouerty, Captiuitie, and such lyke whych to a man that affeecteth a blesshed Lyfe, are in no wyse to be wyshed for. For whose sake who so lift to enjoy them, leaseth the happines of that Lyfe. But to whome it is gyuen from aboue to way and confider the frayltye and shortnes of thys state (which the Common People deemeth to be a Lyfe) and to refit the vanities of the World, at length to embrace vertue, to them truely in heauen there is a Place assignd and prepared of the higheft God, where hee shall inherite perpetuall Ioyes, and Felicity of the Lyfe to come." Wyth whych aunswer Muftapha beyng somewhat prycked in conscience wonderfully was fatisfied, as being tolde of him which feemed by a certaine Prophecy to pronosticke his end. And tarrying vppon no longer disputacion, immedely dyrected his Journey towards his cruel Father. And vning that expedition he could, arriued at the place where his Father encamped, and not farre from the fame he pitched his pavilion. But this expedite arriuall of Muftapha did inculcat a greater suspicion in the wycked Father. And Rusfanus was not behynde wyth Iyes, and other subtile informations to set forwardes the same. And after he had called together the common Souldiours and the chief men of Warre in the Army, hee fente them to meete wyth Muftapha, who without any tarrying moost readily obeyed his commaundement, to put themselfes in readiness. In the mean time this crafty Verlet, shewing by outward countenance the hid enuy that lay secrete in his heart, forthwith repaired into the Kynge's Pavilion, and without shame or honesty told the King, howe almoast every one of the principall Souldiours of their owne accorde went to meete Muftapha. Then the King being troubled in mind, went forth of his tent, and persuadaed with himself that Rusfanus Wordes were true. Now Muftapha lacked not sondry tokens of his vnhappy fate: For not thre daies before he should take his iorney about the breake of day in the morning being in slepe, he dreamed that he saw Machomet clad in gorgious apparel, to take him by the hand, and lead him into a moost pleasant place beutified with sondry turrets and sumptuous buildinge having in it a moost delectable gardein, who shewing him al those things with his finger, spake these
wordes: “Here” (quod he) “doe they rest for euer, which in the World haue lyued a Godly and iust Life, and haue bene Aduauncers of Law and Iustice, and contempters of vice.” And turning his face to the other syde, he saw two swifte and broad Riuers, the one of them boiled more blacke then Pitch. And in the saies Riuers many were drowned, whereof some appeared aboue Water crying with horrible voices, Mercy, Mercy. “And there?” (quod he) “are tormented all futsch, which in the World most wyckedly haue committed Mischiefes.” And the chiefe of them he fayed were Prynces, Kings, Emperours, and other great Men. With that Mufetapha awaked and callyng the saies learned Man vnto him, vtered his dreame. And paufying a lyttle whyle (for the superficicious Machometifes attribute mutch Credite to dotage of dreames) being ful of forrow and pensiffifie, at length anfwered That the vifion was very dreadfull, for that it pronifcicated extreme peril of his life. Therefore he required him to haue diligent respect thereunto. But Mufetapha heynge of great valiaunce and fortitude, hauing no regard to the anfwer aforesaid, couragiously replied with these wordes: “Shall I suffer my self to be vanquished with vaine and childifh feare? Nay I wil rather take a good heart, and make haft to my Father. For I am asfured that alwayes from time to time I haue honored his maiefty accordyng to my duety, in so mutch as neyther Fote trauelled, nor Eye looked, mutch leffe heart thought agaynft his will to defyre or couet to raigne, except it had please the bighe God to haue called his Maiefty from thys Lyfe to a better. And befydes that my Mynde was neuer bente after his Death to beare rule, excepte Generall Elefyon of all the Army, to the intent I myghte entre the Imperial Seate wythout slauughter, Bloudshed, or any other cruell fact, and thereby preuerue the friendhip of my Brethren inuiolat, and free from any spot of hatred. For I alwayes determyned, and chose rather (since my Father’s pleasure is so) to end my Life like an obedyent Child, than continually to raigne, and be counted of al men, obfinate and disobedient, especially of mine enimies.” When he had fspoken thefes wordes, he made haft to his father. And at his arrual to the Campe, fo fone as he had pitched his Tent he appareled himfelf al in white, and putting certain letters into his
bofome, which the Turkes vfe to do, when they go to any place (for in superficions they vfe maruailous dotage) he proceeded towards his father, entending wyth reverence (as the manner is) to kiffe his hand. But when hee was come to the entry of the tent, he rememberd himself of his Dagger which he wore about him, and therefore vngirding himselfe he put it of for avoiding of al suspcion. Which don, when he was entred the Tent, he was very curteously (with futch reverence as behoued) welcomed of his father's Eunuches. And when he saw no man else, but the feat royal, where his father was wont to fitte readie furnished, with a sorrowfull heart flode stil, and at length demaunded where his Father was. Who anfwered that forthwith hee would come in presence. In the meane feason he saw feuen dombe men (which the Turke vfeth as Instruments to kepe his secrets, and priuily to do futch murthers as he commaundeth) and therewith immediately was wonderfully mafed faying: "Beholde my prefent Death." And therewith stepped afeide to auoide them, but it was in vaine, For being apprehended of the Eunuches and garde, was by force drawen to the place appointed for him to lofe hys Lyfe, and sodainly the domb Men fastened a Bowftryng about his Necke. But Muftapha, fome what fiuing, requyred to fpeake but two Wordes with his Father. Which when the wicked parricide his Father hearde, beholding the Cruell Spectacle on the other fide of the Tente, rebuked the dombe Men, faying: "Wyl you neuer execute my Commaundement, and doe as I bid you? Wyl you not kyll the Traitor, which thefe ten years fpace would not suffer me to flepe one quyet Night?" Who when they harde him fpeake thofe cruell Woordes, the Eunuches and dombe Men threw him prostrate vpon the ground, and cording the ftring with a double knot most pitifully strangled him. Which wycked and cruell fafte being done, the Bafcha that was Lieuetenaunt of Amania was also apprehended by the Kynge's Commaundement, and likewyfe beheaded in hys owne Presence. This FaSTE also commytted, he caufed to be called before hym Gianger the Crokebacke, who was Ignoraunte of that was done, and Iefyne wyth hym as though hee had done a thynge worthie commendation, bad him to go and meete his Brother Muftapha: who with a joyful cheere made haft to meete him.
But when he came to the place and saw his infortunate Brother ly
strangled and dead vpon the earth, it is impoffible to tell with
what forrow he was affected. And he was feafe come to the
place, but his wicked Father sent Meffengers after him, to tell
him that the Kyng had giuen him all Muftapha, his Treasures,
Horfemen, Bondmen, Paullions, Apparel : Yea, and moreouer the
Prouince of Amafia. But Giangir conceyuing extreme forrow
for the cruell murder of his deere brother, with lamentable teares
fpake these words. "Oh cruell and wicked Dogge: yea, and if I
may so call my father, Oh Traytor moft peffilent, do thou enjoy
Muftapha, his Treasures, his Horfes, Furnitures, and the fayd Coun-
trey to. Is thy heart fo vnnatural, cruell, and wicked, to kill a
yongue man fo notable as Muftapha was, fo good a Warriour,
and fo worthy a Gentleman as the Ottoman house never had
or fhall haue the like, without any refpeft of Humanity or Zeale
natural? By Sayn't Mary I neede to take heed leaft hereafter in
like maner thou as impudently do triumph of my death, being
but a crokebacke and deformed man." When hee had fpoken
theefe wordes, plucking out his Dagger, he blew himfelfe. Whereof
when the Emperor had aduertifement, he coneyued inspeakeable
forrow. But for al that, his forrowfull heart vanquifhed not his
couetoufe minde. For he commaunded all Muftapha's Treasure,
and other Furnitures to bee brought into his Tent. And the Souldiours
thinking the fame fhould be giuen amongs them made as much
hafe to dispatche his commaundement. In the meane tyme
Muftapha's Souldiours (not knowing what was become of their
Mayfter) feeing fuch a number runne in heapes without order
came forth of their Camp to withftande their foolifhe tumult, who
very manfully, not without much flaughter withftooede the fame.
And when the Fame of that Tragicall tumult was bruted amongs
the King's souldiers, (who perceyuing the fame more and more to
waxe hot,) they went forth to succour their fellowes, but the
Onfet being giuen on all fides, the fight on both parts was fo
fierce, as in short fpace there were flayne very neere the number
of two thoufande men befides the hurt and wounded, whereof the
number was greater. Howbeit this Broyle had not bene thus
ended, had not Achmat Bafcha, a graue and wife man, and for
his experimentes in the Warres of great auuthority amongs the
foouldiers driuen them back, and represse their fury. Who turn-
ing himself towards Muftaphe's foouldiers with smiling counte-
aunce and milde words appeasing their furious stomacks spake
these wordes: "Why my deere brethren and freends wil yee now
degenerate from your olde accustomed wisedome, sufficiently tried
in you these many yeares past, and will now refiit the command-
ment of the great Soltan the lord and soueraigne of vs all? I cannot
chufe (as God shal help me) but meruayle what shou'd mooue you
whom hitherto I haue proued to be so notable and valiant men,
and in this ciuile confiict, you shou'd bende your force vpon your
own frends, and raife vp futch a fpectacle to the Ottoman enemy,
against whom heretofore you haue very prosperously and manfully
fought, and therewith by mutuall slaughter to make them reioyfe
whom heretofore with the like, you haue made heauy and pen-
five. Therefore my fellowes as you tender your own valiaunce
and Magnanimity, take heede, that by your own folly you do not
lefe the estimation of your wonted fortitude and wisedome,
wherein hitherto you haue excelled all men. And refere your
force, which you now more than inough haue vfed amongst your
owne Fellowes till you come against your Enemies, where you shal-
have a more laudable, and better occasion to vfe it." With
these woordes and the like fpoken by Achamat Basca, the Soul-
diours were somewhat appeased, and all things were franckely
suffered to bee carried out of Muftapha hys Pavylion to the Kynge's.
But when the death of Muftapha came to the knowledge of
the Ianiʃchari, and the rest of the Army, forthwith began another
feditio. And after the Trumpets had blown the onfet, there
was futch a Tumult and ftyrre amongst the Souldiours, mixte wyth
fundry Lamentations, and Teares, that like Madmen with great
violence, they ran into the Courte, with theyr Swords naked in
theyr hands ready bent to strike. And this renued and sudden
styrre so terrified the Knyg, that bee wifte not what to do who for
all the dampes would needes haue fled. But being perfuaded of
his Counfelloures to tarry, hauing throughhe Neceffity, gotten
occafon to attempt that whych in the tyme of hys moft securitie
he durft scarce haue enterprysed, went forth, and with fierne
Countenaunce, spake to hys Souldyres in this manner. "What
rumors, what tumultes, and what mad partes are thefe, wherewith
fo proudly in this fort ye disquiet me? What meane these enflamed countenances? What signify these haulty gestures, these proude and angry lokes? Doe you not remembre that I am your King that hath Power and Authority to gouerne and rule you? Are you determyned in this fort to spot your Anscyent and invincible valiaunce, and the notable Warrefare of your predeces-
fours, with the bloud of your Emperour?" And while the King was speaking these Words, the soouldiers boldly answered, how they confessed him to be the same, whome many yeares ago they chose to be their Kynge, and for that hee alleged how they had with their good seruice in the Warres acquired vnto him many great conquefts and had diligently kepte the same: all that they did of purpose that he should vie towards them againe a godly Authority and juft Gouernment, and not vnaduifedly shouold lay his bloudy handes vppon every iuste Man, and fo to staine and defile himselfe with the Bloud of Innocents. And againe, where he laide to their charge, that they were issued from their Cabanes armed with Weapon, they affirmed the same to be done in a juft quarell, euyn to revenge the slaughter of innocent Muftapha, and for that they ought not to haue such a Kynge as should worke his anger vppon them that had not deferued it. Further they required that they might cleare themselues openly of the offence of Treafon, whereof falsly they were accused by Muftapha, his Enimies, and to haue their accufer to be brought forth in open pre-
fence. And sayde more that before he personallly did appeare before the Judgement Seat Face to Face to give euidence, sub
talioantis paen, accordance to the Law, they would not vnarme nor yet difasemble themselues. [And whiles these things were debated betwene the emperor and the soouldiers, the cruelty of the fact, so mooved] all men to teares, that the Kyng him selfe seemed to take great repentance for his horrible deede, and promysed the Soul-
diours that they shouold haue their requests, and went about with fayre perfwafions to mittigate (as mutch as lay in him) their furio-
sous ftonakes. Howbeit the Souldiours gaue diligent heed to their watch and warde eyuer man in his place appoynted, that the king might not secretly conuey himselfe away, and fo deceyue theym of his promisses, and the expectation of their requests. In
the meane time the Kyng depryued Ruftanus of all his offices, and promotions, and tooke away from him the priuy Signet whereof hee had the keeping, and deliuered it to Achmat Bafcha. Ruftanus amased with the terror and feare of the Souldiours, thinking himselfe feare in good securitie amongs his owne men, secretly conveyed himselfe to Achmat Bafcha his Paulyon, and asked counsel of him what was best to be done in so doubtfull, and daungerous a cafe. Who adviſed hym therein to haue the kyng's aduice, and as he commanded him fo in any wyfe to doe. Which counſayle marueyloufly satiﬁed the mynde of Ruftanus. And without any longer delay by certaine Meffengers which were his faythfull, and familler Freends required the King's aduife. Whereunto the King aunfwered that forthwith without longer tariaunce he should auoyde his fyght, and abfent himſelfe from his Campe. Who replied that without Money and other furnitures, he could not conveniently execute hys commandement. But the King had hym to do what hee lift, for he woulde in no wife gieue hym leave to haue any longer time or space to deliberate the matter. At length Ruftanus without further lay, as guilty of his curfed deuifes, accompanied with eyght of his truſtieſt Frends directed his Iorney to Constantinople, and vſing mutch expedition (as feare in fearefull matters putteth spurres to the horſe) came to Constantinople: and there with Rofa and other the Conspiratours expected the euents of Fortune not without daunger of their lues. Moreover it was sayd that Solyman, whose Conſcience bewrayed the beatflynes of his abominable facte, being pricked with a superfluous repentance, determined to trauel on pilgrimage to Mecha, and proceding in his voyage, he was driuen by meanes of the Persians force to go to Hieruſalem there to offer sacrificie for the death of his Sonne, which they call Corba. But now to conclude, and somewhat to speake of Muſtapha or rather by way of admonition this one thing to say of him, that the faido Muſtapha was fo acceptable and well beloved of all men for his warlike experience, and for his redinesse to heade Christian bloud, that they suppoſed the like would never be in the Ottoman houſe more towards to enlarg[e], and amplyſie their Empyre, or promyſed greater thinges for the perſournance thereof. In fo mutch as
then they dispayred so of their Enterprises, as this Proverbe rofe vp amongs them, Gietti Soltan Mustapha, which signifieth an vtter dispayre in thinges which they thought before to goe about. Therefore we haue good caufe to rejoyce for the death of thys cruell enimy that should haue rayned, and to thinck the slaughter of him not to be done without God's speciall prouidence, who in this forte hath prouided for vs. And at length to be wife, and abstayne from ciuile Warre and diffencions. And with common Force to fet yppon this wicked Tarmegant, considering that he is not only a generall Ennimy to our Countrey and Lyfe, but alfo to our Soules. Which thing if we do, it will not be so hard a matter to withfand the force of this enemy of Christendome, as if we doe not, it wyll be daungerous through our contiuall discorde to gieue him occasioon to inuade the rest of Europe, and so with his tiranny bring the fame to vtter destruccion, which God that is omnipotent forbid, who bring vs to vnity through his Sonne Iefus Chrifte, Amen.
THE THIRTY-FIFTH NOUELL.

The great curtesie of the Kyng of Marocco, (a City in Barbarie) toward a poore Fisherman, one of his Subiects, that had lodged the Kyng, being sirayed from his Company in hunting.

For somuch as the more than beastly cruelty recounted in the former History, doth yele some lowre taste to the minds of those that be curteous, gentle and well conditioned by nature, and as the Stomacke of him that dayly vseth one kinde of meate, be it neuer so delicate and daynty, doth at length lothe, and disdanye the same, and utterly refuseth it: I now change the Diet, leaving murders, slaughters, defpayres, and tragiqual accidents, and turne my stile to a more pleasante thing, that may so well serue for instruction of the noble to follow vertue, as that which I haue already written, may rife to their profit, warely to take heede they fal not into such deformed and filthy faults, as the name and prayle of man be defaced, and his reputation decayed: if then the contraries be knowne by that which is of divers natures, the villany of great cruelty shalbe converted into the gentlenesse of milde curtesie, and rigor shalbe condemned, when with sweetenesse and generofity, the noble shall affaye to wyn the heart, service, and affected devotion of the basest forte: So the greatnesse and nobility of man placed in dignity, and who hath puifance over other, confieth not to shew himselfe hard, and terrible, for that is the manner of Tyraunts, because he that is feared, is consequently hated, eyll beloued, and in the ende forsaken, of the whole World, which hath bene the cause that in times past Prynces aspiring to great Conquests, haue made their way more eafe by gentlenesse and Curtesie, than by fury of armes, stablishing the foundations of their dominions more firme and durable by thofe meanes, than they which by rigor and cruelty haue facked townes, ouerthrown Cities, depopulated Prouinces, and fatted Landes with the bodies of thofe, whose liues they haue depriued by dente of sword, fith the gouernement and authority ouer other, caryeth greater subiection, than puifance. Where-
fore Antigonus, one of the successors of great Alexander (that made all the Earth to tremble upon the recital of his name) seeing that his Sonne behaued himselfe arrogantly, and without modesty to one of his Subjectts, reproved and checked hym, and amongst many wordes of chastisement and admonition, sayd vnto him: “Knowest thou not my Sonne, that the estate of a Kyng is a noble and honourable seruiitude?” Royall wordes (in deed) and meete for a Kyng: For albeit that eche man doth reverence to a Kyng, and that he be honoured, and obeyed of all, yet is hee for all that, the Servaunt, and publike Myuifter, who ought no lefte to defend his Subjectt, than the Subjectt to do him honour and Homage. And the more the Prynce doth humble himselfe, the greater increase hath his glory, and the more wonderfull he is to every Wyght. What aduanced the Glory of Iulius Cæsar, who first deprested the Senatorie State of gouernment at Rome? Where his Victories atcheued ouer the Galles and Britons, and afterwarde ouer Rome it selfe, when he had vanquished Pompee? All those serued his tourne, but his greatest fame rofe of his Clemency and Curtefie: By the whych Vertues hee shewed himselfe to be gentle, and favorable euen to those, whom hee knewe not to loue him, otherwife than if hee had beene their mortall Enimy. His Successors as Augustus, Vespasianus, Titus, Marcus Aurelius, and Flauius were worthily noted for clemency: Notwithstanding I fee not one drawe neere to the great Courage, and Gentlenesse, joyned wyth the singuler Curtefie of Dom Roderigo Viuario the Spanyarde Surnamed Cid, warde Kyng Pietro of Aragon that hindred his expedityon agaynst the Mores at Grenadoe. For hauing vanquished the fayde King, and taken hym in Battell, not onely remittted the reuenge of his wrong, but also suffered hym to go wythout raunfome, and tooke not from hym so much as one Forte, esteemyng it to bee a better expolite to winne futch a King with curtefie, than beare the name of cruell in putting him to Death, or feasing vpon his land. But because acknowledging of the poore, and enriching the smal, is commendable in a Prynce, than when he sheweth himselfe gentle to his lyke, I haue collected this discourse and facte of Kyngge Manfor of Marocco, whole Chyldren (by subtile and fained religion) Cherif
succeeded, the Sonne of whom at this day injoyeth the kingdomes of Su, Marocco, and the most part of the isles confinyng vp on Æthiopia. This history was told by an Italian called Nicholoso Baciadonne, who vpon this accydent was in Afirca, and in trasike of Marchandyfe in the Land of Oran, situatd vpon the coast of the South seas, and where the Geneuois and Spanyards vse great entercourse, bicause the countrey is faire, wel peopled, and wher the inhabitants (although the foyle be barbarous) lyue indifferen and vfe
bounde wherein almeffe, earnestly coast trafile Baciadonne, and Ethiopia.

the marchants vse) chaunce niens of succeded
4l8 to whych greater lace. in vnowne being yeare of our courfed of delyght builte of his

hys

houfe hys

mealy houfe was able for the time to minifter, and afterwardes
for acknowledging his willing Mynde, recompenced him wyth daynties of the Courte, and a Pryncely reward. Of Edward the thyrde, whose Royall Nature was not displeased pleauntingly to vfe a Waifaring Tanner, when deuyded from his Company, he mette hym by the way not far from Tomworth in Staffordshire, and by cheapening of his welfare steede (for stedineffe sure and able to carry him so farre as the fable dore) grewe to a price, and for exchaunge the Tanner craued fие shillings to boote betwene the Kings and his. And when the King satified with disport, desired to fhew himself by founding his warning blaste, assembled all his Train, and to the great amaze of the poore Tanner, (when he was guarded with that Troupe) he well guerdoned his good Paftime and familiar dealing, with the order of Knighthoode and reaonna-ble revenue for the maintenaunce of the fame. The lyke Examples our Chronicles, memory, and reporte plentifully doe auouche and witnesse. But what? this Hyftory is the more rare and worthy of notyng, for refpe¢t of the People and Countrey, where feldome or neuer Curtefie haunteth or findeth haborough, and where Nature doth bryng forth greater store of monsters, than thinges worthy of praife. This great King Manfor then was not onely the Temporall Lord of the Countrie of Oran and Marocco, but also (as is faide of Prete Ican,) Byfhop of his Law and the Mahomet Priests, as he is at thys Day that raighneth in Feze, Sus, and Marocco. Now thys Prynce aboue all other pleafure, loused the game of Hunting. And he fo much delighted in that paftime, as sometime he would cause his Tentes in the myd of the defertes to be erected, to lye there all Nyght, to the end, that the next day he might renew his game, and defraud his men of idle-ness, and the Wild beasts of rest. And this manner of Life he vfed still, after he had done justice and hearkened the complaintes for which his Subiectes came to diclofe thereby theyr griefes. Wherein also he toke fo great pleafure, as fome of our magistrates do fecke their profite, whereof they be fo fqueymife, as they be defirsous to satify the place whereunto they be called, and render all men their righte due vnto them. For wyth theyr Bribery and Sacred Golden Hunger, Kings and Prynces in these dayes be ill serued, the people wronged, and the wycked out of
feare. There is none offence almost how villanous so euer it be, but is waashed in the Water of Bribery, and clenfed in the holly drop, wherewith the Poets faine Jupiter to corrupt the daughter of Acrifius faft closed within the brafen Toure. And who is able to refift that, which hath subdued the highest powers? Now returne we from our wanderings: This greate Kyng Manfor on a day assembled his People to hunt in the marish and fenny Countrey, that in elder age was not farre of from the City of Alela, which the Portugalles holde at this prefent, to make the way more free into the Ifles of Molucca, of the most part wherof their King is Lord. As he was attentife in folowing a Beare, and his pastime at the beft, the Elements began to darke and a great tempeft rofe, such as with the forrne and violent Winde, fattered the trayne far of from the King, who not knowing what way to take, nor into what place he might retire, to avoide the tempeft, the greateft that he felt in al his life, would with a good wil haue ben accompanying as the Troiane Æneas was, when being in like pastime and fear he was confrayned to enter into a Cauce wyth his Queene Dido, where he Perfumed the Ioyes of his unhappy Maryage. But Manfor beeynge without Companye, and wythout any Cauce at Hande, wandered alonges the Champayne fo carefull of his Lyfe for feare of Wylde Beastes, whych flocke together in thofe desertes as the Courtiers were penfive, for that they knew not whether theyr Prynce was gone. And that which chiefly grieued Manfor was his being alone without guide: And for all he was well mounted, he durft passe no further for fear of drownyng, and to be deftroyed amiddes thofe Marshes, whereof all the Countrey was very ful. On the one fide he was fryghted with Thunderclaps, which rumbled in the ayre very thicke and terryble: On the other fide the lightning continually flashed on his face, the roring of the Beastes apalled him, the ignoraunce of the way fo afteniond him, as he was affraide to fall into the running Brokes, which the outrageous raignes had caufed to swel and ryfe. It is not to be doubted, that orifons and prayers vnto his greate prophet Mahomet were forgotten, and doubtfull it is whether he were more deuout when he went on Pilgrimage to the Idolatrous Temple of Mosqua. Hee complayned of ill lucke, accufing Fortune, but chiefly hys
owne folly, for giuing himselfe so mutch to hunting, for the de-
fire whereof, hee was thus straggled into vnknownen Countreyes.
Sometimes he raued and vomytted his Gall agaynft his Gentlemen
and houshold seruaunts, and threatned death into his guarde.
But afterwards, when reaſon overſhadowed his fenſe, he faw that
the tyme, and not their neglygence or little care caufed that
difgrace. He thoughte that his Prophet had poured downe that
tempeſt for fome Notable ſinne, and had brought him into fuch
and fo dangerous extremity for his faults. For which caufe he
lifted vp his Eyes, and made a thouſand Mahomet mowes, and
Apift mocks (according to their manner.) And as he fixed his
eyes aloft vp to the heauens, a flash of lightning glauanced on his
Face fo violently, as it made him to holde downe his head, lyke a
lyttle Chyld reproued of his maiſter. But he was further daunted
and amazed, when he faw the night approche, which with the
darkenes of his cloudy Mantell, stayed his pace from going any
further, and brought him into fuch perplexitye, as willingly he
would haue forſaken both his hunting and company of his Ser-
uants to be quit of that Daunger. But God carefull of good
Myndes (with what law fo euer they be trayned vp,) and who
maketh the Sunne to shine vpon the iuft and and vnjuſte, pre-
pared a meanes for his fauegarde, as you ſhal heare. The Af-
ricane King beyng in his traunce, and naked of all hope, necce-
ſity (which is the cleareſt lokeing glaſſe that may be found,) made
him diligently to loke about, whether he could fee any perfone by
whome he might attayne fome fecuritie. And as he thus bent
himſelfe to difcreι all the partes of the Countrey, he faw not far of
from him, the glimpe of a light which glimmered out at a little
Window, whereunto he addreſſed himſelfe, and perceiued that it
was a ſimpeſ Cabane fituate in the middeſt of the Fennes, to which
he approached for his succor and defenſe in the time of that
tempeſt. He reioyſed as you may think, and whither his heart
lept for ioy, I leaue for them to iudge which haue affayed like
daungers, how be it I dare beleue, that the faylers on the feas
feele no greater ioy when they arriue to harboreſh, than the
king of Marocco dyd: or when after a Tempeſt, or other peril,
they difcreι vppon the prow of their ſhypp, the bryghtnesſe of
some clyffe, or other land. And thy king having felt the tempest of Wind, raine, haile, lyghtenyng, and Thunder claps, compassed round aboute with Marshes and violent streames of little Riveres that ran along his way, thought he had found Paradys by chauncing vpon that rusticall lodge. Now that Cotage was the refuge place of a pore Fisher man, who lived and susteyned his Wife and children with Eels which he toke alongs the ditches of those deepe and huge Marshes. Manfor when he was arrived at the dore of that great pallace couered and thatched with Reede, called to them wythin, who at the first would make no anfwer to the Prynce that taried there comming at the Gate. Then he knocked againe, and with louder voyce than before, which caused this fisher man, thinkynge that he had bene some ripper (to whom he was wont to sell his ware, or else some straunger strayed out of his way,) spedily went out, and seeinge the Kinge well mounted and richly clad, and albeit he tooke him not to be his soueraigne Lorde, yet he thought he was some one of his Courtly Gentlemen. Wherefore hee sayde: "What Fortune hath dryuen you (sir) into these so deserte and foltytarye Places, and fuch as I maruell that you were not drowned a hundred tymes, in these streames, and bogges whereof this Marire and fenny Countrey are full?" "It is the great God" (anwered Manfor) "which hath had some care of me, and will not suffer me to perysh without doyng greater good turnes and better deedes than hitherto I haue don." The King's comming thither, seemed to Prognosticate that whych after channeed, and that God poured downe the Tempest for the Wealth of the Fisher man, and commodity of the Country. And the straying of the Kyng was a thyng appointed to make voyde those Marshes, and to purge and clenfe the Countrey: Semblable chaunces have happened to other Prynces, as to Constantine the great, besides his City called New Rome, when he caused certayne Marshes and Ditches to be filled vp and dryed, to build a fayre and sumptuous Temple, in the Honor and Memory of the blessed Virgin that brought forth the Sauior of the World. "But tel me good man" (replied Manfor) canft thou not shew me the way to the Court, and whether the King is gone, for gladly (if it were possible) would I ride thither." "Verily" (sayd the Fisher Man) "it will be almoft
day before ye can come there, the same beinge ten leagues from hence. "Forfomutch as thou knoweft the way" (aundered Manfor) "doe me fo great pleafure to brynge me thither, and be affured that besides the good turne, for which I shall be bound vnto thee, I will curteously content thee for thy paynes." "Sir" (fayd the poore man) "you feeme to be an honeft Gentleman, wherfore I pray you to lyght, and to tarry heere this Night, for that it is fo late, and the way to the City very eyll and comberfome for you to paffe," "No, no," (fayd the King) "if it be poiffe, I muft repayre to the place whither the King is gone, wherefore doe fo mutch for me as to bee my guide, and thou faht fee whether I be vnthankfull to them that imploy their paynes for mee." "If Kyng Manfor" (fayd the Fisher man) "were heere hymfelfe in Perfon and made the lyke request, I would not be fo very a foole, nor fo presumptuous, (at this time of the Nyght) to take vppon me without Daunger to bryng hym to his Palace," "Wherefore?" (fayd the Kyng) "Wherefore? (quod you), bicaufe the Marshes bee fo daangered, as in the Day tyme, if one know not wel the way, the Horfe, (be hee neuer fo ftronge and Lufty,) may chance to flieke faft, and tarry behynd for gage. And I would be forry if the King were heere, that he should fall into Peryl, or suffer any anoyance and therewithall would deeme my felfe vnhappy if I did let hym to incur fuch eyll or incombrance." Manfor that delighted in the communication of this good man, and desirous to know the caufe that moued him to speake with fuch affection, fayd vnto hym: "And why careft thou for the Life, health, or peferuation of the Kynge? What haft thou to doe wyth him that wouldeft be fo forry for hys flate, and carefull of his fafety." "Ho, ho," fayd the good man, "doe you fay that I am carefull for my Prince? Verily I love him a hundred tymes better than I do my felfe, my Wife or children whych God hath fent me: and what sir, do not you love our Prince?" "Yes that I doe" (replyd the Kyng,) "for I haue better caufe than thou, for that I am many times in his company, and liue vpon his charge and am entertayned with his wages. But what nedeft thou to care for hym? Thou knoweft him not, hee neuer did thee anye good turne or pleafure: nor yet thou nedeft not hope henceforth to haue any pleafure at his hands."
"What?" (said the Fisher man) "must a Prince be loued for gaine and good turns, rather than for his Justice and curtesie? I see wel that amongs you maister Courtiers, the benefits of kings be more regarded, and their gifts better liked than their vertue and nobility, which maketh them wonderful unto vs: and ye do more esteeme the gold, honor and estates that they beflow vpon you, than their health and fauegard, which are the more to be considered, for that the King is our head, and God hath made him futch one to kepe vs in Peace, and to be carefull of our states. Pardon me if I speake so boldly in your presence." The kyng (which toke singular delight in this Countrey Philosopher,) anwered him: "I am not offended bicaufe thy words approche fo neare the troth: but tel me what benefit haft thou receuied of that king Manfor, of whome thou makeft futch accompt and loueft fo wel? For I cannot thinke that euer he dyd thee good, or shewed thee pleASURE, by reaSON of thy pouerty, and the little Furnyture within thy house in respect of that which they possesse whome hee loueth and fauoreth, and vnto whome he sheweth fo great familiaritie and Benefite." "Doe tell me sir" (replied the good man) "for so mutch as you fo greatly regard the fauoures which Subiects receive at theyr Prynces handes, as in deede they ought to doe, What greater goodnesse, ricehesse, or Benefite ought I to hope for, or can receyue of my King (being futch one as I am,) but the profite and utility that all we whych be his vaflalles do apprehend from day to day in the Juftyce that he rendereth to every Wyghte, by not sufferinge the puiffant and Rich to suppreffe and ouertread the feeble and weake, and him that is deuoid of Fortune's goods, that indifferency be maintayned by the Officers, to whom he committeth the gouernement of his Prouinces, and the care which he hath that his people be not devoured by exections, and intollerable tributes. I do esteeme more his goodnesse, clemency and Loue, that he beareth to his subiects, than I doe all your delycates and eafe in following the Court. I moff humbly honor and reuerence my king in that he being farre from vs, doeth neuertheless fo vfe his gouernment as we feele his presence like the Image of God, for the peace and vnion wherein we through him do lyue and enjoy, without disturbaunce, that lytle whych
God and Fortune haue gyuen vs. Who (if not the king) is he that doeth preferue vs, and defend vs from the incursions and pillages of the Theues and Pirates of Arabie, which invade and make warre with their neighbours? and there is no friend they haue but they would displease if the King wysefully did not forbyd and prevent their villanies. That great Lord which kepeth his Court at Constantinople and maketh himself to be adored of his people like a God, brideleth not so mutch the Arabians, as our king doth, under the Protection and fauguard of whom, I that am a poore Fisher man, do ioy my pouerty in peace, and without fear of theeeus do norisfh my little family, applying my selfe to the fishing of Eeles that be in these ditches and fenney places, which I carry to the market townes, and fell for the sustenance and feeding of my wife and children, and esteeme my self right happy, that returning to my cabane, and homely lodge at my pleasure, in whatsoever place I do abide, bicaufe (albeit far of from Neighbours,) by the benefite and dilygence of my Prince, none staye my iourney, or offendeth me by any meanes, whych is the caufe (sayd he lifting vp his hands and eyes aloft,) that I pray vnto God and his great Prophet Mahomet, that it may pleafe them to preferue our King in health, and to gyue him fo great happe and contention, as he is vertuous and debonaire, and that ouer hys Ennimies (flying before him,) he may euermore be victorious, for norisfhing his people in peace, and his children in ioy and Nobility."

The King feeing that devout affectyon of the pafsante, and knowyng it to be without guile or Hypocrifie, would gladly haue difcouered himself, but yet willyng to refere the fame for better opportunity, he sayd vnto him: "Forfomutch as thou louest the king so well, it is not impoffible but thofe of his house be welcome vnto thee, and that for thy Monfor's fake, thou wilt helpe and do service to his Gentlemen." "Let it suffice you" (replied he) "that my heart is more inclined to the King, than to the wille of thofe that ferue him for hope of preferment. Now being so affectionate to the king as I am, thynke whyther hys householde Seruauntes haue power to commaund me, and whither my willing mynde be preft to doe them good or not. But mee thynke ye neede not to flay heere at the gate in talke, being so wet as
you be: Wherefore vouchsafe to come into my house, which is your owne, to take such simple lodging as I haue, where I wyl entreat you, (not according to your merite) but with the little that God and his Prophet haue departed to my povery: And to morrow morning I will conduct you to the City, even to the royall Palace of my Prynce.” “Truly” (anwered the King) “albeit neceffity did not prouoke me, yet thine honesty defuereth well other reputation than a simple Countrey man, and I do thinke that I haue profited more in hearing thee speake than by hearken-yng to the flattering and babbling tales of Courting triflers, which dayly employ themselues to corrupte the eares of Prynces.” “What sir?” (sayd the Payfant) “thynke you that thy poore Coate and simple lodging be not able to apprehend the Preceptes of Vertue? I haue sometimes heard tell, that the wife auoyding Cityes and Troupes of Men, haue wythdrawne themselues into the defertes, for leyfure to contemplate heauenly thynges.” “Your fkyll is greate,” replied Manfor: “Goe we then, fth you pleafe to doe me that Curtefe as this night to be myne hofte.” So the king went into the Rustical Lodge, where insteede of Tapiftery and Tur- key hangings, he fawe the houfe fately hanged with fisher Nets and Cordes, and in place of rich feeling of Noble mens houfes, he beheld Canes and Reedes whych ferued both for the feeling and couering. The Fifer man’s Wife continued in the kitchen, whileft Manfor hymself both walked and dressed his owne horfe, to which horfe the Fifer man durfte not once come neare for his Corage and fately trappour, wyth one thing he was abundantly refreshed, and that the moft needefull thing which was fire, whereof there was no fpare, no more then there was of Fifhe. But the king which had been dayntely fed, and did not well taffe and lyke that kynde of meat, demaunded if hys hunger could not be supplyed with a lytle Flefh, for that his stomacke was anoyed with the onely fanooure of the Ecles. The poore man, (as ye haue somewhat perceiued by the former discouerce) was a plefaunt fellow, and delighted rather to prouoke laughter than to prepare more dainty meat, faid vnto the king: “It is no maruell, though our kinges do furnifhe themselues with Countrey men, to ferue them in their Warres, for the delicate bringing vp and litle force in fine Cour-
tiers. Wee, albeit the Raine doth fal vpon our heads, and the Winde affaile every part of our bodies all durtie and Wet, doe not care either for fire or Bed, wee feede vpon any kinde of meate that is set before vs, withoute seeking Sauce for increaing of our appetite: and we (beholde) are nimble, healthy, lusty, and never sicke, nor our mouth out of taft, where ye do feelie suffch distemperaunce of stomacke, as pity it is to fee, and more ado there is to bring the same into his right order and taft, than to ordine and dreffe a supper for a whole armie." The king who laughed (with displayed throte,) hearing his hofte so merily disposed, could haue been contented to haue heard him still had not his appetite pronoked him, and the time of the Night very late. Wherefore he saied vnto him: "I do agree to what you alleage, but performe I pray thee my request, and then wee will satisfie our selues with further talke." "Well sir" (replyed the king's Hoftes,) "I see well that a hungry Belly hath no luste to heare a merry song, whereof were you not so egre and sharpe set, I could sing a hundred. But I haue a lytle Kidde which as yet is not weaned, the same wil I caufe to bee made ready, for I think it cannot be better befowed." The supper by reason of the hofte's curtesie, was passed forth in a thousand pleafant pafstimes, whych the Fisherman of purpofe vtterd to recreate his Gueft, bicaufe he lawe hym to delight in thofe deuyfes. And vpon the end of Supper, he saied vnto the King: "Now sir, how like you this banket? It is not fo fumpitous as thofe that be ordinarily made at our Prynce's Court, yet I thinke that you shal spele wyth no leffe appetyte than you haue eaten with a god stomack, as appeareth by the few Wrods you have vttered in the tyme of your repaft. But whereunto booteh it to employ tyme, ordeyned for eating, in expenfe of talke, whych serueth not but to paife the tyme, and to shorten, the day? And meats ought rather to be taken for sufentiation of Nature then for prouocation or motion of thys feeble and Transitorye Fleffe?" "Verily" (fayd the King) "your reafon is good, and I doe meane to ryfe from the Table, to paife the remnant of the Nyght in ref, therewith to satisfie my felfe fo well as I haue wyth eatyng, and do thanke you heartily for your good aduertryfement." So the King went to Bed, and it was not long ere hee fell a
THE KINGE OF MAROCCO.

fleepe, and contynued tyll the Mornynge. And when the Sunne
dyd ryfe, the Fisherman came to wake hym, tellyng hym that it
was tyme to rife, and that hee was ready to bryng him to the
Court. All this whyle the Gentlemen of the kinge's Traine were
searching round aboute the Countrey to synde his Maiesty, makyng
Cryes and Hues, that he myghte heare them. The kyng knowyng
their voices, and the noyes they made, went forth to meete them,
and if his People were gladde when they founde him, the Fisherm-
man was no lesse amazed to see the honor the Courtyers did vnto
his Gueft. Which the curteous king perceiuing, sayd vnto
him: "My Friend, thou feest here, that Manfor, of whome yeften-
night thou madest so great accompt, and whome thou faidst, that
thou didst loue so well. Bee assureth, that for the Curtise thou
haft done him, before it bee longe, the same shal he so well
acquyted, as for euer thou shalte haue good cause to remembere it."
The good man was already vpon his marybones besequching the
King that it would pleafe him pardon hys rude entertainement
and his ouermutch familiarity whych hee had vled vnto him. But
Manfor causyng him to rife vp, willed hym to depart, and sayed
that within few dayes after he houldhe heare further Newes. Now
in thefe Fennith and marrysh groundes, the Kyng had already
builded divers Castles and lodges for the pleasure and solace of
hunting. Wherefore he purposed there to erect a goodly City,
causyng the waters to be voyed with great expedition, whych
City he builded immediately, and compaffyng the circuite of the
appoynted place, with stong Walles and depe Ditches, he gau
many immunities and Pryuiledges to thofe, that would repayre to
people the same, by meanes whereof, in litle tyme, was reduced to
the state of a beautifull and wealthy City, whych is the very fame
that before we sayd to be Caesar Elcabir, as mutch to say: "The
great Palace." This goodly worke beinge thus performed Manfor
fent for his hoft, to whom hee sayde: "To the end from henceforth
thou mayest more honourably entertaine Kyngs into thy Houfe,
and mayest intreate them wyth greater fumptuoatite, for the better
folacyng of them wyth thy curtefye and pleaunet talke, beholde
the City that I haue buylded, which I doe gyue vnto thee and thyne
for euer, referuing nothyng but an acknowledgement of good wil,
to the end thou mayft know that a Gentleman's mind noufled in villany, is discouered, when forgetting a good turne, he incurreth the vice of Ingratitude." The good man seeing so liberall an offer and present worthy of futch a king fell downe vppon his knees, and kyfing his foote with al humility, sayd vnto him: "Sir if your Liberality did not supply the imperfection of my Meryte, and perfourmed not what wanted in me, to attayne so great estate, I would excuse my selfe of the charge whych it pleafeth you to gyue mee, and whereunto for lacke of tryning vp, and vfe of futch a Dignity, I am altogether vnfit. But fith that the graces of God, and the gyftes of Kynges ought neuer to bee reieected, by acceptynge thys Benefite wyth humble thankes for the clemencye of your royall Maiesty, I reft the Seruuant and flave of you and yours." The king hearing hym speake so wifely, took hym vp, and imbraced him, saying: "Would to God and his great Prophete, that all they which rule Cityes, and gouerne Prouinces, had so good a Nature as thine then I durft be bolde to say, that the People shoulde lyue better at theyr eafe, and Monarches without charge of confcience, for the ill behauyors of theyr Officers. Lyue good man, lyue at thine eafe, maynteine thy people, obferue our lawes, and increase the Beauty of the City, whereof from this time forth wee doe make the poffeffer. And truly the present was not to bee contempned, for that the fame at this day is one of the fairest that is in Affrica, and is the Land of the blakke People, futch as the Spaniards call Negroes. It is very full of Gardeins, furnish'd with abundancte of Spyeses brought from the Moluccas, bicaufe of the martes and faires ordeined there. To be short, Manfor fthewed by this gift what is the force of a gentle heart, which can not abyde to bee vanquished in curtesie, and leffe suffer that vnder forgetfulness the memorie of a receyued good turne be loft. King Darius whilome, for a little garment, receiued in gift by Silofon the Samien, recompenced him wyth the gaine and royall digniety of that City, and made him soueraine Lord thereof, and of the Ifle of Samos. And what greater vertue can illufrate the name of a noble man, than to acknowledge and preffer them, which for Natural flame and baflhulnesse, dare not beholde the Maiesty of their greatnesse? God sometymes with
a more curteous Eye doth loke vpon the presents of a poore man, than the fat and rych offerings of him that is great and wealthy? Euen fo a benefite, from what hand soeuer it procedeth, cannot chofe but bryng forth the fruictes of his Liberality that giueth the fame, who by vsing largeffe, feleth also the like in him to whom it is employed. That magnificence no long time pafed the Seignorie of Venice, to Francesco Dandulo, who after he had dured the great displeasures of the Pope, in the name of the whole City, vpon his returne to Venice, for acknowledgment of his pacience, and for abolifhmente of that Shame, was wyth happye and vniforme Acclamatyon of the whole flate elected, and made Prince, and Duke of that Common wealth. Worthy of prayfe truly is he, that by some pleasure bindeth another to his curtefie: but when a Noble man acknowledgeth for a benefit, that which a Subiect is bounde to gieue him by duty and seruice, there the proofe of prayfe carryeth no Fame at all. For which caufe I determined to display the Hyftory of the barbarous King Manfor, to the intent that our Gentlemen, norified and trained vp in great civi- lytie, may affay by their mildenesse and good education, to furmount the curtefie of that Prynce, of whom for this time wee purpole to take our Farewell.
What thou hast gained for thy better instruction, or what conceived for recreation by reading these thirty five Nouells, I am a Judge, although (by deeming) in reading and perusing, thou mayst (at thy pleasure) gather both. But howsoeuer profit, delight, can satisfy mine appointment, wherefore they were preferred into thy hands, contented am I that thou doe vouchsafe them Good lessons how to shun the Darts, and Prickes of insolence thou findest in the same. The vertuous noble may favor the fruits and taste the licour that stilleth from the gums or buds of Vertue. The contrary may see the blossoms fall, that blome from the shrubs of diversitie and degenerat kinde. Yong Gentle men, and Ladies do view a plot founded on fured grounde, and what the foundation is, planted in shattering Soyle, with a fashio of attire to garnish their inward parts, so well as (spareleffe) the imploy upon the vanishing pompe. Every fort and sexe the warfare in the fiede of humayne life, may set here the fauourous fruit (to outwarde lyking) that fansied the senfull taste of Adam's Wyfe. They see also what griefts fuch fading fruit produce unto posterity: what likewise the lufy growth an spring of vertue's plant, and what delicates it brancheth to that carefully keepe the slips thereof, within the Orchard of the mindes. Diuers Tragical shewes by the pennes description hat
bene disclosed in greatest number of these Histories, the same also I have mollified and sweetened with the course of pleasaunt matters, of purpose not to dampe the deynty mindes of those that shrinke and feare at such rehearfall. And bicaufe todaynly (contrary to expectation) this Volume is rifen to greater heape of leaves, I doe omit for this present time sundry Nouels of mery deuife, referuing the same to be ioyned with the rest of an other part, wherein shall succeede the remnaunt of Bandello, specially such (sufferable) as the learned French man François de Belle-forrest hath seleccted, and the choyfeft done in the Italian. Some alfo out of Erizzo, Ser Giovani Florentino, Parabofco, Cynthia, Straparole, Sanfouino, and the best liked out of the Queene of Nauarre, and other Authors. Take these in so good part with those that haue and shall come forth, as I do offre them with good will curteously correcting such Faults, and Errors, as shall present themselves, eyther burying them in the Bosome of Favor, or pretermitting them with the beck of Curtesie!

FINIS.